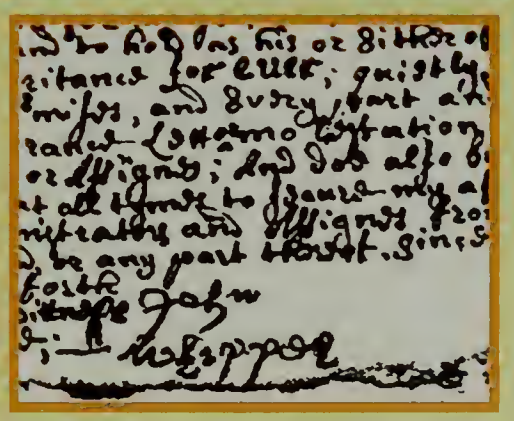
A HISTORY OF *William Whipple* OF DORCHESTER, MASSACHUSETTS AND SMITHFIED, RHODE ISLAND

His Antecedents and Descendants



Compiled and written by Dr. Charles Whipple, Jr.

Boston Public Library
Boston, MA 02116

A HISTORY OF

William Whipple

OF
DORCHESTER, MASSACHUSETTS
AND
SMITHFIELD, RHODE ISLAND
1652-1712

His Antecedents and Descendants

AUTHORIZED BY THE JABEZ WHIPPLE FAMILY ASSOCIATION

COMPILED AND WRITTEN BY

CHARLES M. WHIPPLE, JR., PH.D., ED.D., LITT.D.
PROFESSOR EMERITUS OF PSYCHOLOGY AND PHILOSOPHY
UNIVERSITY OF CENTRAL OKLAHOMA
EDMOND, OKLAHOMA

The photos on the cover were taken by Barbara Carroll.

The photos are:
A sign on Lime Rock's main street
William Whipple Monument
Whipple farm in the Louquisset Meadow
John Whipple signature
William Whipple House

© Copyright 2006 Dr. Charles M. Whipple, Jr.
All rights reserved. No part of this publication may be reproduced, stored in a retrieval system, or transmitted, in any form or by any means, electronic, mechanical, photocopying, recording, or otherwise, without the written prior permission of the author.

Note for Librarians: A cataloguing record for this book is available from Library and Archives Canada at www.collectionscanada.ca/amicus/index-e.html
ISBN 1-4120-9304-x

Printed in Victoria, BC, Canada. Printed on paper with minimum 30% recycled fibre.
Trafford's print shop runs on "green energy" from solar, wind and other environmentally-friendly power sources.

TRAFFORD PUBLISHING™
Offices in Canada, USA, Ireland and UK

Book sales for North America and international:
Trafford Publishing, 6E–2333 Government St.,
Victoria, BC V8T 4P4 CANADA
phone 250 383 6864 (toll-free 1 888 232 4444)
fax 250 383 6804; email to orders@trafford.com
Book sales in Europe:
Trafford Publishing (UK) Limited, 9 Park End Street, 2nd Floor
Oxford, UK OX1 1HH UNITED KINGDOM
phone +44 (0)1865 722 113 (local rate 0845 230 9601)
facsimile +44 (0)1865 722 868; info.uk@trafford.com
Order online at:
trafford.com/06-1058

10 9 8 7 6 5 4 3 2 1

Table of Contents

LIST OF ILLUSTRATIONS ..... **VII**

PREFACE AND ACKNOWLEDGEMENTS ..... **XI**

COAT OF ARMS ..... **XV**

CHAPTER 1 ..... **1**

CAPTAIN JOHN WHIPPLE 1

From Old England to New England *1*
Arrival at Dorchester Massachusetts *1*
The Apprenticeship Years *2*
Marriage and Family of Captain John Whipple *6*
Community Life *8*
Arrival At Providence Rhode Island *10*
The Religion of John and Sarah Whipple *15*
A Member of the Landed Gentry *19*
The Captain John Whipple Inn *24*
Conflict with The Reverend Roger Williams *26*
John's Honorary Military Rank *27*
Last Will and Testament *27*
Death and Burial *30*

CHAPTER 2 ..... **37**

THE FAMILY OF CAPTAIN JOHN WHIPPLE 37

Urban and Rural Conflict *39*
Wealthy Whipples *41*
Gravestones and Religion *44*
Five Whipple Generations *45*

CHAPTER 3 ..... **55**

WILLIAM WHIPPLE SENIOR 55

The Whipples of Smithfield, Rhode Island *55*
Last Will and Testament *55*
Mary Whipple Sprague *59*
Sixth Generation Male Whipple Descendants *61*

CHAPTER 4 ..... **63**

WILLIAM WHIPPLE JUNIOR 63

The Whipples of Lime Rock, Rhode Island *63*
A Mayflower Family *67*
A 150 Year Old Controversy *68*
The Lime Manufacturing Trade *70*

The Ancient William Whipple House *71*

CHAPTER 5 ..... **75**

ELEAZER WHIPPLE 75
The Whipples of Cumberland, Rhode Island *75*
Last Will and Testament *76*

CHAPTER 6 ..... **79**

JESSE WHIPPLE 79
From Rhode Island to Indiana *79*
Uncle William's Gift *80*
The Lime Manufacturing Trade *81*
National Register of Historic Homes *82*
The Move to Indiana *84*
Death and Burial *87*
George Washington Whipple *89*
Arnold Whipple *92*
Abner Whipple *93*
Meribah Whipple Mann *93*
Millie Whipple Handy *94*

CHAPTER 7 ..... **95**

JABEZ WHIPPLE 95
The Whipples of Indiana *95*
The Way West *96*
The Benton Family of Franklin County *98*
The Move to Decatur County *100*
Levi B. Whipple *101*
Oscar F. Whipple *104*
Irvin A. Whipple *108*
Alfred J. Whipple *109*
John C. Whipple *111*
George W. Whipple *113*
Mortimer M. Whipple *115*
Louise A. Whipple Seeley *116*
Eliza Whipple Dales *116*
Loucena Whipple Underwood *117*
The Death of Jabez Whipple *118*
Sons and Grandsons of Jabez Whipple *121*

CHAPTER 8 ..... **125**

WILLIAM T. WHIPPLE 125
From Indiana to The Great Southwest *125*

The O'Donnell Family 126
The Move to Texas 131
The Move to Oklahoma 133
Last Will and Testament 137
William T. Whipple Junior 138
Alva L. Whipple 140
Ethel Whipple Jost 142
Harry Whipple 142
Edwin Whipple 146
Floyd Whipple 146
Florence Effie Whipple Schroeder 149
Olive James Whipple 150
Ollie Mae Whipple Underwood 156
Mary Elizabeth Whipple Taylor 157
Emma Susan Whipple Reed 160

CHAPTER 9 163

CHARLES T. WHIPPLE 163
From Texas to Oklahoma 163
The Donaldson Family 164
The Raidt Family 165
On Losing a Farm 167
Death and Burial 168
John William Whipple 171
Mildred Elizabeth Whipple Wegner 172
Theresa Whipple Thornburg Wahrenberger 176

CHAPTER 10 181

CHARLES M. WHIPPLE SENIOR 181
The Whipples of Central Oklahoma 181
Recollections of Charles M. Whipple, Senior 181
Recollections of Julia Mae Ledford Whipple 185
Bobby Eugene Whipple 192
Jimmy Leroy Whipple 193
Julia Whipple Suhre 195
Paul David Whipple 196
Deborah Whipple Miller 197
Kathy Whipple Caliman 200

CHAPTER 11 203

CHARLES M. WHIPPLE JUNIOR 203
The Present 203
The Recollections of Charles M. Whipple Junior 203

CHAPTER 12 213

CHRIS V. WHIPPLE 213

The Present 213

The Recollections of Chris V. Whipple 213

Collyn Vaughn Whipple 216

Skylar Chethlahoe Whipple 216

EPILOGUE 217

END NOTES 219

INDEX 256

List of Illustrations

Chapter 1

Stoughton Mill Marker....2
Neponset Bridge....3
Captain John Whipple Descendants....4
Captain John Whipple Descendants, (cont)....5
Bernard Capen House....9
Rhode Island, 1659....11
Modern View of 1659 Property....12
Dorchester Whipple Property....17
First Baptist Church....18
Whipple Backyard....20
Towne Streete, 1661....21
Area of Whipple Property....22
Signature of Captain John Whipple....23
369 N. Main, 1663....29
Whipple Burial Grounds.... 32
John and Sarah Whipple Headstones.... 32
369 N. Main, 1912....34
Main Street, 1912....34
Main Street, 2004....35

Chapter 2

Captain John Whipple Graveyard....43

Chapter 4

William Whipple Gravestone....64
Richard Warren Plaque....67
Great Road Through Lime Rock....72
Jesse/William House....73

Chapter 5

Eleazer Whipple Farm....76
Eleazer Whipple House, Rear View, 2004.... 77
Eleazer Whipple House, Front View, 2004....78

Chapter 6

Jesse Whipple....79

Jesse Whipple House....82
Great Road Through Lime Rock....83
Lower Whitewater River and Cincinnati....84
Jesse Whipple Gravestone....88
Jesse Whipple Descendants....90
Braysville Cemetery....92

Chapter 7
Jabez Whipple....95
Lime Rock School, 2003....95
Franklin and Dearborn Counties....97
1870 Decatur County Census....99
Levi Whipple....100
Oscar Whipple Family, 1883....104
Oscar Whipple Gravestone....105
Ira Whipple Family....106
Irvin Whipple Farm....109
Alfred Whipple Headstone....110
George Whipple Headstone....113
Eliza Whipple Dales....117
Loucena Whipple Underwood....118
Bancourt Bend Cemetery....120

Chapter 8
William T. Whipple....125
Barney O'Donnell....127
Emily Whipple Gravestone....128
Decatur County Indiana....129
Texas Whipple Farm....131
William Whipple Clock....132
William T. Whipple, 1905....133
Whipple Farm and Cemetery....134
Downtown Calumet....134
William T. Whipple Descendants....136
William and Alva Whipple....138
Ollie Underwood, Alva Whipple, Mary Taylor, 1939....140
Alva Whipple Family, 1934....141
Harry Whipple Family....143
Harry Whipple Award....145
Floyd Whipple Family, 1938....147
Thomas A. Whipple Family, 2004....148
Olive Whipple Family....150
Ollie Whipple Underwood....156

Mary Whipple Taylor....157
Descendants of William T. Whipple....158
Emma Whipple Reed....160
William T. Whipple Monument, 2003....161

Chapter 9
Charles T. Whipple, 1912....163
Marcella R. Whipple, 1912....163
Elder Whipple....164
Anton Raidt Family, 1878....165
Raidt Burial Grounds....166
Charles T. Whipple, 1943....167
Charles T. Whipple, Memorabilia....168
Descendants of Charles T. Whipple....169
Charles T., John, Charles M. Whipple, 1941....170
Charles Whipple Furniture....172
The Wegners, 1995....174
Charles T. and Marcella Whipple, 1919....176
The Wahrenbergers, 1961....178

Chapter 10
Charles M. Whipple, 1955....181
Julia Ledford Whipple, 1955....182
Sons of Charles M. Whipple....183
Charles and Julia Whipple Headstone....183
Charles M. Whipple, Memorabilia....184
Daughters of Charles M. Whipple....186
The Ledford Family....190
Bobby Whipple Family, 2006....193
Jimmy Whipple Family, 1994....194
Julia Whipple Suhre Family, 2003....195
Paul Whipple Family....197
Debbie Whipple Miller Family 2003....198

Chapter 11
Charles M. Whipple Junior....204
Charles, Collyn, Skylar, Chris Whipple....208
Charles M Whipple Junior Family....209

Chapter 12
Charles M. Senior and Chris Whipple.....214
Julia Whipple and Brandy.....214
Chris Whipple Family, 1989.....215
Collyn, Skylar, Janet, Chris Whipple, 2006.....216

Preface and Acknowledgements

People will not look forward to honor posterity
Who never look backward to their ancestors
Edmund Burke, 1790

This book's concern is with one specific line from the sixth branch of the immense family tree of Captain John and Sarah Whipple of Dorchester, Massachusetts and Providence, Rhode Island. The sixth child and fourth son of this couple was William, unarguably the least known member of the second generation in the literature of the time. Several books have been published about other branches of this family, including mine *The History of Captain John and Sarah Whipple of Dorchester, Massachusetts and Providence, Rhode Island, A Multigenerational Study of the First Whipple Family in America*. As the reader will note, the first two chapters of that book and this present book are similar. This was done in order to place William into context with his parents and siblings. The book's major emphasis is to detail the lives of Jabez Whipple, his children, and most of his further descendants. Jabez was a great grandson of William. As far as I am aware, this present work is the first such published treatise on their fourth son and his descendants.

Most atypical of the seventeenth century, William Whipple had but three children by a wife whose maiden name is unknown. She appears in literature only twice, in an early eighteenth century census, and when she sued one of the sons of The Reverend Roger Williams in 1699. Two of their children married into the prominent Sprague family, whose ancestor Richard Warren signed the Mayflower Compact, and whose descendants include two Rhode Island Sprague governors. Sprague family members were early founders of the Baptist church in the state of Rhode Island. Several Whipple descendants are card-carrying members of the General Society of Mayflower Descendants, including the present author. I am a twelfth generation descendant of Mr. Warren through Eleazer, the youngest son of William Whipple Junior and Elizabeth Sprague. The rigorous proofs required to gain membership status in that Society were largely generated through my research in producing this volume; therefore, membership lends credibility to the book itself. Bette Bradway, Historian General of that Society, and Kathy Patterson, Oklahoma State Historian (and another Sprague descendant) were most helpful and encouraging throughout the long years of preparation.

Although Captain William Whipple Junior is primarily remembered for having produced "the largest family" of any Whipple in his generation, only three of his eight sons produced offspring. The descendants of Moses and Eleazer, the youngest sons of William Junior who, in the late 1750's, moved to the other side of the Blackstone River into Cumberland Township, were the most numerous of that generation. These two men and their wives had five sons between them, including Jesse, whose line is carried through in this book. The male lines of Jesse's two brothers ended in the early twentieth century. Their father Eleazer, who lived but 47 years, built a house on what is now Little Pond Country Road that is still standing. It was a most meaningful experience for me to view this over 225-year-old house for the first time in the summer of 2004. It was a singular pleasure to be able to share the history of the house with its present owners. Eleazer's wife Anna Brown was a great granddaughter of The Reverend Roger Williams, the putative founder of the first Baptist church in America. Eleazer served as a private in the Revolutionary War. The two social organizations that were founded by descendants of those involved in the incidents described above potentially include us, the descendants of Anna and Eleazer Whipple.

Jesse Whipple and his uncle William Whipple III also built a 225-year-old house that can yet be seen on the Great Road in Lime Rock, Rhode Island. The young couple that presently own it were most gracious in allowing me to tour the old house, and seemed genuinely appreciative of its historical significance. Jesse's wife Percy Anna Streeter was a cousin to John Adams, the second president of the United States. Through the Adams line, her descendants trace an ancestry back to early fifteenth century Old England. From the earliest days of youth, I recall my father and other Whipples remarking that because Jesse dared to leave New England he was considered by his relatives to be the black sheep of his generation. Four generations of his ancestors had lived, died and were buried within 10 miles or so of the old homestead on north Town Street in Providence. Then after 200 years, the voices of the Whipple descendants of William Whipple were no longer heard along the banks of the Moshassuck River and the Great Road in Lime Rock. As Jesse and his four children, including my (and most present day individuals discussed in this book) 14 year old lineal ancestor Jabez, headed their ox drawn wagon westward onto the postal road toward the distant state of Indiana, perhaps they sensed, however vaguely, that a new era of family history was just beginning though in uncharted places far removed from the home and hearth of their ancestors. Perhaps theirs was a heavy heart not unlike that of Captain John Whipple two centuries before as he too pondered an uncertain future in the uncharted wilds of a new world.

Consequent to a work related accident, Jesse died and was buried in a cemetery whose gravestones had disappeared by the early twentieth century. All of my adult life I had been told that somewhere a supposed photograph of his gravestone existed, but had never seen it until it was serendipitously discovered

in a misplaced folder by the Historian General of the Mayflower Society and forwarded to me. It was a desire to learn more about this peripatetic ancestor that led me write a 1976 book entitled *Sons and Daughters of Jesse*. Admittedly, that neophyte endeavor produced limited results, but it did encourage several of my close relatives to found the Jabez Whipple Family Association, and to hold periodic family reunions thereafter. Some of the narrative in this present book is a continuation from that earlier work. Additional photographs and illustrations can be perused in it as well.

The line of the William Whipple stock that is featured herein resided in the state of Indiana for approximately 65 years (1817-1882), encompassing most of the life times of Jabez and his children. Jabez and Susan had 11 children who lived to adulthood, eight sons and three daughters. Levi, Irvin, Mortimer, Eliza, and Louise died in Indiana; William and George in Oklahoma; Oscar and Alfred in Kansas; John in Iowa; and Loucena in Texas. Jabez' wife's family, the Bentons, had just moved to Indiana from a town in upstate New York that was named after her grandfather Levi Benton. The Benton name is well known in America as exemplified in the renowned career of the illustrious painter, Thomas Hart Benton. I was able to trace the roots of her family to early sixteenth century Old England. Words fail when endeavoring to convey the emotions I felt while looking at and touching the gravestones of Jabez, Susan, and their daughter-in-law Emily O'Donnell, my great grandmother Whipple, at their place of burial in Westport, Indiana. Their gravestones were in such a deteriorated condition that I hired a nearby monument company to attempt to repair them and in the process restore their no longer legible information.

My great grandfather William T. Whipple, sixth son of Jabez, moved from Indiana to homestead on the Cheyenne-Arapaho lands of western Oklahoma Indian Territory. He previously had fought for the Union Army in the Civil War. Like most of his ancestors before him, he earned a living as a farmer and small businessman. He was buried in our family burial grounds about five miles south of Calumet, Oklahoma. My grandfather, father, and other relatives are also buried there, as will be my son, grandsons, and I in our time.

It was my intent to produce not just a series of cascading descendancy charts as is usual in genealogical literature, but an in-depth biography. I wish to thank several genealogists whose efforts helped make this come to fruition, and whose assistance was required to search out and validate information, as well as investigate and assure the accuracy of sources: Sharon Sergeant from Massachusetts, Barbara Carroll from Rhode Island, Irene Krieger and Lloyd Hosman from Indiana, Teresa Frye from Kansas, Nichole Kenjura from Texas, Barbara Day from Iowa, and Barbara Brown and Sharon Burns from Oklahoma. The work of these dedicated professionals is much appreciated. My longtime collaborator and friend, Barbara Carroll, of Exeter, Rhode Island took the photographs seen on the front cover, as well as several others seen throughout the book. This book was a long time in the making and kudos are due to my co-

authors, the many descendants of Jabez, Oscar, Alva, William T., Charles T., and Charles M. Whipple who shared narrative and photographic information about their respective families. We trust that this book may be found worthy of being preserved and passed down to ensuing generations. If so, our efforts will not have been without reward. Many thanks go to Chris and Janet Whipple, whose considerable computer skills helped put this all together and get it published in a timely manner.

The present and the future are infinitely determinative in forming personality and character. But as the above Edmund Burk quote reminds us, the past must ever be with us still, in our genes as well as in our psyche, and will be trivialized or ignored only to our peril. Should those of you in some distant future generation find guidance or solace from a past that present generations will have long since become, then our ideals and deeds will have once more evidenced the eternal verity of the Creator's admonition to "Honor thy father and thy mother."

Dr. Charles M. Whipple, Jr.
Edmond, Oklahoma
1 May 2006

Coat of Arms

Sir Edmond Burk, *The General Armory of England, Ireland, and Wales* (London: Harrison and Sons, 1884) 1100.

Chapter 1

Captain John Whipple
From Old England to New England

Arrival at Dorchester Massachusetts

Early seventeenth century Massachusetts Bay Colony was a two-year-old primitive theocratic settlement of approximately 2000 inhabitants when a teenage youth named John Whipple first set foot on its soil.[1] Who was he? Where did he come from? Where and how did he live? Who are his descendants? Several generations of antiquarian researchers have left these questions as yet incompletely addressed.

"September 16, 1632, being the Lord's Day. In the Evening Mr. Pierce, in the ship Lyon, arrived and came to an anchor before Boston. He brought 123 passengers including 50 children all in health. He lost not one passenger, save his carpenter, who fell overboard as he was caulking a port. They were 12 weeks abroad. He had five days east wind and thick fog, so as he was forced to come, all that time by the lead, and the first land he made was cape Ann."[2] This entry in the journal of John Winthrop, Governor of the Massachusetts Bay Colony, attendant to a list of passengers, included 15-year-old John Whipple as one of the 123 Lyon immigrants. Thus began the continuing history of the Whipple surname in the new world.[3]

John Whipple of 1632 must not be confused with the two middle-aged Whipple brothers, John and Matthew, who arrived in Massachusetts in 1638. There is no known relationship between the teenager John Whipple and the Whipple brothers, who arrived six years later and settled at Ipswich.[4] The short distance between their settlements meant that the two families would have met very soon after 1638, if they had not already met in the old country. If so, they likely reminisced and told stories about their families left behind in Old England. Natural curiosity would have led them to seek common kinships, perhaps even writing home to ask if someone there knew if, or how, they were related. Perhaps the brothers knew the circumstances that led to the younger John's apprenticeship at an early age, and how difficult it must have been for his parents to see him leave, knowing that they would probably not see their son again. John was apparently apprenticed as a carpenter to a Mr. Israel Stoughton to pay for his passage to the new world.[5] Records state that on 3 October 1632, "John Wipple and Alex Miller were ordered to pay fines of 3s, 4d to their master Israel Stoughton, for their wasteful expenditure of powder and shot."[6] The Stoughton family lived near the town of Bocking, England, the town from which the Ipswich brothers are known to have immigrated.[7] It is not known if John

grew up in that area as well.[8] Neither is it known if he ever returned to Old England for a visit.

The present author engaged the English genealogical firm, Debrett Ancestry Research Limited, to search for a possible relationship between the two Whipple families. Debrett examined the original registers of Bocking for the years 1575-1632. Gaps exist in the registers: marriage registers are missing for 1575-92; baptisms for 1571-72, 1581-82, and 1606-55. The firm next examined the International Genealogical Index of Essex, with negative results. Research was then extended to the nearby parishes of Rayne, Stisted, Shalford, Halstead and Gosfield, and to the indexes of the Essex probate courts for the period 1600-1635.

A number of Whipples lived in those areas, including Braintree, whose records, unfortunately, do not begin until 1660. Nineteen marriages of Whipples (and the similarly named) between 1538 and 1837 in Essex were found in Boyd's Marriage Index.[9] (Spelling was until recently not standardized; during the seventeenth century names were spelled inconsistently. Even the educated spelled their names in a variety of ways.) Most Whipples, and those similarly named, lived in a close cluster in the area that surrounds Bocking/Braintree, indicating a possible connection. However, no confirming evidence exists as to whether the 1632 John was related to the Whipples of Bocking. It is assumed that John was born around the year 1617. Debrett uncovered the name of only one individual whose christening was close to that date. His name was John Whaple, baptized 13 December 1618 at Great Waltham, Essex, the son of John Whaple and Mary Collett. As yet, "no firm evidence has emerged which proves beyond doubt that the John baptized in 1618 was either the ancestor or related to the Bocking Whipple family."[10]

Stoughton Mill Marker

The Apprenticeship Years

John Whipple would have been put to work immediately upon his arrival in Dorchester. Within less than a year, he could have been on the crew that built New England's first mill, as well as a bridge across the Neponset River. This gristmill, called "Stoughton's Mill", was completed in 1634, and conceivably John was one of a privileged few to witness the very first bushel of grain ground by waterpower in the colonies. He likely participated in building the first fish weir that same year. [11]

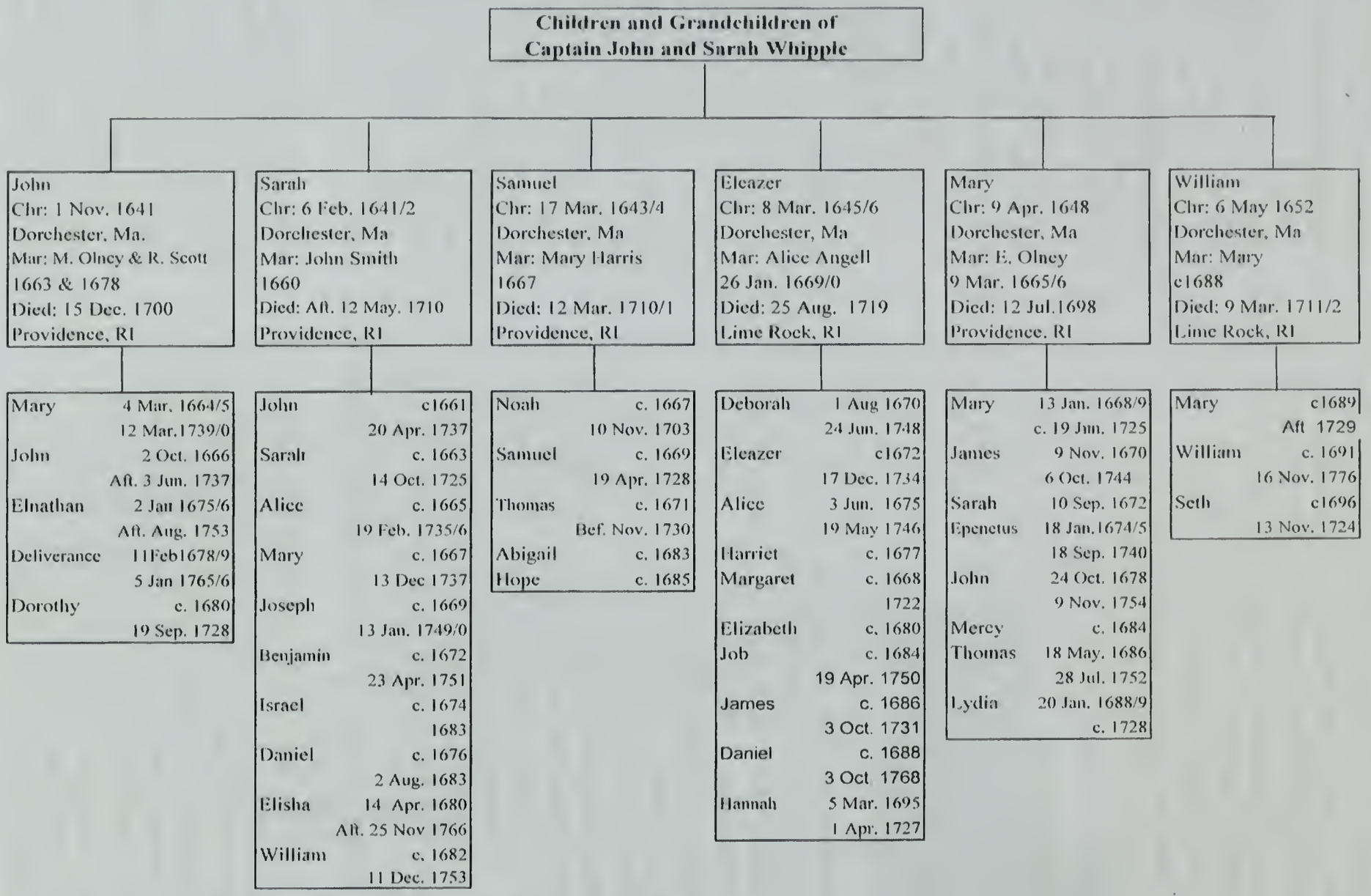
Consequent to the mill's completion, it was ordered that a road or "cart way" be laid out from the town to the mill, a route of some four miles made necessarily circuitous due to the area's topography. "When Israel Stoughton set

up a grist mill on the Neponset River, a road was built across the 'Great Lots' connecting the original settlement with it. This became known as the Lower Road, now Adams Street."[12] At present, the shortest distance between them, by way of Dorchester Avenue, is about three miles.

The below photograph is of the Adams Street Bridge. The surrounding buildings are mill offices, the successors to the original Stoughton Mill. In the picture is seen two bridges one on top of the other. The lower bridge is listed on the National Register of Historical Places. A recent article in a local newspaper stated, "One of the region's oldest surviving bridges has been uncovered this month by workers replacing the Adams Street Bridge over the Neponset River on Milton line in Lower Mills. The granite slabs that make up the doubled-arched bridge have been ferrying people across the Neponset since 1765- and according to workers...it's in better shape than the 1930s-era steel and concreted bridge that was built over its colonial predecessor." The article also alludes to the "needed sandbagging along the raging Neponset to keep the waters from infiltrating their workspace." It likewise mentioned that the sandbagging was needed to, "keep the river's fish from jumping ashore on their upcoming spawning runs upstream...blueback herring, American shad and rainbow smelt are expected to be passing through on their way upstream..."[13] Several wooden bridges prior to 1765 had been used, but the annual freezing and thawing of the river necessitated that they be periodically replaced, including the 1634 and the 1651 bridges that John Whipple probably helped build. The water is still raging, although no longer giving power to the mills, and the types of fish that John Whipple could have caught and sold as a boy still populate the same waters almost 400 years later. In addition to catching, selling, and delivering fish for his master, helping to build the mill and bridge, and assisting in laying out the first road from the church to the mill by way of Neponset Village, John could have participated in digging the first canal in the colony. Another profitable skill he could have acquired as a teenager was that of shipbuilding.[14]

Neponset Bridge

As an apprentice, he would have been at the bottom of the social class ladder. Undoubtedly life would have been difficult, although he probably ate regularly and had a roof over his head. "The status of a servant may well be shown by the deposition presented in Court at Salem in 1657 by an apprentice in the town of Newbury, who testified that it was a long while before 'he could eate his master's food, viz, meate and milk, or drink beer saying that he did not know that it was good, because he was not used to eat such victualls, but to eate bread and water porridge and to drink water'."[15] Or John could have lived on the Stoughton homestead, which was located on the northeast corner of Savin Hill Avenue and Pleasant Street.[16]



Children and Grandchildren of Captain John and Sarah Whipple

John
Chr: 1 Nov. 1641
Dorchester, Ma.
Mar: M. Olney & R. Scott
1663 & 1678
Died: 15 Dec. 1700
Providence, RI

Mary	4 Mar. 1664/5
	12 Mar.1739/0
John	2 Oct. 1666
	Aft. 3 Jun. 1737
Elnathan	2 Jan 1675/6
	Aft. Aug. 1753
Deliverance	11Feb1678/9
	5 Jan 1765/6
Dorothy	c. 1680
	19 Sep. 1728

Sarah
Chr: 6 Feb. 1641/2
Dorchester, Ma
Mar: John Smith
1660
Died: Aft. 12 May. 1710
Providence, RI

John	c1661
	20 Apr. 1737
Sarah	c. 1663
	14 Oct. 1725
Alice	c. 1665
	19 Feb. 1735/6
Mary	c. 1667
	13 Dec 1737
Joseph	c. 1669
	13 Jan. 1749/0
Benjamin	c. 1672
	23 Apr. 1751
Israel	c. 1674
	1683
Daniel	c. 1676
	2 Aug. 1683
Elisha	14 Apr. 1680
	Aft. 25 Nov 1766
William	c. 1682
	11 Dec. 1753

Samuel
Chr: 17 Mar. 1643/4
Dorchester, Ma
Mar: Mary Harris
1667
Died: 12 Mar. 1710/1
Providence, RI

Noah	c. 1667
	10 Nov. 1703
Samuel	c. 1669
	19 Apr. 1728
Thomas	c. 1671
	Bef. Nov. 1730
Abigail	c. 1683
Hope	c. 1685

Eleazer
Chr: 8 Mar. 1645/6
Dorchester, Ma
Mar: Alice Angell
26 Jan. 1669/0
Died: 25 Aug. 1719
Lime Rock, RI

Deborah	1 Aug 1670
	24 Jun. 1748
Eleazer	c1672
	17 Dec. 1734
Alice	3 Jun. 1675
	19 May 1746
Harriet	c. 1677
Margaret	c. 1668
	1722
Elizabeth	c. 1680
Job	c. 1684
	19 Apr. 1750
James	c. 1686
	3 Oct. 1731
Daniel	c. 1688
	3 Oct 1768
Hannah	5 Mar. 1695
	1 Apr. 1727

Mary
Chr: 9 Apr. 1648
Dorchester, Ma
Mar: E. Olney
9 Mar. 1665/6
Died: 12 Jul.1698
Providence, RI

Mary	13 Jan. 1668/9
	c. 19 Jun. 1725
James	9 Nov. 1670
	6 Oct. 1744
Sarah	10 Sep. 1672
Epenetus	18 Jan.1674/5
	18 Sep. 1740
John	24 Oct. 1678
	9 Nov. 1754
Mercy	c. 1684
Thomas	18 May. 1686
	28 Jul. 1752
Lydia	20 Jan. 1688/9
	c. 1728

William
Chr: 6 May 1652
Dorchester, Ma
Mar: Mary
c1688
Died: 9 Mar. 1711/2
Lime Rock, RI

Mary	c1689
	Aft 1729
William	c. 1691
	16 Nov. 1776
Seth	c1696
	13 Nov. 1724

Children and Grandchildren --cont.

Benjamin
Chr: 4 Jun. 1654
Dorchester, Ma
Mar: R. Mathewson
1 Apr. 1686
Died: 11 Mar. 1703/4
North Providence, RI

Benjamin	11Nov.1688
	27 Apr. 1788
Ruth	12 May 1691
Mary	3 Mar. 1694/5
Josiah	29 Jul. 1697
	Bef. 1704
John	25 Feb. 1699/0
	13 Nov. 1751
Abigail	12 Jun. 1703
	c1787

David
Chr: 28 Sep. 1656
Dorchester, Ma
Mar: S. Gregory & H. Tower
1775 & 1777
Died: 18 Dec. 1710
Rehoboth, Ma

David	bef. 30 Oct. 1674
Israel	16 Aug. 1678
	13 Jun. 1720
Deborah	12 Sep 1681
	c1755
Jeremiah	26 Jun.1683
	14 May. 1721
William	27 May. 1685
	12 Nov. 1746
Sarah	18 Nov. 1687
	27 Sep. 1727
Hannah	9 Jan. 1690/1
	16 Oct. 1708
Abigail	20 Oct. 1692

Abigail
Born: c1658
Dorchester, Ma
Mar: S. Dexter & W.Hopkins
1672 & 1782
Died: 19 Aug. 1725
Providence, RI

John	c. 1673
	22 Apr. 1734
Abigail	c. 1675
	Aft. Aug. 1725
William	c. 1683
	Aft. 1739

Joseph
Born: c1662
Providence, RI
Mar: Alice Smith
20 May. 1684
Died: 28 Apr.1746
Providence, RI

John	17 May. 1685
	18 May. 1769
Jeremiah	3 Sep. 1686
Joseph	30 Dec. 1687
	Jun. 1750
Amphillis	6 Oct. 1689
	Aft. 17 Dec. 1776
Sarah	29 Mar. 1691
	c. 1762
Susannah	14 Mar. 1693
	15 Dec. 1776
Freelove	18 Mar. 1693/4
	Bef. 1781
Alice	6 Feb. 1695/6
Amy	16 Jun. 1699
	23 Dec. 1757
Christopher	14 Sep 1701
	Bef. 1706
Mary	9 Apr.1701
	8 Dec. 1733
Christopher .	6 Mar. 1706/7

Jonathan
Born: c1664
Providence, RI
Mar: Margaret Angell
c. 1690
Died: 8 Sep. 1721
North Providence, RI

Jonathan	22 Feb. 1691/2
	6 Aug. 1741
Thomas	26 Feb. 1693/4
	13 Oct. 1770
Sarah	c. 1696
	8 Sep. 1721
Margaret	c. 1697
	Aft. 8 Sep.1721
Parratine	c. 1698
Mary	c. 1699
	Aft. 1725
Alice	c. 1700

Marriage and Family of Captain John Whipple

John's indenture ended when he was 20 or 21 years of age, at which time he became a freeman and landowner. In time, he acquired between 40 and 50 acres of land. After only a few years in the new world, he was a property owner, a circumstance that would have been next to impossible had he stayed in Old England. At the 2 January 1637 Dorchester town meeting, it was ordered that John Whipple be given "eight acres near Stoughton's mill in the area known as Neponset Village, this grant being in regard of a former promise upon record."[17]

Within two years or so of becoming a landed proprietor, John was married to the 15 or 16-year-old Sarah—They, Darling, or Hutchinson.[18] When or where Sarah was born is unknown. Information on her gravestone sets her birth at Dorchester in about 1624, but this is unlikely since only Plymouth Colony was in existence at that time. Sarah Whipple, on 29 October 1641, addressed as "Goodwife Whipple," one of the lowest social class distinctions, was admitted to the Dorchester church.[19] John would have had to be a member by then, as freemen were required to be members of the church.[20] In addition to the qualification of church membership, all males over sixteen years of age were required to take the "Freeman's Oath," as of 14 May 1634, which contained the pledge, "submitting my selfe to the wholesome laws made and established by the same."[21] Children of non-church members were not permitted to be baptized and christened.[22] Uncertainty exists as to the christening date of their first child. The church allowed his mother to join in October of 1641, thus permitting the oldest, John, to be christened three days later, on 1 November 1641. He was at least two years old by then.[23] Sarah, the second child, was christened three months later, 6 February 1641/42. John and Sarah Whipple had 11 children; nine were born in Dorchester, the others in Providence, Rhode Island.[24] The death date of the second child, Sarah, is yet being researched. The 1710 date occurred at the death of her second husband, at which time she was declared to be too aged to handle her own affairs. Nativity and necrology dates of the other children possess a reasonable degree of certitude. With the exception of David all were married and died in Providence Plantations.

i. John Whipple, born about 1639, christened 1 Nov 1641; died 15 Dec 1700; married (1) Mary Olney, (2) Rebecca Scott

ii. Sarah Whipple, christened 6 Feb 1641/1642; died after 12 May 1710; married John Smith Junior (2) Richard Arnold

iii. Samuel Whipple, christened 17 Mar 1643/1644; died 12 Mar 1710/11; married Mary Harris.

iv. Eleazer Whipple, christened 8 Mar 1645/1646; died 25 Aug 1719; married Alice Angell

v. Mary Whipple, christened 9 Apr 1648; died12 Jul 1698; married Epenetus Olney.

vi. William Whipple, christened 16 May 1652; died 9 Mar 1711/12; married Mary.

vii. Benjamin Whipple, christened 4 Jun 1654; died 11 Mar 1703/1704; married Ruth Mathewson.

viii. David Whipple, christened 28 Sep 1656; died 18 Dec 1710 in Rehoboth, Mass.; married (1) Sarah Gregory, (2) Hanna Tower.

ix. Abigail Whipple, born about 1658; died 19 Aug 1725; married (1) Stephen Dexter, (2) William Hopkins

x. Joseph Whipple, born about 1662; died 28 Apr 1746; married Alice Smith.

xi. Jonathan Whipple, born about 1664; died 8 Sep 1721; married (1) Margaret Angell, (2) Anne.

If the Whipple household was typical of the time, John was preoccupied with providing for his family, and Sarah was busily engaged in rearing the children. The amount of formal education the Whipple children received can be only conjectured. Whether a child could read and write was usually a consequence of the degree of literacy possessed by the parents, particularly the mother. Sarah's level of education is unknown, but John could read and write.[25] Records of deeds and wills show that most of their children were illiterate to the point that they could not write their names. It is unlikely that any of the older boys would have studied at Cambridge College (Harvard University), which began in 1636, because it was founded for the purpose of training the clergy. They could, however, have attended the town's free public school, founded in 1639, the first such in the colonies.[26] Matters requiring education were usually related to church dogma. Parents, masters, and all others in charge of children were required "to catechize their children, servants, and others...in sound orthodox catechism" so when required, "either in church or privately...shall be judged most conductive to the general good."[27] Failure to comply resulted in a penalty determined by the court, and neighbors were encouraged to spy on each other.

The Whipple children, in all likelihood, had access to but a few books, at least as they are known today. "During the seventeenth century and well into the eighteenth, the books usually found in the average New England family were the Bible, the Psalm Book, an almanac, the New England Primer, a sermon or two and perhaps a copy of Michael Wigglesworth's horrific poem The Day of Doom...This book expressed the quintessence of Calvinism. John Calvin's theology was based on the belief that all men were born sinners and since Adam's fall, by the will of God, predestined from birth to hell and everlasting torment, unless, happily, one of the elect and so foreordained to be saved. Children could actually be put to death for striking their parents. Even for children, frivolous amusements were forbidden; a curfew was established; and all were constrained to save souls and to labor for material development." [28] "It may be stated that few books published prior to the nineteenth century had any

educational value for children and youth. Exception should be made in favor of the Shorter Catechism and 'Mother Goose Melodies.' The first was unpopular and of little value...The second has been the popular nursery rhyme book for two hundred years and still lives to bless little children. The opening of the nineteenth century revealed an ability of a few men and women to write attractive and healthful reading for children and youth...Concerning school text-books of the early day, little can be said, for they were very few, even into the nineteenth century. A single book would often serve two or three generations of children of the same family, so carefully were those early test books used and handed down from parents to children."[29] Children often worked six days per week alongside their parents from sunup to sundown, and vacations were practically unknown, thus spending several hours at school each day was out of the question. "The New England Puritans only allowed themselves one full holiday in the course of the year and that was Thanksgiving Day, a time for feasting. To be sure, there was Fast Day in the spring which gave freedom from work; but that was a day for a sermon...The celebration of Christmas was not observed by the true New England Puritan until the middle of the nineteenth century."[30]

The Whipple family diet would have been limited to home products, fish, and wild game. Butter and cheese were staples. Fruit was not common, except the wild berries and fruit of the forests. Rum brandy, wine, beer, and a little chocolate, were in use among their more well to do neighbors. At a commencement dinner at Harvard...four barrels of beer, one of cider and eighteen gallons of wine were served. Because water was not always fresh or pure, the family would likely have consumed mildly alcoholic cider at nearly all their meals. It would have been the unenviable job of the oldest to fill up the cider jug from the cellar every morning. The white potato could not be purchased as yet, but turnips, onions, carrots, and parsnips were readily available. Honey was common. Apple and mince pies were a treat, as were Indian puddings and baked beans with pork, all cooked in their old-style brick oven adjoining the great fireplace, which covered almost one entire wall of the house. If a child had a toothache, tobacco was smoked for relief from the pain.

Community Life

When his indenture was over, John paid a high price to stock and maintain his farm. Livestock was scarce and expensive by the time he acquired his own land. Horses were £27, heifers £13, sheep 50s. Cows were £30 to £40 each, a pair of oxen £40. Commodities were also high, including corn at 5s a bushel. At 3s a day, carpenter's wages were sufficient to purchase about a half-bushel of corn. Surplus produce from his farm not sold in Dorchester he likely took to Boston's Thursday market.[31]

That he was successful is confirmed by the fact that he added substantially to his original allotment of eight acres. A likely extant example of John's craftsmanship is the Barnard Capen house, one of only three surviving seventeenth century houses in Dorchester. It was built around the year 1635 on Washington Street opposite Melville Avenue, but "was moved to Milton about the year 1909.[32] John most likely helped construct the new Dorchester meetinghouse in 1645. Town residents raised £250 for the edifice, which was located on the site of the old church building on Pleasant Street. A few years later it was moved to Meeting House Hill, about one mile closer to John's property. Additional money was raised to make the "walls decent within and without."[33] His skills could have been put to good use in building a new bridge over the Neponset River in 1651. This bridge replaced the long-time ferry that had been operated since the settlement began.

In the year of the Capen house's construction, while still a neophyte apprentice carpenter, John would have witnessed a seminal event in the earliest history of American democracy: the founding of the colony of Connecticut. Approximately half of Dorchester's first colonists, representing a significant part of its wealth and intelligence, left to settle in the Connecticut Valley at Windsor near the junction of the Connecticut and Farmington Rivers. This move was forced upon them by the autocratic, imperialistic policies and restrictions on political and personal freedoms imposed by Governor Winthrop and the majority of the colony's clergy. The governor had little regard for the commoner. He wrote, "the best part of the people is always the least, and of that best part, the wiser is always the lesser." His colleague, The Reverend John Cotton, expressed the position of the majority of the colony's leadership when he stated, "Never did God ordain democracy for the government of the church or the people." [34] Such constraints, repugnant to many Dorchesterites who had left England to escape such repression, caused them to give up five years of hard work to labor in a new wilderness far beyond the jurisdiction of Massachusetts. Israel Stoughton's challenge to the magistrate's power to interpret law as they pleased resulted in his disqualification, and he was barred form public office for three years.[35] It safely can be assumed that John stayed in Dorchester to honor the terms of his indentureship to Stoughton, which was to last for two more years. A severely poverty-stricken state of existence would have lent added weight to his decision to stay put.

Bernard Capen House

Colony records are silent as to whether John participated in the community life of the town. Due to the fact that he was an integral part of the political and social scene in Providence, it may be assumed that he acquired

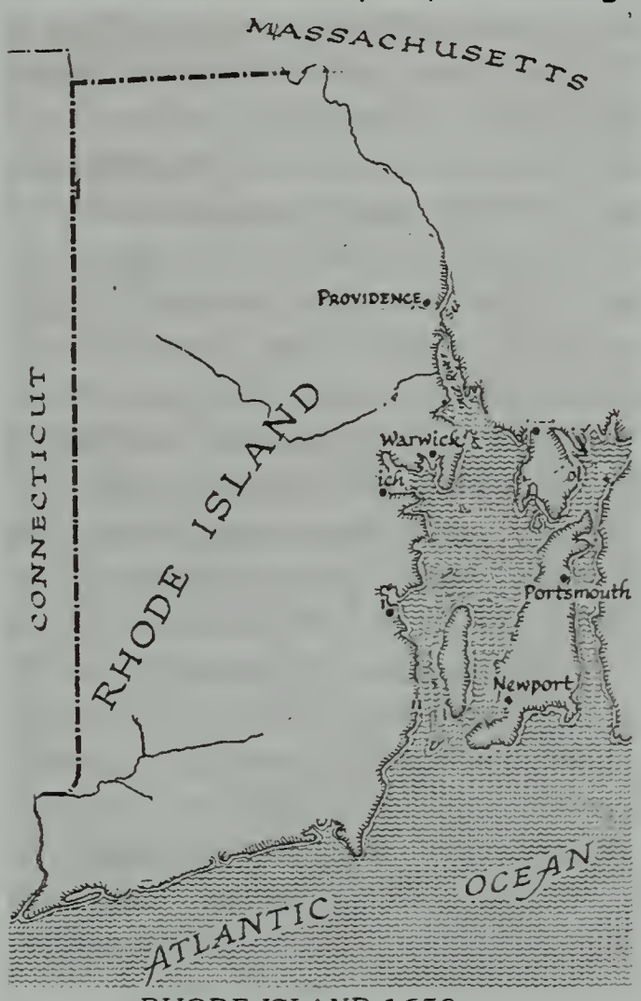
some social and political skills while in Dorchester. This may, however, not have been possible.[36] He likely was present at the first ever town meeting held in America in 1633, and was undoubtedly aware of the *Dorchester Directory*, which was read at each town meeting. It provided that every person could speak his mind "meekly and without noise, but should not interrupt another speaker, encourage support of town officers in the execution of their offices, and not fault or revile them for doing their duty..."[37] Astonishingly, only twice in almost two decades does John's name appear in public records. As previously noted, "John Whiplle" was the last proprietor to sign a fencing agreement, and he was mentioned in the estate of Edward Bullock probated 29 January 1656, in which it was stated that John was owed 5s for "stockings and a cocke."[38] His name does not appear on a 1637 list of 104 names "of those that were to have land in ye Division of ye Neck, & other Lands." The same was true in a similar 1641 list of 71 names.[39]

"Since John Whipple was a young, unmarried servant when he first arrived in Dorchester, we should not be surprised that he does not appear in the records more in the 1630s, but he generated remarkably few records between 1640 and 1658, during which period he lived as a married man in that town."[40] The factor that eventuated in his abandonment of the colony at the height of his earning power and potential influence may have been the underlying cause of his continued reticence to participate in Dorchester public life. That factor could have been religious heterodoxy.

Arrival At Providence Rhode Island

Documents are uninformative as to when or why John Whipple of Dorchester, Massachusetts first became interested in the place he was to call home for the remainder of his life. Perhaps he had visited Providence before on business or for pleasure. It was known that Dorchester residents had previously relocated there. He may have had prior knowledge concerning the substantial land grants that were soon to be awarded. Was he asked by friends or relatives while still living in Dorchester to become one of fewer than 50 owners or "proprietors"[41] of the vast expanse of wilderness known as Providence Plantations?[42] Or was he forced, like The Reverend Roger Williams before him, to flee for his life from Bay authorities?[43]

Passable roads between the Bay Colony and Providence were practically non existent; consequently, the 11 member Whipple family, plus household goods, farming and carpentry implements, and livestock, would have embarked by boat around Cape Cod, down the coast to Newport, then 20 miles or so up the Narragansett Bay to their destination. The size of the family itself would have had an immediate impact, increasing Town Street's population by about five percent. The very real possibility of psychological trauma, particularly of the children,[44] caused by interfacing with this unfamiliar environment could have been substantial. They left a well-organized society of life long-friends, and a free public school. The feeling of personal security was summarily disquieted when the new town leaders voted, 27 January 1660, to pay a substantial fee to anyone who killed a wolf. Dorchester had been, by the mid 1650s, a thriving community of approximately 150 dwellings (750 to 800 inhabitants) with 1500 fruit trees, an abundance of livestock, as well as adequate work with sufficient wages for tradesmen like John.[45] Surely, to leave such a commodious situation required a higher purpose: freedom of conscience.



RHODE ISLAND 1659

As seen on the above map, John had a choice between four "Rhode Island and Providence Plantations" settlements: Newport, Portsmouth, Warwick, or Providence. A fifth choice would have been a small settlement on the Pawtuxet River about five miles south of Providence, which was under the hegemony of Providence. It is generally conceded that Providence was the least desirable of these.[46] In total, the colony's Caucasian population was only about 1000, with Newport being twice the size of the other plantations. Most of the estimated 200 or so residents of Providence lived in "story and one half," dirt-floored[47] houses widely scattered along the east side of a two-mile- long dusty, narrow path, called Towne Streete,[48] which lay between a sea inlet, a shallow salt water cove, a swift running river to the west, and a steeply ascending 200-foot bluff that ran the length of the expanse on the east. Standing on this promontory, looking down on the bucolic scene below for the first time as a middle aged man, John Whipple could not likely have been favorably impressed. He would not have seen a green-lawned courthouse or a parrish church[49] with its well-manicured graveyard; not even the presence of a rustic schoolhouse could be detected, or

the furtive resemblance of a bridge across the river, or the presence of a ubiquitous wharf-- sights to which he had been accustomed in Dorchester.

"During the seventeenth century there was little need of wharves...They were, in fact dependent upon Massachusetts, or upon occasional Dutch traders for nearly all manufactured articles...In revenge for Rhode Island's refusal to expel the Quakers, they threatened to discontinue all intercourse, and thus to deprive Rhode Island of comfortable existence. 'We have not,' said the Rhode Island legislature, 'English coin, but only that which passeth among these barbarians, only corn, cattle, tobacco, and the like, to make payment in, which they (the Massachusetts people) will have at their own rate, or else not deal with us."[50] With the exception of the town's gristmill at the north end of the street, business enterprises were nowhere in evidence. Far to the west, across the cove and river, could be detected the plowing and tilling of farmers. Young boys were seen tending herds of livestock. And in that direction, as far as the eye could see, mammoth stands of oak and cedar trees and lush meadows were there to be claimed by the right man. Perhaps John felt that he was that man.

Modern Day View of 1659 Whipple Property

The above panoramic view of the bluff that over looked John's house, located where the lighter colored single row apartment building now stands, was taken from the Smith Street[51] steps of the state capitol building. In his day the capitol area was a lush meadow where cattle were kept. The hillside above John's house would have been heavily forested, fit for logging and orchards only. The laying out of Benefit Street, the first row of houses above the apartment building, about 60 years after John's death, necessitated the relocation of the Whipple burial plot to the town's cemetery one mile to the north. All of the land seen in this photograph belonged to Captain John Whipple and/or to one of his sons. Shortly after moving his family to this address, John bought an additional 200 acres in adjoining areas. In front of the house was a dirt path named Towne Streete (now Main) that still runs along side a stream called the Moshassuck River---hidden by the trees at the bottom of the ravine.

It would have been readily apparent that his potential neighbors were living at bare subsistence level, particularly if he were viewing this scene in the year 1658, when the little settlement endured a severe drought. Most of those who had congregated around The Reverend Roger Williams over two decades earlier were poor, unskilled, and undereducated. They were the outcasts of Puritan society. "Among the associates of Williams were no men of wealth, or of

much mechanical skill. They were nearly all farmers, and expected to draw their subsistence from the soil. Their dreams of prosperity were of meadowlands, corn fields, and flocks in the valley of the Mooshassuc, and not, like those of the men of Boston, of warehouse and anchorage by the shores of the Bay. They had little beside the household effects which they brought with them and their Massachusetts neighbors did their best to prevent their acquiring more."[52]

Population growth had stagnated. Many of the original inhabitants had moved about five miles to the south to establish a sister settlement on the Pawtuxet River. Others had simply become disenchanted and relocated elsewhere in the colony. Several of the original home lots had been abandoned for years, leaving houses, gardens, and orchards in ruin. "It will be sufficient to observe that the old townsmen gave no cordial welcome to emigrants, and offered them no invitation by the establishment of schools, or other means of improvement. They were satisfied to remain a closed corporation. The descendants of the settlers held fast by the home lots of the town street, with the tenacity which in that age characterized the owners of ancestral property. Few new comers could gain a foothold in the town." [53] "The Town Meeting would give no invitation to fugitives from religious intolerance [although Williams did], and set apart no tract or reservation for their benefit. All who came hither came at their own risk, and upon their own responsibility."[54]

"Providence grew very slowly. In 1638 there were only twenty families—about 100 persons; in 1645, about fifty families or 250 persons; in 1675, perhaps 350 to 400 persons. This slow growth resulted in part from fear of the Indians; in part from the instability produced by internal quarrels among the settlers; and in part from the fact that the radical principles upon which Providence was founded appealed only to the ultra-Puritans or more eccentric and bold Englishmen an Englishwomen of that day. Williams said frankly that his purpose in founding the colony was to create a free community of seeker after truth and a haven for those persecuted elsewhere for their conscientious beliefs."[55] He paid scant attention to their educational level or vocational skills. "For the first time in human history State had wholly been dissociated from Church in a commonwealth not utopian but real. For the first time the fundamental idea of modern civilization---that of rights of man as a being responsible primarily to God and not to the community---had been given an impulse powerful and direct.[56]

"Inordinately slow was the town in taking the first step (toward growth). Down to 1740 or 1742 it was still, as in the seventeenth century, but a long, straggling street by the water front, where on summer evenings the inhabitants sat in their doorways, smoked their clay pipes, and fought the swarms of mosquitoes that rose from the marsh opposite..."[57]

By the late 1650s, about two-dozen settlers had established small houses close together along Providence's one and only unkempt dusty, or alternately mud-drenched straggling dirt path, making friendship easier to establish, particularly between the town's women folk and the newly arrived Mrs. John

Whipple. She could immediately welcome them into her rented house, the considerable residence of one of Town Street's leading former citizens. "Women would visit each other with a clean checked apron, a striped loose gown, a handkerchief over the shoulders, and a sun bonnet; then pleasantly sit down and divert themselves over a dish of bohea tea and a piece of bread and butter...On the less attractive side, the physical closeness and small numbers in the community may have undermined privacy, nurtured gossip, and reinforced the patriarchal authority of public institutions. Even so, it had another not-so-obvious advantage. The town's primitive looking, unshaven men [there were no razors for some time] took turns gathering in one of their homes to discuss the days' issues. This gave the wife in whose home they were...the opportunity to join them in their serious and heated discussions of such as the knotty problems of theology, Gortonism or anti-Gortonism, the evils of pedo-baptism, the policy of Williams against that of Massachusetts Bay, the latest news from England then several months old, while the pewter flagon is passed around and the fiery beverage was generously quaffed. Neighbors were few and duly appreciated, communication with the other colonies was neither frequent nor rapid, nor was it regarded as particularly desirable...they were making their own history, and were anxious for non-interference while they laid the foundations of freedom in both church and state."[58]

Sarah Whipple and her older daughters must have been grateful that by the time they had taken up residence in their new home, the first rough-hewn log cabins with dirt floors had given way to frame houses more like their previous house in Dorchester, even though unpainted inside or out. If their temporary rented quarters was typical of the time, there would have been a single large room with a ladder or small stairs leading to a loft where the children made their beds, with straw mattresses (certainly not a bed for each), along with a chamber pot and possibly a chest or trunk that Captain John had made to store clothing and bedding. The one lower room held John and Sarah's bed and a chest at one end, perhaps a cradle for their infant daughter Abigail, plus a table and chairs. Chairs were a decided luxury; few families had more than one or two. The Whipple house was likely a bit larger and better equipped. Moreover, the typical residence of their neighbors had only one or two small windows. Window glass was not generally available until about the year 1700. Instead they were covered with paper made translucent (but not transparent) by saturation with linseed oil, protected by wooden shutters that were closed during bad weather. The living-bed space was rarely partitioned off from the kitchen area, the whole heated by a wood-burning fireplace with perhaps small built-in seats at the corners, for the half dozen younger Whipple children, made of stones held together by mud or rude oyster shell mortar. The hearth with its blazing fire, which likely covered one whole side of the house, would have extended several feet into the room.

"Over those great fire-places of colonial times many a wife presented herself as a burnt offering to her lord and master, the good man of the house. The posts and kettles that ornamented the kitchen wall were implements for pre-historic giants rather than for frail women. The brass or copper kettles often holding fifteen gallons, and huge iron pots weighing forty pounds, were lugged hither and thither by women whose every ounce of strength was needed for the too frequent pangs of child-birth. The colonists boasted of the number of generations a kettle would outlast; but perhaps the generations were too short---thanks to the size of the kettle."[59]

As to why the citizens of Providence would relent long enough to allow a middle-aged carpenter his wife and nine children, from the distrusted Bay Colony to join their "closed corporation" is a centuries old conundrum. That information has long since been lost in the mists of time.[60] Not every one who petitioned, even those suffering from severe religious oppression, was admitted into a full share of the town's largess. These were called "quarter-rights men" or simply, freeholders. By means of a lifetime of hard work, John obviously acquired a substantial estate, "much larger than the average purchaser."[61] By some estimates, he could have been one of the wealthiest men in Providence in 1659. It is possible that town leaders realized the wisdom of admitting someone of John's training and years of experience in carpentry and bridge building. There is no indication in town records that anyone from that trade had resided in Providence before John Whipple.[62] One of his first jobs as a new resident was to help build and later repair the town's first bridge over the Moshassuck River. [63]

The Religion of John and Sarah Whipple

The large and growing Whipple family moved to Providence because John wanted more land, and the town needed his skills and money. This is a plausible scenario. But it, by itself, could not likely have provided the decisive impetus to embark on such a drastic life-altering metamorphosis, considering the severity of the malevolent consequences that would have ensued. Unless there had been a stronger, more urgent reason, acquisitiveness would probably not have been enough to counter the personal and social stigma that would have attached to such a decision. The divulgence that he was even contemplating such an ill-advised move would have made him suspect. To do so would have resulted in social disgrace for the entire family. Close relatives would have had to disown and vilify them. Their church would have ostracized them. Moreover, it is entirely feasible that the members of the John Whipple family were forced to leave their comfortable home of over 25 years because they had already been ostracized. To become anathema to their life long neighbors and friends could only have been the result of virulent prejudous. The sacrament of baptism/christening would have been denied their children, which may have happened in the case of their youngest daughter born about 1657/58. The Whipples had rejected the

religion and/or political leadership of their neighbors, magistrates, and the clergy, so they in turn were rejected. Theirs would have been a desperate flight to find freedom of conscience, even if it meant moving to Rhode Island.[64] And the only place in the New England colonies to find such, in the years 1658/9, was Rhode Island.[65]

The oppression, which drove the family into exile, was deeply rooted in historical circumstances. The religion of the Massachusetts Bay Colony was Puritanism, the only form of Christianity in which John and his family would have been allowed to officially partake. During mandatory Sabbath services, they would have heard that there was but one true church, and that that church was the Congregational, or "New England Way." Sermons told of unbelievers in a hellish place called Providence, led by a man who had been excommunicated from their midst some years before. This Providence, they were told, was a "cesspool of sinners, a vile receptacle of all sorts of riff-raff people that is nothing else but a sewer. It was the asylum for all that are disturbed, a hive of hornets, and the Sinke into which all the Rest of the Coloneys empty their Hereticks."[66] Perhaps John's younger children cringed with fear when hearing that in the dreadful time at the end of the world, their home to be would be none other than hell itself. In summary, no one likely moved to Rhode Island from Massachusetts unless he or she was forced to do so.

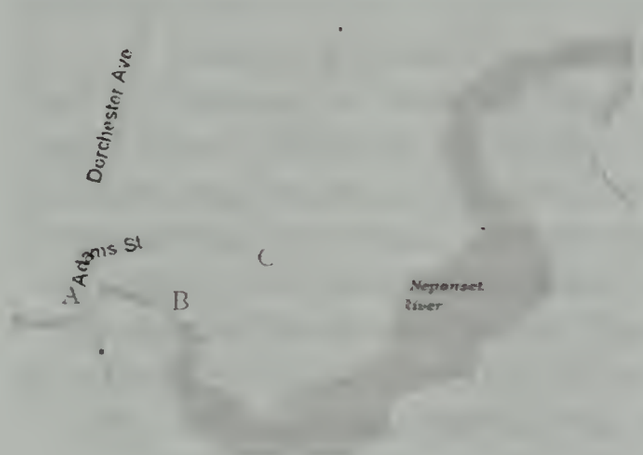
It would be instructive to learn the circumstances that surrounded the Whipple's decision to reject their life long religious beliefs and practices.[67] Itinerant Anabaptist preachers from England were not an uncommon sight, even in Dorchester.[68] However, the preponderance of circumstantial evidence suggests that the Whipples at least sympathized with the Society of Friends. However, it is just as conceivable that Captain John could have become disenthralled with religion in general. As it is true in the twenty first century, so then--- freedom of religion was often freedom from religion. "An often-heard criticism of Rhode Island was that much of its citizenry held to no particular religion at all."[69] The motives that urged most of the planters of the Moshassuck seem to have been rather political than religious. They had come to Providence for religious liberty, but only a few of them showed much desire for an active exercise of its rights by setting up any religious assembly. Their chief anxiety was to escape from the despotism of Puritan elders, thus their government functioned only in civil matters. "The records of the town would seem to indicate that the early inhabitants were not of a kind whom church-going was a necessity."[70]

They undoubtedly heard about, or witnessed, the heresy trial and banishment of the proto-Quaker Anne Hutchinson, as well as the later trial of her sister Catherine Scott, a noted Baptist convert to the Society of Friends. "John Winthrop, the political king of Boston, and Rev. John Wilson, its ecclesiastical Bishop, were opposed to Mrs. Hutchinson's doctrine, known by the hard and today meaningless name, 'Antinomian.' The debate...set all of Boston on fire...banishment was the only means of saving the Puritan Church and

State...."[71] She and several followers moved to Aquidneck Island, later called Rhode Island, in 1638. Further fear of Boston enticed her to flee, in 1643, to what is now the Bronx, New York, near the Hutchinson River, where she was slain in an Indian uprising. Most of those who followed her to Rhode Island had become Quakers within less than 10 years. "In the 1650s, the new Quaker doctrines were imported into Newport from Boston. They seemed compatible with much of what Anne Hutchison had taught, and Quakerism quickly became the most important denomination on Aquidneck."[72]

Catherine Marbury Scott lived in Providence, where she had fled to escape Massachusetts. It was Catherine who convinced The Reverend Roger Williams in 1638/39 to establish the first Baptist church in America, although Williams left the church within four months, and Catherine soon converted to Quakerism. She and her husband Richard, who lived next door to Williams, were the grandparents of two of Captain John's step grandchildren through his eldest son. The Scotts were a constant irritation to Williams, being the first converts to Quakerism in Providence.

"After the arrival of the Quaker ship Woodhouse in Newport in the summer of 1657, missionary evangelists of the new sect fanned out in all directions... It was not long before some of these zealous people decided to invade Massachusetts to preach their views and denounce the laws against Quakers. A widow, Harrod Garner from Newport, was given ten lashes...in May 1658 for that offense. A month later Thomas Harris and another Rhode Islander went to Boston and denounced the sermon after Sabbath service. Both were whipped and imprisoned. In September, Catherine Scott, who had given up the Baptist faith to become a Quaker, received the same treatment. She was told that if she came back again she might be hanged. In 1659 William Robinson and Marmaduke Stephenson were hanged on Boston Commons...Not before 1672 were Quakers allowed to preach in Boston without arrest."[73]



Dorchester Whipple Property

Typical of the religious atmosphere, the heretic Samuel Gorton was arrested in Rhode Island and paraded down the main street of Dorchester in chains, a sight the Whipples could not have missed.[74] Conceivably John was in church on that Sunday morning in the summer of 1658 when Thomas Harris of Providence, the father-in-law to be of his son Samuel, criticized the sermon and was summarily whipped and imprisoned.[75] The final straw might have fallen on 19 October 1658, when Massachusetts enacted a law banishing all Quakers upon pain of death.[76] Within less than one month of that proclamation, 15 October 1658, John sold his property to George Minot, and began preparations to leave,

thus making a public declaration, if he had not done so already, of his decision to renounce the religion of his childhood. The deed reads in part: "John Whiple...carpenter...his now dwelling house and housements scituate and being in Dorchester near the river Naponset together with thirty-seven acres of upland more or less thereto adjoining, also eight acres of salt marsh more or less lying near the place commonly called the penny ferry."[77]

On the map above, John's property letter "C" would have been to the right, or east, of the mill and bridge letter "A" at Adams Street, and near the penny ferry letter "B" in an area called "The Neck." At least some of his property was located on the river itself, eight acres of "salt marsh near the ferry." This ferry operated from a point somewhere between the present Adams Street Bridge and the Granite Avenue Bridge on what is now the north shore of the Neponset River State Reservation.[78] The village of Neponset, not seen on this drawing, was located about one half mile to the northeast at the mouth of the river. The Stoughton Mill area is now called the Lower Mills district.

Having witnessed the unconscionable hanging of two Rhode Island Quakers, which occurred earlier in the same year that he was approved as a Providence purchaser,[79] could only have strengthened his resolve to escape the same fate. Was it mere coincidence that less than one month after the law was enacted that mandated the death sentence for members of the Quaker faith, the Whipples promptly moved to the only safe haven in New England for members of that sect? Massachusetts authorities were totally consumed with the Quaker issue in the 1650s; the few newly arrived Anabaptists from Old England, who differed from them primarily on the doctrine of adult baptism, were largely ignored for the time being. As far as is known, none of the Whipples returned to their former hometown.

First Babtist Church

Consequent to becoming ensconced in his new home, John's religious and/or political preferences became non-issues. Due to laws that mandated separation of church and state, early town records were strictly secular in nature, and parrish membership records from that early date are absent or incomplete.[80] It has been assumed that John and Sarah were Baptists, based on the observation that "their children married into families that held the same beliefs as Roger Williams."[81] However, as shown herein, their children and grandchildren married into families of Quaker, Baptist, and Anglican communions.[82] The John Whipples are not mentioned in the membership records of the Baptist church in Providence. A proffered document entitled "John Whipple on the Baptist Church" has apparently become lost or misplaced.[83] There is no proof that John Whipple Senior or Junior wrote the document. He may have at one time preached at a Baptist house church some where along Town Street or held some other ecclesial

post,[84] in that educational qualifications for the Baptist and Quaker clergy or lay clergy were nonexistent, if not in fact discouraged at the time.[85] The photograph above is that of the sanctuary of the First Baptist Church of Providence, its predecessor being built about 50 years after Captain John's death. Extant records of the church commence about the year 1755; therefore, there is no way to know if seventeenth century Whipples were members. The first listed Whipple communicant dates from 1764. Thomas Olney and Roger Williams were implacable enemies.[86] Olney, the father-in-law of John Whipple Junior, withdrew from the church in 1652 and started his own Baptist church. Thomas Olney Junior was its minister until his death in 1722, at which time the church ceased to be. If the Whipples were Baptist they likely were members of the Olney splinter group. In contradistinction to earlier claims, the religious preference of Captain John and Sarah Whipple cannot at this time be determined with a sufficient degree of certitude.

A Member of the Landed Gentry

In a deed dated 23 November 1663, Captain John Whipple wrote that he owned the former Towne Streete property of Francis Wickes.[87] A deed drawn by Benedict Arnold, governor of the colony, on 10 September1666 averred that he, Arnold, had sold four home lots, including those of John Greene Junior, Benedict Arnold, Francis Wickes, and William Arnold to John Whipple in 1661. According to his testimony, the "towne granted it to me above Twenty yeares agone. I Benedict Arnold haveing sold the PremiSes to him about five yeares agone."

Due to its historical significance, this deed, which is over 1500 words in length, is discussed in some detail. Several important place names are mentioned.

> "This deed beareing date the Tenth day of September in the Eighteenth yeare of the Reigne of our Soveraine Charles the Second King of England Scotland France & Ireland &c. That I Benedict Arnold of Newport, in ye Collony of Rhode Island & Providence Plantations in New England & (Sen) for good causes hereunto me moveing; And ffor & in ConSideration of NineScore Pounds Current pay of this Collony in hand Received before the Signeing & sealing...ye Whole Right ye said Towne to me Granted ...; The promised Percells hereby Sold, being as followeth; That is to say, ffowre houSelots or homeShares containeing in the whole Six & Twenty Rod be it More or less on ye west party & as Much on ye EaSt party; & one hundred & Twenty Rod in length be it More or less on ye South party, & and as Much on ye North party; Bounded on ye North party by ye Common & partly by ye howSe lot of Edward Manton, & on ye East by the HighWay or Common, & on ye South by land now in the PossesSion of John Throckmorton (Sen) & on the West by the Streete, or Way

leadeing into Towne &c; All Which Sd ffowre Lotts together with howSeing, fenceing & other improvements thereupon Wholy Sold unto John Whipple aforesaid excepting about Two Acres lieing on the South Side toward the East...sold to Thomas Olney. Moreover, the percells of land that are hereafter mentioned are togethere with ye foresaid Howselotts Sold & by these present Made over unto ye above Said John Whipple; That is to Say, one low plot of ground Containeing about Nine Rod of land as it Was by me fenced in many years agone, lieing below the Streete betweene ye Forsd howSelots & ye River below the Mill; Bounded round by ye StreetWay & ye Common..."[88]

It is reasonable to assume that the Whipples lived from 1659 to 1661 in the abandoned house of William Arnold, empty since 1651, the house and land John eventually deeded to John Junior.[89] In addition to the Town Street property, John bought several other parcels of land from Arnold at that same time. He bought five tracts of land of five or six scattered acres in such places as "what cheare bounded on the east by the salt water that goeth up towards Pawtucket falls, etc." Also, "five acres more or less lieing under the hill on the SouthWard side of WeyboySett above ye Bridge... And "one Percell of land to ye north End of Rockey Nooke." Also, "six acres at Solitary Hill near the forementioned River Called WanasSquatucket." Also, "land granted & once laid out to Me on the East Side of the fresh Pond Called MaShapagne" and "Small brooke." John bought an additional two parcels of 60 acres, and two of about 20 acres each. In total, the deed shows that he purchased over 180 acres soon after his arrival in Providence, in addition to the 40 or so acres that the house lots and common encompassed. The deed acknowledged that John had already sold or traded some of the property. However, a few tracts are mentioned in his last will and testimony. " In 1659, came John Whipple from Massachusetts. He purchased nearly the whole tract eastward of that part of Town street (Constitution Hill)."[90] John bought four lots, about 175 yards of land, along Town Street. Each lot of five acres extended up and over a steep hill[91] to New Hope Street on the east, a distance of about one-half mile. In addition to these lots, he would have been entitled to approximately 25 acres of planting or grazing land north and eastward of Hope Street.

Whipple Backyard

The June 2004 photograph above, taken from the rear of an apartment building that now occupies the spot where the Whipple house would have stood (about 75 yards north of Star Street), shows the incline of the hill on the Whipple property. Other areas of the incline rise from an angle of 45 degrees to about 60 degrees. A terraced area immediately to the top of the photograph, on what is now Benefit Street, would have held the family burial plot. The laying out of this

street in the mid 1700s caused the Whipples, and about 50 other families, to move their ancestors' graves to the North Burial Ground.

That the Whipple family moved in immediately is evident in a reference to John that appeared in town records in early 1660/61, and his oldest daughter, Sarah, married in 1659 or early 1660. She married into the Smith family, owners of the Smith Mill immediately to the northwest (on the map opposite) of John's property. John's youngest daughter, Abigail, married the oldest son of The Reverend Gregory Dexter, his immediate neighbor to the north. His middle daughter, Mary, married into The Reverend Thomas Olney Senior family (first house south of Gaol Lane), as did John Junior.[92] John Junior's second wife was the widow of Richard Scott's son, the immediate neighbor to the south of the Whipple property. Sons number three and six, Eleazer and Benjamin, married daughters of Thomas Angell (second house south of Gaol Lane). Joseph, Captain John's seventh son, married a granddaughter of the Angells. Samuel, John's second son, married into the Thomas Harris family (fourth house south of Powers Lane) and bought the property of Roger Mowrey, (first house at the top of the map). See individual

the property of Roger Mowrey, (first house at the top of the map). See individual

chapters for further information on the marriages of second generation Whipples.

By virtue of his new status as a part owner of Providence Plantations, within two years of his arrival, John received a grant of land in an area called the "north woods" or Louquisset.[93] This property, located eight to ten miles north of the settlement, was given, by deed and will, to his four oldest sons.[94] In terms of land acquisition, the move to his new home was fortuitous. He became a proprietor two months after the General Assembly gave the town its permission to "buy out and clear out" the Indians within plantation territory and purchase adjacent lands. His fellow proprietors, on 27 July 1662, gave him permission to exchange his sixty acres at Mashapauge Pond for additional land at Loquasqussuk.[95] John also participated in the awarding of at least three other land grants. On 19 February 1665/6, he drew lot #45 in the division of lands east of the 7 mile line [an arbitrary line seven miles west of Providence].[96] The surveyor described this property as located "...at the sowth ind by the Wenasketukit [Woonasquatucket] River the sowthermost corner a whit oak the norard Cornar a Small roack ranged with agreet whit oke three or fowar poll from the roack the estar Cornar a whit oke the sowth est Cornar by the river a black oke...be it mor or less laid by me Thomas harris Savaire."[97] John promptly traded some of this grant at the "Tare Breech Plain" on 13 November 1666.[98] John drew lot #43 in the lands on the west side of the seven-mile line on 12 April 1675.[99] In his last land grant of 24 May 1675, he drew lot #91 on the east side of the seven-mile line.[100] He was subsequently given permission to change a 50-acre division of upland later that year.[101] John also petitioned for a small piece of land next to his new orchard on Towne Streete in February of 1661.[102] And on 6 June 1681, he was granted permission to exchange his twenty-five acres at Goatum Valley "which he bought of Mr. Benedict Arnold."[103]

The twenty-acre homestead on Town Street, plus twenty-four acres of commoning, that the Whipple family purchased from Benedict Arnold may have been devoid of structures, and its farm fields and orchards overgrown. Early on, the Wickes family had become converts to the religious teachings of a man named Samuel Gorton, who banned by at least two other local settlements, had tried to settle in Providence. "When Gorton applied to the town for admission as a voter and landholder (or freeman) in May 1641, the town denied his request, calling him, 'an insolent, railing and turbulent person.' They also excluded from town fellowship Gorton's followers, John Wickes and Randall Holden."[104] The Wickes family, following Gorton, eventually settled in what is now the town of Warwick, Rhode Island in the mid-1640s. The Arnolds and Greenes moved to the Pawtuxet River area in 1638 and the early

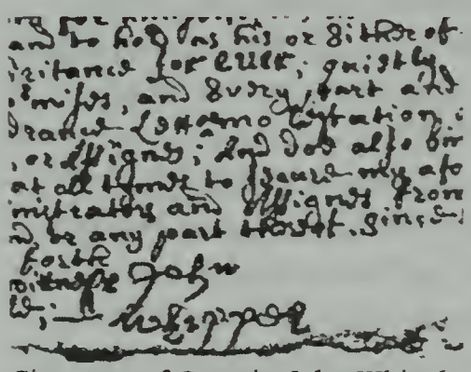
Area of Whipple Property, 1661

1640s. Benedict Arnold eventually moved to Newport, and was the colony's governor at the time he sold Captain John the north Main properties.

The June 2004 photograph above is of the present state of the four lots on Constitution Hill looking northeast from the northeast corner of Main Street and Star Street. This newly constructed single row of eight two-story condominiums stand at the bottom of a sharply rising hill, with Main Street to the left. The original Main (or Towne) Street was much narrower when the Whipples lived there.[105] The John Whipple house was long the oldest house in Providence, finally demolished shortly before WWII to allow for the widening of Main Street into four lanes. His house/inn, at 369 North Main, would have stood about 75 yards north of the south end of the condominium complex (on the right of the photograph) and toward the front, where Main street now traverses. The inn/tavern of Mary Whipple Olney (John's second daughter) was located about two blocks up this street. The ascending street to the right is Star Street, where Whipple Hall schoolhouse was located.[106] John Whipple Junior's house stood at this intersection. The street to the left is Mill (now James) Street, on which the John and Sarah Smith (Captain John's oldest daughter) gristmill, and home, was located, as well as the tavern/inns of John Junior and Joseph.

Previously in the possession of absentee landowners for well over a decade, their new acreage likely demanded much of the Whipple family. Restoration and expansion of the property was first priority. As a result, John appears infrequently in town records for the first three years or so. The first record of community activity in the settlement occurred in January 1660/61, when as a surveyor, he "laid out 5 acres of low land for Thomas Clemance." This was recorded on 27 January 1660/61.[107] He was called upon to serve on a committee to collect taxes later that year. At a town meeting 26 March 1660/1661, it was ordered that "a rate of 35 pounds after peage, 8 penny shall be levied upon this towne to pay toward the colony prison."[108]

Not until 1663 is John seen as more than tangentially involved in community affairs. In that year, he served as a juryman on two occasions, and was a committee member twice, one committee concerned with property boundaries and the other with building a new towne house.[109] The year 1663 saw the first of eight deeds recorded to his sons, when he deeded to "my son John Whipple a houselot formerly owned by William Arnold excepting two acres, two shares of meadow, six acres of upland, sixty acres of land at Loquasqussuck..." The only known extant handwriting of John Whipple Senior appears in this document.[110]



Signature of Captain John Whipple

In 1664, John again entered town records when his neighbors called upon his training and experience as a carpenter. Four years earlier, the town council had overseen the building of its first ever bridge. Three years later, the bridge

had to be rebuilt. Then at a Quarter Court 27 January 1664, it was ordered that "John Whipple Senr. Be sent for to confer with the moderator, Mr. William Field, about mending the bridge." A subsequent agreement was made between Thomas Harris Sr. and Valentine Whitman, acting for the town, and John Whipple. With the help of two other men, John was hired to do the work.[111] Then three years later, 28 October 1667, five persons were chosen "to view the bridge...and to consider of the most easy and facill way to repair it so that the passage may not be lost." John Whipple and Roger Williams were members of the committee.[112]

It would be informative, as well as interesting, to know something of John's everyday experience as a carpenter. However, as seen above, only on rare occasions were the services of tradesmen required on public projects. Fortunately, the contract wages John charged, and some of the tools used, are known. Early town records include an undated estimate in John's own writing on constructing a leanto: "To making of ye leanto and work about it, 06-00-00. To making of ye seller roof and shingling it, 01-05-00. To making of a door and shelves in ye leanto, 0-80-6." Among his tools were a froe, a Rye bit, iron square, small jointer, carving tool, axe, clearing plane, whetting steel, wimble stock and bits, soding iron, compasses, and brass rule for a chalk line.[113]

The Captain John Whipple Inn

"Taverns, inns or ordinaries, were words used interchangeably in early New England to designate public houses where meals, liquors and lodgings could be obtained at reasonable prices. These places ranged from a single room with a bar, a chair and a hard board bed [like John's], to larger houses, with accommodations for a number of persons of both sexes, where meals and comfortable lodgings could be had, with a bar to supply all tastes with liquors of all grades. Taverns existed in England from the thirteenth century, and crossed the water with the Pilgrim and Puritan founders. Children and servants (and Indians) were not allowed to drink at taverns...profane singing, dancing, and reveling were forbidden."[114] A Bed and Breakfast Inn, with liquor privileges, would be its modern equivalent.

"John Whipple Senior was one of the most competent inn holders in Rhode Island. Because of the staid and sober character of the Whipple Inn and its central location it was a favorite meeting place for the Town Council and Court of Probate. The October 1690 session of the Rhode Island General Assembly met at the Whipple Inn."[115] As shown herein, present research reveals the above to be overstated, if not romanticized. The possibility has been broached that John may have acquired an initial pecuniary interest in licensing his own inn as early as 1670. At a town council meeting on 6 June 1670, John Whipple Senior "is paid 10 shillings for holding the town meeting in his house."

By the next time the council met at his house, the amount paid was increased to 20 shillings.[116]

At least three of John Whipple's children (John Junior, Joseph, and Mary Whipple-Olney), as well as at least two grandsons (John III and James Olney) and one step grandson (Sylvanus Scott), were actively involved in that business for a half-century and more. John Junior established his own inn by special request of the town, because the needs of its citizenry were not being adequately met,[117] three years before his father's death. Ostensibly, John Senior's inn, which had begun in 1674,[118] no longer actively operated and probably had not for sometime. This is understandable, considering the devastation that resulted from the Indian war that started within a year after he opened his doors for business. By the time the war had ended and residents began to trickle back late in 1677, and the long years of recovery required to rebuild or repair almost half the houses in the settlement had passed, John had but five or six years to live. Although John's property was spared destruction, the Indians had stolen everything that was not burned. When he died in 1685, "he left a large property in land, but the means at his disposal 'for entertainment of strangers'...was scanty. He had one feather bed, seven pewter platters, five pewter porringers, three old spoons, one old red blanket, and [three chairs and a decayed old warming pan]..."[119] Most of what has been penned about the so-called "staid" Captain John Whipple Inn, located at 369 Main Street, should have been attributed to his children's taverns instead, John Junior's in particular, located approximately one block or so to the north on Mill Street. John Whipple III inherited his father's inn in the year 1700 and continued its history for several more years. The Olney Inn existed until after the Revolutionary War. The Joseph Whipple family continued in the business until at least 1740.[120] "Whipple's tavern...stood, one of the most conspicuous of the old taverns, to the middle of the eighteenth century---not a long life, but a notable one."[121]

Early Rhode Island innkeepers have been described as "a picturesque lot." Perhaps the ensuing description could have applied to the Whipples: "Usually stout, good-natured, good-looking, and well dressed, they were prominent public figures, enjoying all sorts of confidences, public and private, leading the singing in the meeting houses, running ferries, teaching the children of travelers, serving on the legislature of town council, acting as recruiting officers in times of war, as storekeepers, surveyors or story-tellers. Some were frugal and thrifty, some mean and penurious, while others were extravagant. Some were of bitter dispositions, but, as a rule, they were jolly enough.[122]

"As Providence increased in size and importance more strangers had occasion to visit the town, and it became necessary to provide for their comfort and entertainment. In the earliest days the only lodgings available for visitors were in private houses and, as the accommodations of few of those houses exceeded one room [as in the case of Captain John Whipple's tavern], the guest quarters were neither sumptuous nor particularly private. The first tavern on the

Town Street of which there is record was the one opened by John Whipple in 1674, halfway up Constitution Hill. This was followed by another, immediately north of the home lots, maintained by Epenetus Olney. In a more secluded spot some distance to the north (Abbott Street) Roger Mowry had, for some years, conducted an 'ordinaire' in a house, erected in 1653" [bought by Samuel Whipple in 1671].[123]

"Even after settlements spread to Bristol, Rehoboth, Attleboro, Smithfield and Pawtuxet, the farmers and their wives would come into Sunday services and town meetings (both typically held at the inn). This Sunday ride or walk to and from the meetings was the one way both the men and women had, with their farms scattered one and two miles apart, to become acquainted with each other and to keep up their fund of information about their neighbors. Further, town meetings days also became shopping days. Crafty Traders would circulate handbills making a bid for the handiwork of the housewife and adroitly calling their attention to those goods that would excite the curiosity of the farmer's wives as to the condition of their wardrobe...The merchants on these occasions engaged one or more rooms at the tavern and while tea was served in the room, a bowl of punch was in the other and there was trading outside of the house as well as inside. The merchants had a variety of goods wanted by the farmer's wives, from a bottle of snuff to a warming pan, and they would take anything from the farm in exchange."[124] A more in-dept discussion of the Whipple Inns is presented in the chapter on John Whipple Junior.

Conflict with The Reverend Roger Williams

"...John Whipple was received as an inhabitant in Providence, purchased a Proprietors' share and soon became a leading citizen and a zealous supporter of Harris and Olney. Williams says that he was a constant speaker in town meetings and evidently regarded him as one of his chief opponents...It seems probable that Williams addressed his letters to Whipple, that they might become more widely known in what was then the chief club house of the village..."[125] For over a century, this or similar statements have been iterated and reiterated in numerous publications by various antiquarian researchers. It may well be that The Reverend Roger Williams did not see eye to eye with Captain John Whipple Senior as to the logistics of ethical land acquisition. However, in the instance below his verbal conflict was not with the elder Whipple.[126]

Less than a decade after arriving in Providence as a teenager, the youthful John Whipple Junior became a major participant in a protracted verbal and legal conflict over Indian land. Early on, John Junior allied himself with his wife's father, Thomas Olney, his brother Samuel's wife's uncle, William Harris, and William Arnold, his sister Abigail Hopkins husband's uncle. These men were the leaders of a consortium of proprietors who had for years sought to extend the plantation's boundaries westward for some 20 miles, allowing them to create

vast land holdings exclusively for themselves.[127] Roger Williams opposed the plan. The ensuing legal wrangling lasted well into the next century, long after the combatants had died.[128]

The letters in question, which Williams addressed to John Junior in July and August of 1669, were a virtual diatribe against the personality and moral rectitude of the young man, not his father.[129] Although the outcome of the various lawsuits went against the Harris, Olney, Arnold, and Whipple family syndicate, a great deal of land still came into the possession of their descendants. In the case of the Whipple family, by the year 1700, several descendants had moved onto the generally disputed areas of Cranston, Scituate, Coventry and West Warwick under such surnames as Arnold, Harris, Rhodes, Rice, and Whipple.[130] A more in-depth examination of these letters is attempted in the chapter on John Whipple Junior.

John's Honorary Military Rank

In the April 1676 meeting of the town council, John was elected moderator; he had been elected to the council at least twice before.[131] By that time, King Philip's War had been raging for almost a year. Less than one month earlier, Providence had been attacked and burned, its livestock stolen or killed, and its fields of spring crops destroyed. It is assumed that the April meeting was held at John's house, attended by some of the two dozen or so who were left in town, because his house was one of only a few that had been spared on the north end of Town Street. A few days before the attack, most of the town's residents had fled to Aquidneck Island for safety. Apparently each head of household was given the option to stay and defend the settlement; John Whipple Senior, Roger Williams, and two dozen others elected to stay.[132] The Indians had previously informed Williams, "Brother Williams, you are a good man, you have been kind to us many years; not a hair of your head shall be touched." [133] Apparently, that caveat applied to his sequestered colleagues in arms as well. Because of this act, John was listed among those who "stayed and went not away" and as such was entitled to Indian slaves.[134] He was subsequently appointed to a committee in October of that year to "demand & receaue at euery Garrison what was taken from yee Indians."[135] In 1679, the Rhode Island General Assembly, in which he served as a deputy that year, appointed him to a committee to give a final report on the Indian uprising.[136] The quasi-military designation "Captain" was used for the first time in this document.

Last Will and Testament

In his Last Will and Testament, dated 8 May 1682 and proved 27 May 1685, John Whipple Senior of Providence wrote:

"Be it known to all persons to whom this may come, that I, John Whipple of the town of Providence, in the colony of Rhode Island, and Providence Plantations, in New England ('Sen.") being in good measure of health, and in perfect memory, upon consideration of mortality, not knowing the day of my death, and having many children, and to prevent difference that otherwise may hereafter arise among them concerning my worldly estate, do see cause to make my will and do hereby dispose of all my estate in this world and do make my last Will and Testament.

"Having formerly given unto three sons, all of my lands and meadows in Louisquisset, namely, Samuel, Eleazer and William equally to be divided among them three only; excepting thirty acres, which I give unto my son John, at the North West End.

"I give unto my three aforesaid sons, namely, Samuel, Eleazer and William, each of them, a quarter part of one right of Common, for pasturing, cutting of timber, and firewood.

"I give unto my son Benjamin a right of land in the late division which is already made out to him.

"I give unto my son David a right of land in the late division which is already made out to him.

"I give unto my son Jonathan twenty-five acres on which he now dwelleth, also I give unto my son Jonathan one division of land which is ordered by the town to be laid out between the 'seven-mile line' and the 'four-mile line' and papers already drawn for.

'I give unto my son Joseph, my dwelling-house, and my three house-lots, and the garden next; also a six-acre lot lying on the southern side of the neck whereupon the town of Providence standeth; also twenty acres near Thomas Clemens, his dwelling; also I give unto my son Joseph my share of meadow near Solitary Hill, and the two six-acre lots, lying on each side of said Hill; also a six-acre lot, near William Wickenden formerly dwelt; also one division lying on the 'seven-mile line', which is already ordered by the town and papers drawn for; also I give unto my son Joseph, all other divisions which shall hereafter belong unto two rights throughout.

"I give unto my sons, namely John, Samuel, Eleazer, William, Benjamin, David and Jonathan twelve pence every one of them.

"I give unto my three daughters, namely, Sarah, Mary, Abigail, unto everyone of them, ten shillings.

"I give unto my son Joseph, all of my right of land in the Narragansett country. I give unto my son Joseph, all my movable goods, of what sort soever and all my cattle, and all my tools; also I do make my son Joseph my executor; also my will is that my son Joseph do see that I be decently buried; this being the real absolute Will and Testament of me John Whipple Sen; as aforesaid, I do hereunto set my hand and seal, this eight day of May, in the year one thousand six hundred and eighty-two. Signed and sealed in the presence of

Thomas Arnold
John Arnold
Shadrach Manton

Witness my hand

John Whipple L.S.[137]

"I, Thomas Arnold, and John Arnold, the 27th day of May, in the year 1685, did upon these solemn engagements declare that they are witnesses unto the above will, and as these names so are there written do own it to be their hand. Shadrach Manton the 27 day of May, 1685, in the presence of the Magistrates and rest of the Council, full and truly declare that he is witness to the above will, and that he with his own hand wrote his name there unto, as, attest, Arthur Fenton, Assistant.

"Joseph Whipple did upon the 27th day of May 1685 in the presence of the Council as he is Executor of the Testament upon his solemn engagement testify and declare that this is the last Will and Testament of his deceased father as ever yet perfected as he knoweth of and that he when he made it, was of sound mind, and of a good memory.

Taken before us Arthur Fenner
Joseph Jencks

Thomas Olney deposed that he had gone to John Whipple, at his request, and obtained clarification of some of the bequests.[138] The inventory of Captain John Whipple Senior was taken 22 May 1685 and totaled a little more than £41, excluding real estate.[139]

The unexpectedly penurious amount of £41 in worldly goods is informative if not enigmatic, until it is understood that almost everything John owned apparently had already been distributed to his children, who had long since established homes of their own. He had lived as a widower for almost two decades by then; accordingly his creature comforts were minimal---two beds, three chairs, and one old warming pan....[140] Another unexpected revelation is the smallness of his residence, considering the size of the family. "The houses upon the 'towne streete' during the first generations were of a story or a story and a half in height, with a large stone chimney at one end. In the earliest days of the town its houses had but two rooms, called in the Probate documents, the 'lower room' and the 'chamber.' The space did not always permit the luxury of stairs, and the only ascent to the chamber was often by a ladder. These humble dwellings were nearly universal until the last decade of the seventeenth century---the poverty which followed the Indian war delaying the period of improvement. In such a house lived John Smith the miller [and his wife Sarah, John's daughter] and the Town Clerk. The house of John Whipple, one of the chief landholders of his day, stood near the foot of Constitution hill. It was one of the first which was rebuilt after Philip's war. It appears by the proceedings upon his will (which bears date 8th May, 1682) that his house had only a lower room and a chamber above.[141] This was also the

369 N. Main, 1663

primitive farm house of the Plymouth colony. A few houses had two rooms upon the floor, sometimes called in the inventories, the 'inner' and the 'outer' room. Thomas Olney, Senr., [father-in-law of two of John's children] had a 'parlour,' 'kitchen,'and 'chamber.' He had also a larger personal estate than most of his neighbours."[142]

Above is an artist's rendering as to how the exterior of the Whipple house would have appeared in the mid 1660s shortly after the family had settled into daily life in their new home. This interpretation is based on knowledge of mid to late seventeenth century construction practices and of John's inventory of movable goods. Due to the family's apparent wealth and John's carpentry skills, the house likely could have been more substantial than others on Town Street. The front of the house, which would have faced south, could have been more elaborate than was usual at that time. The photograph of the 1912 John Whipple house at the end of this chapter is part of an uncataloged collection in the Rhode Island State Archives.[143]

Death and Burial

Captain John Whipple died 16 May 1685. The inscription on his gravestone indicates that he was about 68 years old. John's first 15 years or so were spent at an unknown location somewhere in Old England; there followed a half century lived in New England, equally divided between Dorchester, Massachusetts and Providence, Rhode Island. His wife, whose place of birth is unknown, died in 1666 at the age of about 42. Their children had all reached adulthood by the time of John's death. John Junior was the oldest at 46, Jonathan, 21, the youngest. Only Joseph 85, and Eleazer 74, lived a longer life than had their father. Their children eventually produced 77 offspring: 37 grandsons and 40 granddaughters. Of the grandsons, 24 bore the Whipple name, making his Whipple descendants the most numerous of the three Whipple men who came to the Massachusetts Bay Colony in the 1630s.

John and Sarah were laid to rest in their own garden burial lot, as was customary at the time. "Every home-lot had its orchard, about haft way up the eastern hillside. There, but a few paces from their homestead, were the graves of the household. The family allotment soon became alike their birth and burial places. There was no anticipation of modern sanitary ideas, and the funeral march was a long and dreary one, for, until a comparatively recent date, the corpse was carried forth upon the shoulders of the neighbors. Whether through poverty or want of skill, or the early diffusion of Quaker ideas, no inscriptions were set over the earliest graves. This primitive custom of sepultare outlasted three generations."[144]

Nowhere else in the colonies was this cemetery custom prevalent. "The parish churchyard of England had been followed in the other colonies by common burial places, attached or at least near to the meeting-house. It was a

feature of communal life and partook of the ecclesiastical sanctity descended from the Roman through the Protestant church. In Providence, death even could not end separatism and a common burial ground could not be attained until commerce began to relax the prejudices of the individuals whose ancestors had been driven from Puritan commonwealths."[145]

Although Providence was settled in the year 1636, the first mention of a public cemetery does not appear in town records until 1700. That year marked a departure from the individuality shown in the prior burial custom. At that time, the proprietors set aside the most useless sand hill in the area, located at the junction of the Pawtucket Road (Main Street) the "Country Road" to the Louquisset, for the burial of the dead. "The lot lying between Archibal Walker's southward to the brook that cometh out of Samuel Whipple's land, eastward with the highway, and westward and northwestward with the Moshassuck River, was voted to remain common for a training field, burying ground, and other public uses."[146] This land was next to the farm of Samuel Whipple, Captain John's second son, whose was its first interment in 1710/11. Providence at this time was a small town, very much in the shadow of Newport in terms of population and power; however, the time had come to develop a town cemetery as Newport had done more than fifty years previous.

Nevertheless, during the next 40 years few availed themselves of the opportunity. "While there were no interment records kept during the first 150 years of use, the study of the gravestone carvers who made the early markers helps us accurately date many gravestones carved long after the deaths they commemorate. Existing gravestones in the North Burial Ground mark only 18 burials here by 1725 and 29 by 1730. There undoubtedly were unmarked burials, but without records we have no way of knowing how many. An educated guess would be that ten percent of the burials were marked with gravestones. This would indicate that there were 180 or more by 1725."[147]

On 27 October 1746, a petition, signed by Stephen Hopkins and John Whipple (both Captain John Whipple descendants) and others asked for a street eastward of Town Street. It was to spare no ones houselot and imperiled all the household graves. Soon after, the first order was made for a new road to be called Benefit Street. It was to extend from Powers Lane on the south, so far northward as the great gate of Captain John Whipple. The John Whipple gate opened northwardly from his property into the Town Street at the head of Constitution Hill.[148] This Captain John Whipple, called the bonesetter, one of the largest landowners in Providence at the time, was the grandson of the first John through his son Joseph. The construction of this street required that household graves be relocated to the almost 50-year-old sand hill cemetery, by then called the North Burial Ground.

"Old habits die hard. Families did not immediately embrace the new town burial ground and abandon the family burial grounds on their own property where their parents and grandparents were buried. We know this by the dates

on gravestones in those cemeteries when they were moved years later. There are two apparently earlier gravestones [than Samuel Whipple's] in this burial ground, those for Capt. John Whipple (1617-1685) and his wife Sarah (1624-1666) (see picture on P.13) but these do not in fact deserve the honor of being the first. Not only were they moved here from a Whipple family burial plot elsewhere in town, but they were not contemporary with the deaths they mark. We know this from evidence provided by gravestone studies. Both beautiful slate stones were carved by George Allen (1696-1774) of the part of Rehoboth, Massachusetts that is now East Providence, Rhode Island. Allen was not yet born when the Whipples died. His well-documented carving style would indicate that they were made sometime after 1750, possibly at the time when their graveyard was removed to North Burial Ground"[149]

Whipple Burial Grounds

To reach the burial area shown in the photograph below, drive north from downtown Providence on North Main Street. The cemetery is located on this street, approximately one mile north of downtown. Enter the main gate on the south side of the cemetery. Proceed northward on the street to the right named Eastern Street—stay on this street—a distance equivalent to two city blocks. Stop at the clearly visible small sign that marks an east/west walkway, which reads "Dahlia Path." The Whipple burial area is about 15 yards on the left along this path. There is a large white and gray monument to the east that has the name "TEMPLE" inscribed on it. (The Temples married into the Joseph Whipple Junior family.)[150] Due to superstitions of the time, the headstones face to the west. The first two headstones to the left of the box tomb are those of Captain John and Sarah Whipple. Most of the 27 headstones present in this Whipple burial area represent the descendants of John Whipple, called the "bonesetter,"[151] eldest son of Colonel Joseph, the seventh son of Captain John Whipple. Actually, the majority of the burials are of the family of John's only son, Joseph of Smithfield, RI. Joseph[4]Whipple (John[3], Joseph[2], John[1]), his wife, seven daughters without their husbands, three sons and their wives, plus four grandchildren make up the majority of the burials. The remaining sites include the graves of Captain John and Sarah Whipple, Colonel Joseph and Alice Whipple, plus Mary Bardin, Colonel Joseph Whipple's youngest daughter, and Jeremiah, the infant son of John the bonesetter. There remains one unknown person, namely "Hannah wife of Samuel Whipple, c1819-1892."[152] George Allen, the above-mentioned carver, carved the headstones of Captain John and Sarah Whipple and the first four of the family to be interred, the fourth being Colonel Joseph Whipple in 1746. This indicates that the remains of Captain John and Sarah

John and Sarah Whipple Headstones

Whipple were, in all probability, reburied around the year 1750 or shortly thereafter.

The Captain John and Sarah Whipple headstones are among but a few with dates from the 1600s, and as such are among the oldest dated markers in the cemetery. Dozens of their generational cohorts were moved to the North Burial Ground in the mid-1700s, but few of their descendants had headstones made to mark their places of reburial. John's headstone is 36 inches high and 27 inches wide. Sarah's is 24 inches high and 20 inches wide. Both are three inches in thickness containing the following inscriptions:

In Memory of Capt. John Whipple who Was Born in England & Died In Providence Town Ye 16th Day of May Anno Dom 1685 about 68 Years of Age	In Memory of Mrs Sarah Whipple ye Wife of Capt John Whipple She was Born in Dorchester in New England & Died in Providence Anno Dom 1666 Age 42 Years

It has been remarked that some of the information inscribed on John and Sarah's headstones is inaccurate.[153] As previously noted, Sarah could not have been born in Dorchester, Massachusetts in 1624 as that that town was not settled until 1630. Could not other information given be similarly inaccurate? It is improbable that the lives of John and Sarah Whipple, unlike others of the time, were originally commemorated with headstones. In view of the above sources, their inscriptions were likely carved some 65 to 85 years after they were originally buried, and could not have been based on information transferred from inscriptions carved on grave markers at the time of death. Colonel Joseph Whipple, who in 1682 was assigned the responsibility to bury his father, or more likely his sons, Captain John Whipple and/or Deputy Governor Joseph Whipple Junior, likely supplied the well-meant, but flawed, information.[154] Whipple descendants the world over are grateful to them, yet lament that seventeenth century burial customs proscribe a more informed glimpse into the memorable lives of Captain John and Sarah Whipple.

The first two photographs below are from the Preston Collection of the Rhode Island State Archives.[155] The third is of the same area taken in 2004.

369 N. Main, 1912

Main Street Looking North from Star Street, 1912
369 is the Sixth from Star on the Right Side. Its Roof Faces Camera

Main Street Looking North from Star Street, 2004
369 Would Have Been the Sixth or Seventh Condo

Chapter 2

The Family of Captain John Whipple

The children of Captain John and Sarah Whipple lived out their adult lives within ten miles or so of the old home place on north Town Street in Providence. Five of the eight sons established homes on inherited "north woods" properties that had not as yet experienced the civilizing effects of the European ax and plow. The property of each was located to the north or northwest of Providence, a small settlement of between 200 to 300 persons, along the four principle rivers that flow past it into the Narragansset Bay.[156] In the 1670s and early 1680s, Eleazer and William had to travel eight miles or so up the meandering Moshassuck River to its headwaters to establish farms at what became known as the "Louquisset Settlement." Samuel received land at the same location, as did John Junior, although they lived and died closer to Providence.

Specifically, at the time of his death, Samuel resided in the former Roger Mowrey house located on north Town Street about one-and-one half miles north of the freshwater spring that had, only a few years before, induced The Reverend Roger Williams to stake a claim to that parcel of untouched wilderness. Samuel's farm was located on the banks of the Moshassuck River next to the newly established town graveyard. Early on, David relocated from his Moshassuck farm, six miles north of Providence, to the Blackstone River, approximately two miles to the east. Benjamin established a home next to the Woonasquatucket River, roughly three miles to the north and west of Town Street. Jonathan's property, slightly more than two miles to the northwest of his birthplace, was beside the slow-moving waters of the West River. John Junior and Joseph lived and died within the environs of Town Street in Providence. The Whipple daughters took up residences in widely scattered areas to the north and west of Town Street. The approximate locations of the residences of second generation Whipples are known, with those of Samuel, Eleazer, and Jonathan yet viewable in photographic form. During the administration of Sir Edmund Andros, 1686-89, extensive tax records were maintained. A 1688 list of 182 male taxpayers, 16 years and older, was compiled. The sons, sons-in-law, and three grandsons of Captain John Whipple are listed in this document.[157]

Six of the Whipple brothers were consistently referred to as "yeomen" farmers in written records of the time.[158] Their oldest brother, John Junior, became an attorney, noted civil servant, and successful politician in Providence. But it was Joseph who alone became a member of that select society historians have since christened the "merchant princes"[159] of colonial Rhode Island. He and John Junior had broken free from the soil to establish themselves as the more

successful of second generation Rhode Island Whipples in the New World. Due to the growing success of the neophyte maritime industry in the late 1600s, "the people ceased to discuss their local troubles over toddy bowls at the Mowry and Whipple taverns, or to plan political schemes at the John Smith gristmill, and now busied themselves at the wharves and warehouses on south Water Street, where the Tillinghasts and Crawfords (and Whipples) had set a new pace and a new way of financial venture."[160]

In all probability, the farmer brothers lived the life style of the typical Rhode Island farmer of the time. As it is in the twentieth-first century, so then, freedom of religion meant the possibility of freedom from religion. If their families were religious, they likely attended a local Baptist or Quaker house church, and as custom dictated, associated principally with those of like social and religious sensibilities. Rhode Island church attendance of the time appears likewise similar to the present: women filled most of the pews. "Church was the one place where, despite not being allowed any say in its governance, wives could earn membership, whatever their social status, and hear sermons supporting their guardianship of sexual mores, elevating charity over commerce and neighborliness over trade. It was also a place where they could meet and socialize with their neighbors.[161]

"The indifference of the early villagers to religious matters extended also to those of education."[162] Ten of the 11 Whipple children could not read and write---or at least signed their names with an "x". "The widespread dislike for learning produced a general disinterest in education...education in that day being largely centered in scholarly debates about dogma. Since neither the Quakers nor Baptists, the two predominant groups in the colony after 1676, were interested in scholarly debates...few books were published. No one thought it necessary to found a college, and few sent their sons to Harvard or Yale. The first descendant of Captain John to graduate from college, Harvard University in 1749, was William, son of Joseph Junior. The absence of a professional clergy and an established church was also largely responsible for the absence of a public school system. The emphasis upon a spirit-filled, rather than head-stored, clergy left in the colony's intellectual and cultural life a vacuum that was not filled until the Anglicans and Congregationalists established churches."[163] "A small geography... has the following under the heading of 'Literature:' No provision is made by law for the establishment of town schools. There are probably more people in Rhode Island who are unable to read and write, then in all the rest of New England."[164] It was the oldest son and grandson of Joseph, after the family became Anglicans, who helped establish Whipple Hall schoolhouse in 1768. As noted, at one time or another, with the exception of John Junior, the Whipple children signed their names with a cross.

Urban and Rural Conflict

The following vignettes of Rhode Island rural life, selected from an anthology of impressions penned by visitors (mostly European) to Rhode Island during the late 1600s and early 1700s, imparts insight into the everyday lives of the farmer brothers during this period of time.[165] Of particular interest is one traveler's peculiar explanation as to why Rhode Islanders died so young and teenage women lost their teeth.

"These husbandmen, more simple in their manners than our peasants, have also less of their roughness, and rusticity; more enlightened, they have neither cunning nor dissimulation; farther removed from luxurious arts, they are not so much attached to ancient usages, but are far more dexterous in inventing and perfecting whatever tends to the conveniency and comfort of life....

"They are descendant of Sectaries who were banished from Massachusetts...but now live in great Amity with their Neighbours, and though every man does what he thinks right in his own Eyes, it is rare that any notorious Crimes are committed by them which may be attributed In some Measure to their great Veneration for the Holy Scriptures, which they read from the least to the greatest, though they have neither Ministers nor Magistrates to recommend it to them... They have an aversion to taxes...They are very hospitable to Strangers; a Traveller passing through these Towns may call at any House with the same Liberty as if it were in an Inn, and be kindly entertained with the best they have for nothing...There is such a confidence in the public virtue that, from Boston to Providence, I have often met young women traveling alone on horseback; or in small riding chairs, through the woods, even when the day was far upon the decline....

"Scattered about among the forests, the inhabitants have little intercourse with each other, except when they go to church. Their dwelling houses are spacious, proper, airy, and built of wood, and are at least one story in height, and herein they keep all their furniture...They make use of wall-paper which serve for tapestry; they have them very handsome. In many of the houses there are carpets also, even upon their stairs. In general, the houses are pleasant and kept with extreme neatness... In all of them that I have seen, I never failed to discover traces of their active and inventive genius...I do not remember ever to have entered a single house, without seeing a huge family bible, out of which they read on evenings and Sundays to their household...the mildness of their character is as much owing to climate as to their customs and manners, for you find the same softness of disposition even in the animals of the country....

One visitor bemoaned the Rhode Island climate and wished to be elsewhere: "In general, the Air is infinitely more clear and serene than in England; and our nearness to the Sun occasions more frequent and loud claps of Thunder, and sharper Lightening, than you have. It is no unusual Thing for Houses, and Stacks of Hay, and Grain, to be burnt; and Men and Cattle are often killed by the sharp Lightening. In New England, the Transitions from Heat to Cold are short and

sudden, and the Extreme of both very sensible; We are sometimes frying, and at others freezing; and as Men often die at their Labour in the Field by Heat, so some in Winter are froze to Death with the Cold. Last winter, in February, which begins the Spring with you, I rode 30 miles upon one continued Glaze of Ice to assist a neighbor who was sick. As I can see the Atlantic Ocean, I have seen it froze as far as the human Eye could reach; and 'tis common, in a beautiful Lake of salt Water to have the Ice three feet thick every Winter...As the Sun grows low, my Longings after Europe increases....

"Before I arrived here, I had no expectations of discovering traces of French modes and fashions, in the midst of wilds and forests...The head dresses of all the women, except Quakers, are high, spreading and decked profusely...and I cannot but reflect on the oddness of their taste...with manners at the same time so simple and pure, as to resemble those of the ancient patriarchal age. Pulse, Indian corn, and milk are their most common kinds of food; they also use much tea, and this infusion constitutes the chief pleasure of their lives...and upon entering a house, the greatest mark of civility and welcome they can show you, is to invite you to drink it with them...and perhaps this may be one of the causes, that with a robust and healthy constitution, their lives here are much shorter than those of the inhabitants of other countries. The loss of their teeth is also attributed to the too frequent use of tea; the women, who are commonly very handsome, are often, at eighteen or twenty years of age, entirely deprived of this most precious ornament....

However, one visiting clergyman from Massachusetts did not have as elevated an opinion of yeomen such as the farmer brothers, particularly as it concerned Sabbath day observance: "The inhabitants of this place, in general, are very profane, and exceeding famous for contempt of the Sabbath. Gaming, gunning, horse-racing and the like, are as common that day as on any other. Persons of all professions countenance such practices." It should be emphasized that the foremost criticism of rural Rhode Islanders during the first two or three generations of Whipples and their confederates, repeated ad infinitum in these travelogues, was their lack of a school system, and consequent widespread illiteracy. A typical comment complains, "Arts and sciences are almost unknown, except to some few individuals; and there are no public seminaries of learning; nor do the Rhode Islanders in general seem to regret the want of them....

In stark contrast to the rustic lives of the farmer brothers and their immediate descendants in the frontier existence of primitive northern Providence Township, John and Joseph's families lived sumptuously in Providence and Newport. The estimated population of rural Cumberland Township was about 500 (100 families) in the year 1700, with the Louquisett and the Fruit Hill populations a little lower. On the other hand, Newport's upscale urban inhabitants numbered over 2000. When Cumberland petitioned to become separated from Smithfield Township some 50 years later, it "consisted of one hundred and twenty families or thereabouts."[166] It is to be noted that the 6

January 1746 petition of Bristol County, Massachusetts (which included Cumberland) to become part of Rhode Island was addressed to "The honorable William Green Esqr Governor of Rhode Island and to the Honorable Joseph Whipple Esqr. Lieut.Governor...."[167] The petition included the names of several of the yeomen descendants of David and Eleazer; the petitioned was their cousin Joseph Whipple Junior, the family's second merchant prince.

It would be instructive to know what a family reunion of second and third generation Whipples would have looked like in the year 1743, the year Joseph Junior was elected Deputy Governor. It is not certain that such could have been possible. Only a few wealthy Whipple lime manufacturers, textile mill owners, politicians, and a handful of military officer descendants of the farmer brothers would likely have been invited to Newport for such an occasion--it would have violated social protocol. Early New England colonial society, like that of Old England, maintained strict social distinctions--even to the extent of dictating the style of clothing that various classes of citizens (particularly women) could wear. The gap between social classes that had emerged in just one or two Whipple generations would have been striking.[168]

"Northwestern Rhode Island [where most second and third generation Whipples lived] was home to a hardy, resolute, independent yeomanry. The clearing of land of forests and rocks cost hard work and a constant industry, summer and winter. Agriculture was the sole dependence of the people, and a comfortable living and the raising of a family were the limits of the ambitions of the marriageable young men and women. The larger town life at Providence offered no special attraction to those born in the country and reared in its atmosphere of individualism and independency. The town had but few holiday attractions to country-bred people. Still more, the dress and learning of the towns-people did not comport and the manners and homespun of their country cousins. There was an air of superiority, of proud satisfaction of the townsman when he met his brother of the farm that built a barrier between the two of separateness and aloofness. Society and politics were of two species--the country reserved, quiet, conservative, and town progressive, assertive, and tending towards a low-grade aristocracy. A great gulf of variations divided the town and country of Providence Plantations. Not only so, but hostilities, family, financial, political, made members of the same family name hateful to and hated by each other."[169] Even in the mid twentieth century, those in the "outback" were still looked down upon by their Providence neighbors: "In the 1950 and early 60s, I and a couple of friends attended school in Providence. Many of our schoolmates thought of us as country bumpkins because we lived in Lime Rock."[170]

Wealthy Whipples

The merchant princes of Providence and Newport wanted not only an efficient economic order "but also well-paved roads, solid wharves, street

lighting, fire protection.... Nor did men of property care to be accosted by drunkards, beggars, and cripples asking for alms as they passed by. So they combined enlightened self-interest and Christian benevolence....Elegant new churches were built, ostensibly to honor God. Parks and shady walks made Sunday strolls or carriage rides fashionable--and of course enabled the wealthy to demonstrate their status by their equipage and dress. The rich lost their pious Puritanism and decided to live well. Their wives were expected to entertain lavishly which necessitated large, well-appointed homes, many servants, fine plates and silverware and furnishings....Black slaves also had to dress in a manner befitting their master's station, and their uniforms became increasingly costly, until some wore wigs and buckled shoes."[171] Even the most perfunctory perusal of Joseph's Last Will and Testament and inventory of movable goods shows a remarkable resonance with the above, even to the status of his seven slaves.

However, one traveling French nobleman was not all that impressed with the level of culture enjoyed by Rhode Island's nouveau riche merchants: "On the 15th, I was invited to a party to which I went. The purpose of the party was to eat a turtle, weighing three or four hundred pounds, which an American vessel had just brought from one of our islands. This meat did not seem to me to be very palatable; it is true that it was badly cooked. There were some quite handsome women; before dinner they kept themselves in a different room from the men, they also placed themselves at table all on the same side, and the men, on the other. They danced after dinner to the music of some instrument which had been brought there expressly. Neither the men or the women dance well; all stretch out and lengthen their arms in a way far from agreeable....They all love money and hard money; it is thus that they designate specie to distinguish it from paper money, which loses prodigiously. Whilst I am writing, at Providence and Newport it loses sixty for one.

"They do not eat soups and do not serve up ragouts at these dinners; but boiled roast and much vegetables. They drink nothing but cider and Madeira wine with water. They do not take coffee immediately after dinner, but it is served three or four hours afterwards with tea; this use of tea is universal in America. These Americans are almost always at the table; and as they have little to occupy them, as they go out little in winter and spend whole days along side of their fires and their wives, without reading and without doing anything, going so often to table is a relief and a preventive of ennui (depression). Yet they are not great eaters." [172]

It is significant that the name of each of Captain John Whipple's sons was associated during his lifetime and afterward with well-known local physical land features of late seventeenth century Rhode Island. The designation "Whipples from Fruit Hill" has come down through the centuries synonymous with Benjamin Whipple and his immediate descendants. Jonathan and his sons, from the earliest records forward, were identified as the "Whipples of Wanskuck." Samuel

will forever be identified with the North Burial Ground, being the first ever to be interred there, in addition to having most of his farm eventually taken over by that cemetery. John Junior, like his father before him, lived out his adult life on Town Street at the bottom of Constitution Hill. Eleazer and William became known as the "Louquisset brothers" having established farms in that well-known area. Solitary and Wolf Hills appear in association with Joseph Whipple and his sons, while Joseph Whipple Junior and family would have been known to their kinsmen as the unapproachable politically powerful inhabitants of "The Hill," the colony's capitol city of Newport. But without question, the most historically noted land purchase among second generation Whipples was the acquisition of "Study Hill" by David Whipple. Through this purchase, the Whipple name became inextricably linked with this land feature, to one of early New England's most colorful characters, and a putative founder of the colonies of Massachusetts and Rhode Island.

It would appear that, for whatever reasons, Joseph was his father's favorite. In Captain John Whipple's Last Will and Testament, Joseph, age 20, received what seems to have been the choicest parcels of land in and around the town of Providence, including the highly coveted original property on north Towne Street.[173] In contrast, Benjamin and David age 28 and 26[174] each received in separately declared terse sentences, "a right of land in the late division which is already made out to him." These properties and those of the other brothers were raw backwater forest and meadow approximately five to seven miles apart, which had been awarded originally by proprietary right to their father in the 1660s and 1670s. Each division amounted to about 100 acres although the brothers eventually increased their properties to encompass hundreds of additional acres. David essentially traded his original 65 to 70 acres for the Study Hill property that was, which was located in another colony. He was thus the only member of the second generation to leave Rhode Island.

Captain John Whipple Graveyard

While Joseph and John Junior may have been the model sons of Captain John's old age, Benjamin and David could have been considered the bad boys of the family. Benjamin was arrested, approximately one month before Captain John drafted his will, and charged with "breaking the law and misbehavior." As a teenager, David became the father of a child out of wedlock. It does not appear that their parents made any attempt to interfere with the criminal process or subsequent legal adjudication. And in the case of David, they chose not to bear the financial burden of their son's youthful indiscretion, although it was a tremendous financial hardship, which took David over a decade to repay.

Dozens of Whipple descendants are interred throughout the North Burial Ground. The photograph above shows Joseph's broken headstone on the first

row of the original Whipple burial plot in that cemetery. It is believed that John Junior is also buried in this row, although his headstone was never made or has long since disappeared. The headstones of Captain John and Sarah Whipple are the fourth and fifth to the right of Joseph, next to the box tomb. [175] The box tomb is that of Lieutenant Pardon[6] Whipple (William[5], Joseph[4], John[3], Joseph[2], John[1]). Most of the 27 burials in this area are those of Colonel Joseph Whipple's branch of the family; even the large, gray and white monument in the background, which commemorates the Temple family, is part of his line through the second marriage of Sarah Whipple Borden, his granddaughter.[176]

The farmer brothers differed from Joseph and John Junior in the above and other ways. John and Joseph were elected on numerous occasions to high political office in the colony. William, Benjamin, David, and Jonathan seem to have eschewed such involvement, although Samuel and Eleazer did represent their respective areas at the semi-annual assembly in Newport on a couple of occasions. Dying at ages 50, 54, and 55 respectively, Benjamin, David, and Jonathan were the shortest lived of the eight sons; at 85, Joseph lived the longest, with the other brothers dying in their 60s and 70s. The farmer brothers, with the exception of Eleazer, were buried in unknown graves, while Joseph was buried in a place of honor near his mother and father. As did ninety percent of colonial Rhode Island residents, they lived out their days on earth modestly as tillers of the soil. However, like his father before him, Joseph became a successful entrepreneur-- indeed, the family's first "merchant prince." As culture dictated, their sisters became housewives and mothers. Each lost her first husband through death. The five families into which they married were financially successful and politically prominent. Sarah, the oldest Whipple daughter, married John Smith Junior the town's miller, and for several years the town clerk. They had 10 children. Her next husband was Richard Arnold, a wealthy Quaker. Sarah's granddaughter, Anne Smith, married her sister Abigail's grandson, Stephen Hopkins, in 1755, a few months before he became governor of Rhode Island. Mary, the middle Whipple daughter, married Epenetus Olney, and had eight children. She and her husband owned an inn about two blocks from her parent's house. The Olney family founded a splinter Baptist church in 1652. If the Whipples were Baptists, they were likely members of that group, rather than the church founded by The Reverend Roger Williams. Abigail, the youngest, married Stephen Dexter, the son of a Rhode Island governor. Her second husband was William Hopkins. Their grandson was Stephen Hopkins, governor of Rhode Island and signer of the Declaration of Independence.

Gravestones and Religion

It is generally agreed that the Whipples moved to Providence from Dorchester, Massachusetts in order to enjoy freedom of conscience. Unquestionably, they shared in the unique religious diversity of their new community, and so were among a privileged few on earth to enjoy such freedom

at that time. Joseph became a communicant in the Anglican Church. John Junior became a member of the Society of Friends, as did Sarah and Samuel. The remaining children likely were Baptist or irreligious. Most of the settlement's citizens were members of Baptist or Quaker communions, and due to this, the absence of a central parish church, with its ubiquitous graveyard, was part of their everyday experience. With the added bias against the use of grave markers, the nativity and necrology dates of most of the colony's earliest residents likely will not be retrieved. (It is fortuitous then that the birth dates of Abigail, Joseph, and Jonathan and the death date of Sarah are the only unknowns in that regard). "Whether through poverty or want of skill, or the early diffusion of Quaker ideas, no inscriptions were set over the earlier graves. This primitive custom of sepulture outlasted three generations."[177] Due to laws that mandated separation of church and state, churches of several denominations were built throughout Rhode Island. However, each was small, and none were known to have built its own cemetery because families, following a separatist tradition, buried their dead in family plots: "These small family cemeteries are private burial grounds that belong to and are the responsibility of the descendants. Most of them were reserved out of the deed when the farm was sold with words like 'I reserve my family burial ground 4 rods by 4 rods with rights of pass and repass forever.' ...Most are abandoned, overgrown, and generally decaying."[178]

Due to the above, the graves or monuments of only four second generation Whipple children are yet viewable: Samuel and Joseph in the North Burial Ground, and Eleazer in his family burial plot at Limerock.[179] The headstones of William and family were moved from their family plot at Limerock and taken to the Moshassuck Cemetery about three miles to the southeast, where a common monument now stands in their stead. Even then, the descendants of Captain John and Sarah Whipple are fortunate that their gravestones and those of four of their sons were preserved for future generations.

Five Whipple Generations

Descendants of Captain John and
Sarah Whipple Through the Fourth Generation[180]

Second	Third	Fourth
John Jr.	1-4	37
Sarah	7-3	66
Samuel	3-2	16

Eleazer	4-6	51
Mary	4-4	40
William	2-1	26
Benjamin	3-3	23
David	4-4	46
Abigail	2-1	25
Joseph	5-7	47
Jonathan	2-5	24
	37-40	401

Of the 77 grandchildren (37 Males and 40 females), 55 produced at least 401 great grandchildren. There is scant information available on at least 15 other grandchildren. Conservatively estimating that eight of these produced an average of five children, each would increase the number of estimated descendants in the fourth generation to about 440.

Whipple Male Descendants of Captain John Whipple From
The Second Through the Fourth Generation

Third Generation	Fourth Generation
John Junior [368]	
John III [6025]	Job, John IV, Hezekiah
Samuel [370]	
Noah [635]	Noah Junior, Enoch, Daniel
Samuel [362]	Samuel, Samuel III, Daniel, Nathan, Zachariah, Zephaniah
Thomas [636]	Thomas Junior, Abraham
Eleazer [371]	
Eleazer [6107]	Eleazer III
Job [6111]	Job Junior, Simon, Stephen
James [6112]	Eleazer
Daniel [6113]	Daniel Junior, Joseph, Eleazer, Joel, Preserved, Job
William 373]	
William [380]	William III, Jeremiah, John, Anthony, Benjamin Moses, Joseph, Eleazer
Seth [381]	Died at 28 no children

Benjamin [374]

Benjamin [6125]	Andrew, Benjamin III, Daniel, Ephraim, Benedict Beneger, Stephen, Joseph, Benedict, Jesse, John
Josiah [6128]	Died as a child
John [6129]	Josiah, Ezekiel, Jabez, John Junior

David [375]

David [6136]	Jonathan, David III, Silas, Anthony
Israel [6137]	Israel Junior, Nathaniel
Jeremiah [6139]	David, Jeremiah Junior.
William [10928]	William Junior, Peter, John, Samuel, Ibrook, Israel

Joseph [377]

John [6152]	Jeremiah, Joseph
Jeremiah [6153]	Died as a child
Joseph Junior [6154]	Joseph, Christopher, Joseph, William, Joseph III, Benjamin, Abraham, William
Christopher [6161]	Died as a child
Christopher [6163]	Died as a child

Jonathan [378]

Jonathan Junior [6175]	Jonathan III
Thomas [6176]	Thomas Junior

24-5 = 19 74- 5 = 69

Eight Whipple brothers produced a total of 24 Whipple grandsons, of whom 19 produced male offspring. These 19 fathered 74 Whipple great grandsons. Of the 74 names, five were repetitions, indicating that five of those individuals died in infancy, leaving a total of 69 Whipple males in the fourth generation. It can be but roughly estimated how many of these could have participated in passing on the Whipple surname to the fifth generation. (Estimate 45-50)

There is insufficient information on six grandsons to determine whether they fathered children: John IV, son of John III [6025]; Josiah, Ezekiel, and John, sons of John Senior [6129]; Job, son of Daniel [6113]; and Israel, son of William [10928].

An additional 17 grandsons died before producing children or did not father sons: William III, Jeremiah, John, Anthony, and Joseph, sons of William Junior [380]; Eleazer, son of Daniel [6113]; Enoch, son of Noah Senior [635]; Nathan, son of Samuel Junior [362]; Simon, son of Job Senior [6112]; Eleazer III, son of Eleazer Junior [6107]; Jeremiah, son of John [6152]; Peter, son of William [10928]; as well as Christopher, William, Joseph III, Benjamin, and Abraham, sons of Joseph Junior [6154].

With deletion of these 23, the total number of fourth generation Whipples who transmitted the surname is reduced to 46, with an additional six (those of

insufficient information) who could have done so. These 46 produced 177 sons. Conservatively assuming that three of the six unaccounted for individuals above sired four sons each would suggest a number nearer to 190 total. The 46 Whipples in the fourth generation should be compared to the roughly 400 non-Whipple surnames of that generation who could have produced the fifth generation of Captain John and Sarah Whipple descendants.

Migration Patterns of the First Three Generations Of the Male Descendants of Captain John Whipple

Preliminary data available on migration patterns of the first three generations of Whipple male offspring show that most appear to have retained a Rhode Island residence, though at least six moved from one township to another. It is noteworthy that of these, only one moved further south than Providence. That is, duplicating the demographic migration pattern of their ancestors, they stayed in the northern part of that state--the majority in Cumberland Township.

Descendants of John Junior

Job [6026] and Hezekiah [9728], sons of John III [6025], lived out their lives in Rhode Island; Job in Providence and Glocester Township, and Hezekiah in Providence.

Descendants of Samuel

Of the ten grandsons of Samuel Senior [370], only Enoch [10911] and Daniel [6490] stayed in Rhode Island. Enoch died young and Daniel lived and died in the township of Glocester, later named Burrillville, the most northwesterly of the townships. Because Samuel Junior [362] and Thomas Senior [636] moved to Connecticut before 1718, their sons lived in that adjoining colony. None of their immediate descendants are known to have moved back to Rhode Island.

Descendants of Eleazer

Daniel [6113], the youngest son of Eleazer Senior [371], moved about five miles north of his father's homestead across the Blackstone River into Rehoboth township in the colony of Massachusetts. This move took place approximately 30 years before Rehoboth was annexed to Rhode Island becoming Cumberland, the most northeasterly of its townships; subsequently, his six sons were born at that location. Of these, Eleazer [10917] and Job [10927] appear to have died young. Preserved [10924] moved to Richmond, New Hampshire. His three brothers were living in Rehoboth when it was annexed to Rhode Island in 1746. Eleazer [75145], grandson of Eleazer Senior and son of James [6112] located from his

father's farm in Smithfield Township about 15 miles south to the town of Warwick, RI, where he lived as a merchant and sea captain.

Descendants of William

Two of the eight grandsons of William Senior [380], Moses [396] and Eleazer [399], moved from their childhood home in Smithfield Township across the Blackstone River into the township of Cumberland, where they and the majority of their children lived out their lives. Jeremiah [390], son of William Junior, apparently died young while the remaining five sons lived and died at Smithfield in the town of Lime Rock.

Descendants of Benjamin

Four of Benjamin Senior's [374] grandsons moved out of state: Beneger [8209] to New York; Stephen [6199] to Massachusetts; and, Jesse [8235] and Joseph [8233] to Connecticut. Jabez [9739], son of John [6129], lived most of his adult life at sea as a captain while retaining a home in Providence.

Descendants of David

Of the four sons of David [375], who moved to Rehoboth Massachusetts in 1692, David Junior [6136] moved to Connecticut and there maintained a large family, including four sons. Nathaniel [10842], son of Israel [6137] moved to Richmond, New Hampshire. His other siblings and cousins were living in Rehoboth Township when it was taken over by Rhode Island.

Descendants of Joseph

It is lamentably noteworthy that of the 10 grandsons of Joseph Senior [377], eight of whom were born in Newport, only Joseph [6164], son of his eldest son, John [6152], fathered sons. He lived and died in Smithfield Township, about three miles north of Providence.

Descendants of Jonathan

Jonathan III [10105] and Thomas Junior [10108], and their three sons, lived and died in North Providence, as did their father before them.

In summary, by the fourth generation, at least fourteen Whipple male descendants lived in Connecticut: eight grandsons of Samuel Senior, [360], [644], [646], [647], [648], [19264], [13228], and [10162]; four grandsons of David Senior, [39296], [41713], [41714], and [48385]; two grandsons of

Benjamin Senior, [8235] and [8233]. Two descendants lived in New Hampshire: one grandson of Eleazer Senior, [10924]; and one grandson of David Senior, [10842]. Two descendants lived in Massachusetts: one grandson of Benjamin Senior, [6199]; and one grandson of David, [10839]. One descendant lived in New York: a grandson of Benjamin Senior, [8209]. One descendant lived in Vermont: a grandson of Samuel Senior, [644]. Twelve descendants lived in Rehoboth, Massachusetts: seven grandsons of David Senior, [8192], [8206], [52679], [10933], [10934], [10935], [10903]; three grandsons of Eleazer Senior, [10915], [10916], [10923]; and two grandsons of William Senior [396] and [399] before it was annexed by Rhode Island. As stated, this is a partial list based on incomplete data. Later antiquarian researchers are encouraged to fill in the missing information.

Third Through Fifth Generations of the Male Descendants of Captain John Whipple

Fourth Generation	Fifth Generation
John III [6025]	
Job [6026]	Elijah 33136, John 6026
Hezekiah [9728]	Christopher 33137
John IV [9724]	Insufficient information
Noah Senior [635]	
Noah Junior [10162]	Abraham 3570, Samuel 46303
Daniel [6490]	Enoch 10267, Jonathan 10268
Enoch [10911]	Died at 25 no children
Samuel Junior [362]	
Samuel III [360]	Samuel IV 652, Timothy 358, Joseph 653
Daniel [644]	Jeremiah 14993, Ebenezer 14660
Zachariah [647]	Zephaniah Junior 13505, John 13507, Zachariah 13509
Zephaniah [648]	Solomon 10036, Zephaniah Junior 15841, Elijah 15842, Isaiah 15847
Nathan [646]	Died at 21 no children

Thomas Senior [636]

Thomas [10264]	Thomas III 25983, Abraham 25085, Nathan 25087
Abraham 13228]	Abraham15529, Samuel15531 Joseph 13230, Luther 15532, alvin15534,Daniel8344,Thomas15536,Daniel30262

Job Senior [6111]

Job Junior [16083]	Ephraim 9721
Stephen [15568]	Simon 50348, Arnold 50349, Stephen 15557
Simon [16090]	Died as a child

Eleazer Junior [6107]

Eleazer III [75146]	Died as a child

James [6112]

Eleazer [75145]	James 10309, Job 10312, Joseph 10313

Daniel Senior [6113]

Daniel III [10915]	Daniel IV 25100, Simon 13012, Amos 25102
Joseph [10916]	Gideon 33156, Amos 33158, Asa 33160
Joel [10923]	Bennett 37906, Leonard 37907, Knight 37908
Preserved [10924]	Otis 15330, Preserved Junior15331, Stephen15332, Silas 15334, Russell 15338, James 15339
Job [10927]	Insufficient information
Eleazer [10917]	Died as a child

William Junior [380]

Benjamin [395]	Jeremiah 10166
Moses [396]	William 10189, Joseph 10190
Eleazer Senior [399]	Eleazer Junior 404, Joseph 405, Jesse 409
William III [388]	Died at age 77 no sons
Jeremiah [390]	Died as a child
John [392]	Died at 83 no children
Anthony [393]	Died at 26 no children
Joseph [397]	Died at 29 no children

Benjamin Junior [6125]

Benjamin III [8224]	Gideon 30038, Ethan12725, James 26055, Elisha 30444, Cyrus 9755, Charles 9754
Daniel Senior [6556]	Ezekiel 9763, Richard 9765, Daniel Junior 9566
Ephraim Senior [8227]	Emor 9804, Benjamin 9805, Ephraim III 9806
Beneger Senior [8209]	Ezekiel 8283, Beneger Junior 8282, Reuben 8384, Barnett 8211 James 8286
Stephen[6199]	Asahel 6202, Andrew 6203, Samuel 6204, Oliver 6207, Nebadiah 6208, Benjamin 6213, Stephen 6211
Joseph [8233]	Benjamin 9857, Caleb 9858, David 53748, Ephraim 9859, John 9860, Thomas 9861
Benedict Senior [8234]	James 9902, John 9903, Benedict Junior 9905
Jesse Senior [8235]	James 9878, Jesse 9879, Benjamin 9881, Ethan 9880
John [8237]	Benjamin 9997, Samuel 9999, Nathan 10001, Stephen 10002, Joseph 10003
Andrew [8223]	Insufficient information

John [6129]

Jabez Senior [9739]	Jabez Junior 9750, Arnold 9751
Josiah [9535]	Insufficient information
John [10864]	Insufficient information
Ezekiel [9536]	Insufficient information

David Junior [6136]

Jonathan [41713]	David 41718, Jonathan 41719, Titus 42284, Titus 41722, Nicholas 41723
David III [41714]	David IV 41726
Silas Senior [39296]	Silas Junior 45411, Daniel 45412, Joshua 45414
Anthony [48385]	Anthony 48392, Jeremiah 48391

Israel Senior [6137]

Nathaniel [10842]	Israel 10846, Nathaniel Junior 10848, Ichabod 104847 Squire 10850, Rufus 10851, Dan 10853
Israel [10839]	Died at 47 no sons

Jeremiah Senior [6139]

David [8192]	Simon 8194, David 8195, George 8196, Otis 8197, Jonathan 8201, Benjamin 8174, Joseph
Jeremiah III [8206]	Oliver 50064, Jeremiah IV 10302, Bela 10068, Jabez

William Senior [10928]

William Junior[52679]	Ezra 55989
John [10933]	Christopher 10214, John Junior 10215, Daniel 22210
Samuel [10934]	William 22239
Ibrook Senior [10935]	Peter 15280, Ibrook Junior 15282
Peter [10903]	Died at 60 no children
Israel [10938]	Insufficient information

John [6152]

Joseph [6164]	William 10068, John 10069, Samuel 10070, George
Jeremiah [6153]	Died as a child

Joseph Junior [6154]

Joseph III [26807]	Died at 36 no children
Christopher [80990]	Died as child
Benjamin [88061]	Died as child
Abraham [88062]	Died as child
William [53819]	Died at 20 no children

Jonathan Junior [6175]

Jonathan III [10105]	Eleazer 16234

Thomas Senior [6176]

Thomas Junior [10108]	Nicholas 10110, Levi 28259, Christopher 10111, George 10112, Thomas III 10113

69- 24 = 45 177

Chapter 3

William Whipple Senior
The Whipples of Smithfield, Rhode Island

William Whipple, the fourth son of Captain John, was christened 16 May 1652 in Dorchester, Mass., and died 9 March 1711/12.[181] He married Mary, her birth and death dates unknown. William lived and died on his farm in the Louquisset Meadows, took the Oath of Allegiance to King Charles II in 1671, and was taxed on at least three occasions: 1684, 1687, and 1688. His Last Will and Testament included the names of three children:

i. *Mary, born about 1689; died after 14 Aug 1749; married Richard Sprague*
ii. *William, born about 1691; died 16 Nov 1776; married Elizabeth Sprague*
iii. *Seth, born about 1696; died 13 Nov 1724.*

William is the least documented of the Whipple brothers. In addition to his Last Will and Testament, the following lists a summary of these records, inclusive of the years 1671 to 1710, taken from *The Early Records of the Town of Providence*, 21 Volumes, (Providence: Snow & Farnham, 1892-1915). Individual entries are noted with the volume number and page. Original spelling and punctuation have been retained.

Last Will and Testament

Upon the 25th day of March 1712 the last will & Testament of William Whipple of this town of Providence (deceased) was Exhibbitted to the Towne Concill & was by them Examined & Proved; The Record of sd will is as followeth./

In the name of God amen, I William Whipple of the Towne of Providence in her Majestyes Coloney of Road Island & Providence Plantations in new England, being weake in body yet by the Blessing of God of sound & perfect memory; And I knowing that all men are subject to Mortallitye, and not knowing how soone it may please god to Remove me out of this life, I do make this my lat Will & Testament, hereby making voyd all former Wills by me mad either by Word or writeing & this only to stand in force as my last will & Testament.

Ffirst, I bequeath my spirit to god that gave it and my body to the Earth to be decently buried by my Executor hereafter Named,

Secondly. I Give to my loveing son william all my lands & house & improvements whatsoever; hee paying such Legacies as I shall obleidge him to; Thirdly. I give to my loveing son Seth Whipple Thirty Pounds, to be paid

to him after he shall attaine to the age of one & twenty yeares, to be payd by my Executor as he shall be able. Ffourthly, I give to my loveing Daughter Mary Sprague Ten pounds to be paid to her by my Executor as my Executor shall be able, which Ten Pounds is besides what I have already given to her, which is one Cow & Calf & Eight Sheepe & Eight lambs, besides what household stuff I have already given to her:

Ffiftly, my Will is that my son william shall maintaine his loveing Mother mary whiple my wife with all such nessecary things as shee shall have Ocation for duireing her Narurall life; And if shee se cause to dwell with Either of my other Children then my said son William shall allow to his sister or brother where my loveing wife shall make her aboad according to her Nessesity, & his ability. Sixthly, I Constitute & Appoynt my loveing son William Whipple my Executor to Execute my last will & Testament, to pay all my just Debts, & Receive all my just debts, and to see my Body decently buried; And in Confirmation of this my last Will & Testament I have hereunto set my hand & seale this Twenty & Seventh day of ffebruarey in the yeare of our Lord one Thousand Seven hundred & Eleven or Twelve And Eleventh yeare of the Reign of Our Sovereign Lady Anne, by the Grace of God Quene of Great Brittan./ Signed, Sealed, published and declared in the presence of us Job Whipple, Thomas Hopkins, & William Hopkins. William Whipple, his mark. (VII:94-95)

An inventory of his movable estate was submitted by the town subscribers on 15 March 1712, and included such items as " two beds and furniture, thirty pounds of wollen yarne, cotton & wooll cloath, one chest, ten pounds of fethers, saddles & anvel, old iron tooles, cart & wheeles, grindstone, beetle & wedges, old lumber meat & butter, Indian corn, two oxen, five cowes, hefers, yearelings, 3 maares, four swine, twenty seven sheepe, looking glass, etc." The sum total of his movable estate was just over £110, which was about average for a Rhode Island farmer at that time. (VII: 94-99).

Last Monday of May 1671

William Whipple and Benjamin Whipple took an Oath of Allegiance to King Charles the Second. (III:200)

18 January 1678

William Whipple made Proclamation of a stray horse he had taken up, color bay, branded on the foreshoulder with an X, the two hind feet with a white in the forehead, with a small white on the nose, somewhat short of stature, something small. (V:338)

9 February 1679/80

William paid to have his horse shoed. (XV:201)

13 March 1681

It was voted that William Whipple may change eleven acres of land which his father gave him at "Louassqusuck," the said eleven acres lying at the eastern or northeastern end of his other land, and being parted from his other land by a highway between them layed out by the surveyor to go up into ye country and take it up elsewhere upon the Town's Common, he having paid his change money.(VIII:113).

27 April 1682

William Whipple requested that he might change eleven acres of land that he had of his father, John Whipple, which was divided by a highway from the rest of his land. He ended his request with "your neighbor, William Whipple." The Bill was granted by the towne, as attested to by John Whipple, Junior, Clerk. (XVII:1).

9 September 1685

William's property line was recorded on a deed transferring ownership of 30 acres of land from his brothers, Eleazer Whipple to Samuel Whipple.(XX:10)

9 September 1685

William's property line was recorded on a deed transferring ownership of 20 acres of land from Eleazer Whipple to Christopher Smith [his granddaughter Hannah's mother-in-law's father]. (XIV:150)

20 February 1688/9

William witnessed a deed transferring 25 acres of land from Valentine Whittman to William Hopkins [His sister Abigail's second husband]. (XIV:200)

21 December 1691

William's property line was recorded on a deed transferring ownership of 60 acres of land from Samuel Whipple to Eleazer Whipple.(XIV:207).

20 February 1699/1700

This day William and Mary Whipple his wife hath exhibited a bill of demand of Tenn pounds and 10s new England silver which the said Mary saith shee committed into Providence Williams his hand, for to be returned to her againe when she demanded it. But said Providence Williams [Son of The Reverend Roger Williams] dyeing, her money is not yet returned, therefore that some way may be considered that they may receive the same. Order that Daniel Williams be sent for to come now to the Councill to give them an account of the estate of Providence Williams which the Councill formerly put into his custody until further Order: but the said Daniel Williams hath refused to give the Councill any account of the said Estate; saying that he judged that the Councill hath nothing to doe to take an account of the said Estate. (X:52-3).[182]

11 November 1703

William Whipple and Richard Arnold [His sister Sarah's second husband] witnessed a deed of sale made between Thomas Arnold [Richard's father] and Shadrach Manton [Sarah's sister-in-law's husband]. (V:162).

17 June 1707

William Whipple of the town of Providence gave notice to the town council that he had taken up a stray brown mare, which was earmarked, docked, and branded with a blaze in her face. (IX:180).

28 July 1707

Whereas William Whipple hath this day preferred a bill to ye Towne desireing the Town to gratifie him with fifty acres of land, or more, for service, which (he saith) he did ye Town in the Indian Warrs about Thirty yeares since; ye Towne having Considered ye bill, their Ans: to it is, that they doe not yet see cause to gratifie his Request. (XI:119).

5 May 1710

William's property is mentioned in the Last Will and Testament of Richard Arnold. [Second husband of his sister Sarah] (VII:4)

Considering that much is known about his brothers, it is surprising that so little of his life is preserved in written records. Unlike his older brothers, he does not appear in pre-1675 Indian War accounts. As seen above, the town council rejected his claim that he fought in that war. His earliest recorded activity in the colony was in 1671, when as a teenager he was forced to take an oath of fealty to the king, and in 1678, when he found a stray cow. Even then, it is not clear as to whether he was still living in Providence town, with or near his father, or had moved to the Louquisset. Not until 13 March 1681 is it clear that he had done so.

It would appear that William lived a rather uneventful, bucolic life. He was not a formally educated man, and, like most of his siblings, could not read or write ---or at least could not write his name. His preference of religion is unknown.[183] He apparently paid his taxes on time, was respected by his neighbors, and in the end, willed a modest estate to his children. His brothers continually bought and sold land, took an active part in town and colony politics, and assumed positions of public responsibility, but not William--- although history did record that William was "a good neighbor."

The record of his marriage has never been found. His wife Mary is not mentioned in town records until the year 1699, and although most unusual in the seventeenth century, it may be that he married rather late in life. It may even be

that he married more than once. It is known that his first child was not born until he was about 40 years of age.

William and Mary's youngest son, Seth, a minor at the time of his father's death in 1712, died intestate in 1724, without known issue. Providence town proprietors granted property to Seth on 24 January 1717, which was subsequently sold by William Junior. Considering that land could not be owned in Rhode Island until an individual was 21 years old, this grant would likely place Seth's date of birth close to the year 1696. As far as is known, Seth never married. William Junior married Elizabeth Sprague, and possibly was married a second time to a woman named Esther, who died 29 July 1757 and was buried in the North Burial Grounds.[184]

Mary Whipple Sprague

William and Mary's oldest child, Mary, also married into the Sprague family. She married Richard Sprague in 1710. Mary was born c1689 and died after August of 1749 when her husband's Last Will and Testament was made. Nine children were born to this couple:

i. Ruth, born about 1713; died after 1749
ii. Zerviah, born 1716.
iii. Obadiah, born 1717; died 12 Jun 1800
iv. Abigail, born about 1719; died after 1806
v. Urania, born about 1721; died after 1780
vi. Lydia, born about 1723; died after 1806
vii. Amos, born about 1725; died 1806
viii. Enoch, born about 1727; died 10 June 1810
ix. Daniel, born about 1729; died after 1748

This family descended from Edward Sprague of Upwey, Dorsetshire, England. His sons William, Ralph, and Richard had immigrated to America in 1629 on the ship Lion's Whelp, settling in the Bay area. One wonders if the Sprague brothers were acquainted with Captain John Whipple, living as they were but a short distance from his home in Dorchester. William moved to the Hingham settlement, which is approximately half way between Boston and Plymouth, in the year 1634. Of William's five sons, three lived and died in the immediate area, leaving his two youngest, Jonathan and Captain William Junior, to move on westward, Jonathan settling in the Providence, Rhode Island area in 1670, with William joining him about two decades or so later. Two of their nephews eventually joined them: Anthony Junior in 1690, and Richard around the year 1710, after which he met and married Mary Whipple. There is no record of their marriage. As noted, Anthony Sprague Junior married Mary Tilden in 1689, and had one son and six daughters, including Elizabeth, who married William Whipple Junior. There is no record of their marriage.[185] (That is, Mary was married to the uncle of William Junior's wife). William and Mary produced 26

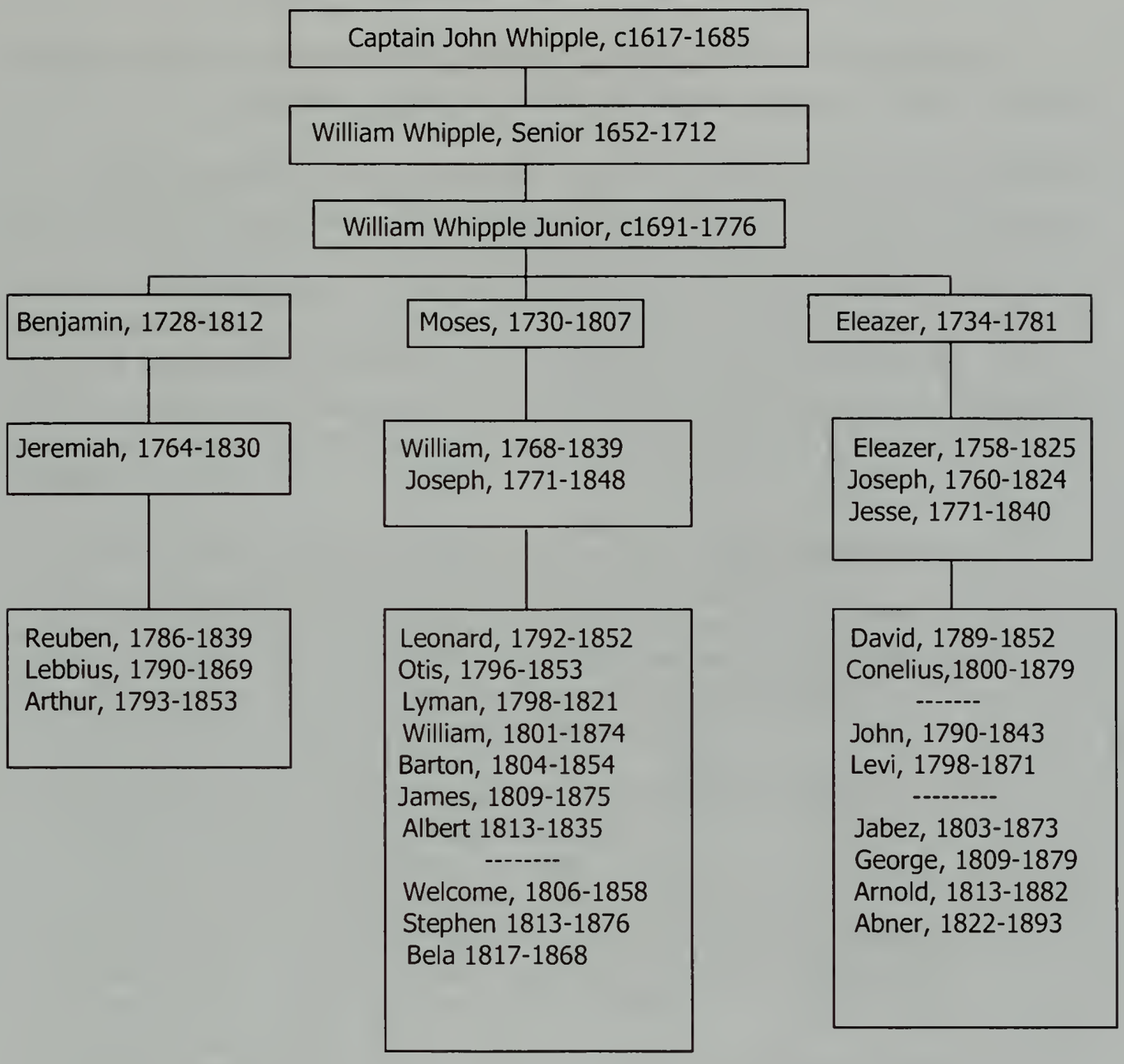
grandchildren to William Whipple Senior, most of whom lived and died in Smithfield Township.[186]

As noted, the first known Sprague to reside in Rhode Island was Jonathan, around the year 1670. He was the uncle of Mary's husband Richard, and the great uncle of William Junior's wife, Elizabeth. The Reverend Jonathan Sprague was one of the founders of the Rhode Island Baptist denomination: "It appears that Jonathan Sprague had commenced preaching, and received his ordination in said Providence church, and that he frequently visited and preached the word to this distant branch of brethren (Smithfield), which increased in numbers, until they were organized into a distinct church [the first in the Smithfield area] at the above date (1706), under the pastoral care of said elder Sprague...he was a very pious and judicious man, an able and faithful 1710, after which he met and married Mary Whipple. There is no record of their marriage. As noted, Anthony Sprague Junior married Mary Tilden in 1689, and had one son and six daughters, including Elizabeth, who married William Whipple Junior. There is no record of their marriage.[187] (That is, Mary was married to the uncle of William Junior's wife). William and Mary produced 26 grandchildren to William Whipple Senior, most of whom lived and died in Smithfield Township.[188]

As noted, the first known Sprague to reside in Rhode Island was Jonathan, around the year 1670. He was the uncle of Mary's husband Richard, and the great uncle of William Junior's wife, Elizabeth. The Reverend Jonathan Sprague was one of the founders of the Rhode Island Baptist denomination: "It appears that Jonathan Sprague had commenced preaching, and received his ordination in said Providence church, and that he frequently visited and preached the word to this distant branch of brethren (Smithfield), which increased in numbers, until they were organized into a distinct church [the first in the Smithfield area] at the above date (1706), under the pastoral care of said elder Sprague...he was very pious and judicious man, an able and faithful minister....This church erected a meeting house about one mile north of the Smithfield Academy.... Elder Sprague lived and labored with this church, until he was called to his reward in January, 1741, aged ninety-three years...."[189] Other Spragues to pastor this church were Peter, Jonathan's nephew, son of William, in 1780, and Elisha, grandson of Mary Whipple Sprague in 1795.

Captain William Sprague, Jonathan's brother, was the ancestor of two Rhode Island governors. "Those who recognize an overruling Providence in human affairs are wont to see the special Divine Hand in the election of William Sprague to the governorship...in the spring of 1860. He sprang from an old Massachusetts and Rhode Island family which had won merited honors in civil and military affairs. His ancestor, Jonathan Sprague, first mentioned in Rhode Island history in 1681, was for many years a member of the General Assembly, and speaker of the House of Deputies in 1703...[Governor] William's grandfather, William, was the first calico printer in Rhode Island and one of the first in America."[190]

Sixth Generation Male Whipple Descendants
of Captain John Whipple Through His Son William



The three Whipple grandsons of William Senior produced a total of six great grandsons, and 21 great great grandsons who are known to have lived to adulthood, and who bore the Whipple name. The oldest, Reuben, son of Jeremiah, was born in 1786. The last of the sixth generation to die was Abner, son of Jesse, who died in 1893. Because of insufficient information, only 35 Whipple males of the seventh generation have been identified, 21 of those through the four sons of Jesse. Names and dates were abstracted from www.whipple.org, and the sources it quotes.

The oldest son of William and Elizabeth was William, who is the subject of the next chapter.

Chapter 4

William Whipple Junior
The Whipples of Lime Rock, Rhode Island

Captain William[3] Whipple (William[2], John[1]) was born about 1691 in Rhode Island and died in Smithfield, Rhode Island 16 November 1776. He was made a freeman 6 May 1712.[191] In about 1713, he married Elizabeth Sprague, born 26 May 1694 and died after 1735. William may have married a second time to a woman named Ester, who died 29 July 1757, and was buried in the North Burial Ground.[192] William and Elizabeth had 17 children, all born in Smithfield--- and with the exception of Jeremiah and Amey of whom nothing is known, in addition to Anthony, Joseph, and Elizabeth I, who died young, all were married in Smithfield.

i. Mary, born 28 Feb 1714/15; died after 1752; married Stephen Olney.
ii. Elizabeth I, born 26 May 1716; died before 24 Oct 1718
iii. Jemima, born 1 Oct 1717; married Benjamin Davis.
iv. Elizabeth II, born 24 Oct 1718; died 1764; married Jeremiah Wilkinson
v. William, born 11 Oct 1719: died 16 Nov 1796; married Mary
vi. Mercy, born 15 Mar 1721; married David Arnold.
vii. Jeremiah, born 19 May 1722.
viii. Hopestill, born 28 May 1723; died 12 Oct1793; married Nicholas Brown.
ix. John, born 7 May 1724; died 20 Mar 1807.
x. Anthony, 9 Apr 1725; died 11 Jul 1751.
xi. Sarah, born 10 Oct 1726; married Solomon Aldrich.
xii. Benjamin, born 2 Jun 1728; died12 Jun 1812; married Jerusha Peck.
xiii. Moses, born 31 Jan 1729; died 3 Sep 1807; married P. Mathewson.
xiv. Joseph, born 18 Apr 1731; died 27 Dec 1760.
xv. Amey, born 31 May 1732.
xvi. Eleazer, born 20 Jan 1733; died 22 Mar 1781; married Anna Brown.
xvii. Hannah, born 2 May 1735; died 22 Nov 1825; married Chris Jenckes.

Among the Whipple daughters, Mary, (the oldest) married Stephen Olney, who was the grandson of her great aunt Mary Whipple Olney. The Whipple's fourth child (and second Elizabeth,) married David Arnold, who was the grandson of John Arnold, Elizabeth's great aunt Sarah Whipple's stepson. Elizabeth and her husband lived and died in Glocester Township, about ten miles from her place of birth. The youngest Whipple daughter, Hannah, married Christopher Jenckes, whose grandfather's brother was Joseph Jenckes, governor of Rhode Island. Hannah's mother-in-law's grandfather's sister was married to Colonel Joseph Whipple, Captain John Whipple's seventh son. Jemima and Sarah Whipple married Benjamin Davis and Solomon Aldrich respectively.

William Whipple Junior was buried in the "Whipple Burial Lot, on the Whipple farm on Lime Rock Road,"[193] as were his sons John and Benjamin. The headstones of these men, and those of Jerusha and Sarah (wives of Benjamin) and Hopestill Brown (daughter of Hopestill Whipple who married Nicholas Brown in 1744), were later moved approximately three miles southeast to the Moshassuck Cemetery in Central Falls--by Phebe Whipple, wife of Arnold of Providence. The gravestones of Emily and Millie Aldrich (granddaughters of Sarah Whipple who married Solomon Aldrich in 1751) were moved to the Mineral Spring Cemetery at the same time. George Hawkins, Mary Whipple (William's oldest daughter) Olney's grandson through her daughter Sarah Hawkins, died as a child "by falling on the ice at Lime Rock," in 1831; accordingly, if the markers were moved immediately thereafter, William Junior would have already been deceased for 55 years. The uncertain date of 1697 could indicate that those responsible for the removal, two or more generations later, were even less aware of the facts than those who had the marker inscribed sometime after 1776.

The inscription on his headstone read, "Captain William Whipple, Died 16 Nov 1776, aged 79 years."[194] William was addressed as "Captain" on at least one other occasion.[195] His eldest son, Ensign William, likewise died on a November 16 date—an unlikely historical coincidence. His brother Seth was born about 1696, and it is possible that Seth's date was attributed to William Junior. William would have had to be at least 21 years of age to have served as executor of his father's Will.[196] This fixes his birth in 1691 at the latest, not 1697. William's wife Elizabeth was born in 1694, and they were married in 1713. This would make Elizabeth 19 years old and William Junior 16 (using the 1697 date) when married--- another unlikely scenario. He was made a freeman in 1712 at the age of 21, again showing that his year of birth was around 1691.

William Whipple Gravestone

It may be assumed that the headstones of William's wife and children Elizabeth, Jeremiah, Anthony, Joseph, and possibly Amy, who all died young, disappeared before the removal. It also seems logical that William Senior, his wife Mary, and others of their children and grandchildren would have been buried in this family burial plot, but this question likely will not be answered because the plot was "plowed up" after removal of the stones. The headstones removed to Moshassuck Cemetery no longer stand, having been replaced by a communal monument.[197] Indeed, it is probable that the headstones of a number of the William Senior and William Junior families were moved at that time. It appears that the "list" supplied by L.A.Sayles was corrupted or otherwise inaccurately transferred to cemetery

records. The headstones of at least two other family members not on the Sayles' list are known to have been removed at that time,[198] and the wives of William Senior and William Junior were undoubtedly buried beside them. In the rural Rhode Island of that day, it was typical for two or more generations of the same farm family to be buried on a particular farm. For instance, the farm burial lot of William Senior's brother, Eleazer, (Whipple-Mowrey) was a half-mile down the road, and was normative for rural families. The final resting place of at least four generations of the William Whipple family was apparently uprooted by the construction of a road in the mid-1800s. It is regrettable that their remains now lie under six inches or more of asphalt, and that their headstones never again will be viewed by their descendants. From another perspective, it is fortuitous that the headstones were removed to a large multifamily cemetery. Had they remained where they were they likely would be in the same regrettable condition now as the Eleazer Whipple cemetery.

William Whipple Junior lived and died on the Louquisset estate handed down to him by his father in 1712. "This property was located in Smithfield Township (now the town of Lincoln) on the road that leads from Providence to Worcester, Massachusetts. William lived in a small house that stood a little east of the road not far from a place called Lime Rock. He had the largest family of any of the Whipples on record."[199] This house was adjacent to the Moshassuck River, approximately eight miles north of the town of Providence, and a mile west of the Blackstone River. It was passed on to William's eldest son, Ensign William. He in turn deeded it to his nephew Jesse Whipple, who subsequently sold it in the year 1817 and moved out of state.

William appears in The Early Records of the Town of Providence relative to his appointed positions of "pound keeper" and "hog constable." XIII:14, 27, 37, 53, 54, 63. On 29 October 1718, he and his first cousin, James Whipple, the son of Eleazer, allowed the town to use their properties: "The commette Chosen to appoint the place for ye building a pound in the Northern parte of our Towne ship this day made Return of a place they have pitched upon: which is by the highway side betweene James Whipples and William Whipples where they the said Whipples have promised to allow Land so long as it is Improved upon for that use." XIII:8

William Junior married Elizabeth Sprague about the year 1713. She was the daughter of Anthony and Mary (Tilden) Sprague of Cumberland Township. "They (the Spragues) lived in the west central part of Cumberland on the Blackstone River. Smithfield was just on the other side of the river. Apparently when Elizabeth married William Whipple Junior she moved to Smithfield, but obviously kept close ties with her parent's family. Two other daughters of Anthony and Mary married Whipples. Mary Sprague was married at Providence (probably Smithfield) to Eleazer, eldest son of Eleazer (Captain John's third son). Phebe Sprague married Peter Whipple, son of William, who was the son of David (Captain John's sixth son). Peter and Phebe lived in Cumberland."[200]

William Whipple Junior and three of his oldest sons are listed in Smithfield records of 1748. The town had earlier passed a "Highway Act." This act provided for "surveyors who made it their duty to inspect the roads within the limits of their respective districts, and enough were appointed to care for the highways...specific provision was made, and every male inhabitant of the town, twenty-one years or older and able bodied, was required to work on the highways six days per year."[201] At that time, the Smithfield population was 450. The township was divided into 16 highway districts to be worked by the persons listed, the first person on the list being the surveyor. William and his sons Anthony, William, and John were assigned to District 4, with William Junior serving as surveyor. District 4, "began at Locusquesset Brook to the Providence line, beginning at the old highway by the lime kiln, to end where said highway intersects with the highway that goes by Dr. Jenckes'---also, the Cross Road from Abraham Scott to Pawtucket River."[202] Captain Job Whipple, William Junior's first cousin, son of Eleazer Whipple, as well as Job's son, Stephen, and nephew Ephraim (son of Job Junior) were listed in District 5. His brother-in-law Richard Sprague and sons were also listed.

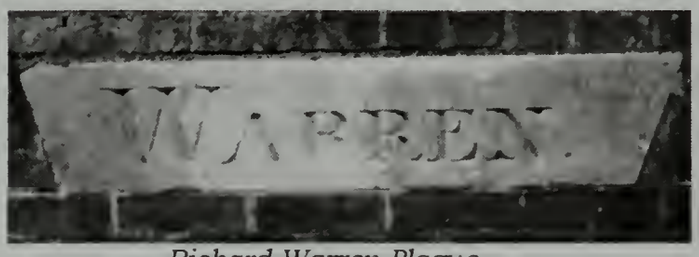
It is thus seen that by the year 1748, 63 years after the death of Captain John Whipple, only seven adult [16 years or older] Whipple men resided in the Louquisset meadows, each a descendant of either William or Eleazer, Captain John's third and fourth sons. By the time of the Smithfield census of 1774, the Whipple population had decreased to five male heads-of-household: Benjamin, John, William, Joseph, and Stephen. The first three were sons of William Junior, and he now in his mid to late 80s, was apparently living with one of them. Stephen, William Junior's second cousin, was the youngest son of Captain Job. This decline in Whipple residents is reflected in a paucity of elected town officials from the family. In 1731, the town of Smithfield was set off from Providence, and in March of that year its first town officers were elected. Whipple town officers from its incorporation in 1731 until its division in 1871 were Job in 1735 and 1736; Stephen (Job's son) 1755, 1761, 1772, 1780, 1782, 1785; and Jeremiah (son of Benjamin, grandson of William Junior), 1822, 1824, and 1827.[203]

The Joseph Whipple in the 1774 census was the grandson of Colonel Joseph Whipple, the seventh son of Captain John. Joseph (1734-1816) had moved to south Smithfield (not the Louquisset Meadows) about the year 1755, and had four sons, William, John, Samuel, and George. (Joseph and his sons are buried in the same burial plot as Captain John and Sarah Whipple). The only other known descendant of a non-Louquisset Whipple brother in Smithfield Township before the mid-1800s was Ephraim, the great-great grandson of Benjamin Whipple, the fifth son of Captain John. Ephraim (1800-1875), who moved to Greenville, in southwest Smithfield Township in about 1825, had three sons: Andrew, William, and John.[204]

A Mayflower Family

Elizabeth Sprague Whipple was a documented descendant of a Mayflower family. Her great great grandfather Richard Warren, who was born in London in 1580 and died at Plymouth in 1628, was a signatory to the Mayflower Compact. Thus, Elizabeth and William's 17 children, all of whom were born on their Louquisset farm, including eight sons, claimed the Mayflower as their heritage.[205] The photograph of the Warren Plaque below was taken from behind the First Parrish Church at Plymouth, founded in 1620. The plaque is located just outside the main entrance to the cemetery immediately to the south and behind the church. Plaques honoring the other Pilgrims are seen on this wall. Warren was buried in this cemetery but, like so many others, his gravestone was never erected in order not to alert the Indians as to how many Pilgrims had died.

Mayflower Whipples descend from Richard's oldest child, Mary, who married Richard Bartlett in 1628. The Bartlett's daughter, Elizabeth, married Anthony Sprague. Anthony Sprague Junior Married Mary Tilden. Their daughter, Elizabeth, married William Whipple Junior. Richard Warren's English origins have been the subject of a great deal of speculation, and over a dozen undocumented ancestries published about him. It has long been known of his marriage to Elizabeth Walker on 14 April 1610 at Great Amwell, Hertford. In the will of Augustine Walker, dated April 1613, he mentions "my daughter Elizabeth Warren wife of Richard Warren", and "her three children Mary, Ann, and Sarah." The Warrens had seven children, five daughters and two sons. Little is known of his life at Plymouth. His wife and daughters came to America in 1623, and they had sons Nathaniel and Joseph at Plymouth. He received land in 1623, and shared in the division of cattle in 1627. The only record of his 1628 death is Morton's 1669 account in New England's' Memorial, in which the author wrote: "This year died Mr. Richard Warren, who was an useful instrument and during his life bare a deep share in the difficulties and troubles of the first settlement of the Plantation of Plymouth." Warren's descendants include such notables as presidents Ulysses Grant and Franklin Roosevelt.[206]



Richard Warren Plaque

It is unusual that only three of Elizabeth and William Junior's sons produced children. Jeremiah apparently died as a child. Anthony died at the age of 27, and Joseph at 29. Both died intestate, with their father serving as administrator; neither fathered children.[207] John died, apparently childless, at the age of 83,[208] and in the 1774 Smithfield census, he was listed as head of household with two adult women living with him. William Junior's oldest son, Ensign William III, who died at the age of 77, was father to one daughter. Benjamin lived out his life in the Louquisset meadows, dying at the age of 84. His son, Captain Jeremiah Whipple (1764 – 6 August 1830), had three sons:

Reubin (1786 – 1839), Libbeus (1790 – 1869), and Arthur (1793 – 1853). Of these, Reubin died childless, Libbeus had two daughters, and Arthur was father to one son, Jeremiah[7] Whipple (Arthur[6], Jeremiah[5], Benjamin[4], William[3], William[2], John[1]), who it is thought died childless in 1866.

In summary of the descendants of the Louquisset brothers, the sons of William Junior who lived and died in Louquisset, Anthony, Joseph, John, Benjamin, and William fathered only one daughter and one son among them. As previously noted, none of Samuel's (second son of Captain John) descendants stayed in Smithfield. Thus, with the possible exception of Scott, the great great grandson of Eleazer, after two centuries the surname inherited from the original Louquisset brothers was no longer heard in the meadows of the Louquisset. As noted herein, in time, Whipples from other than the three original families eventually moved into both the southern and northern sections of Smithfield-Lincoln. These later descendants of Captain John's other sons, and a few descendants of those families described below have lived for centuries even in the environs of Lime Rock.

This eventual state of affairs was quite unlike earlier days in the Louquisset settlement. "Below is a tax record levied by the town of Providence, 16 June 1713. The source is E. Richardson, *The History of Woonsocket,* 1641-1876, 51-53. Whipples in the list of taxpayers on that date were: Daniel, 116; Eleazer, 15; Eleazer Junior, 16, James, 18, Job, 17; Seth, 119; Thomas, 5; William with mother, 38. The number behind the name was the dwelling place along the roads. Eleazer and four of his sons, Eleazer Junior, James and Job, who lived in dwellings 15 through 18, and Daniel who lived in dwelling 116 comprised the Eleazer Whipple family" [209] As noted previously, Thomas, in dwelling 5, was the only known son of Samuel to take up residence on his inherited land in the Louquisset meadows. He moved to the state of Connecticut approximately four years after the date of this tax. Descendants of William Senior, who had died the year before, were his widow and William Junior in dwelling 38, and his youngest son, Seth, in dwelling 119. This is the only known record that lists members of the three families in the same Louquisset document.

A 150 Year Old Controversy

On 24 June 1734, William Whipple Junior, brother of Seth Whipple, sold to Philip Smith of Providence, a plot of land in Providence on the east side of the Mill River.[210] William's wife Elizabeth Sprague signed the deed with an "X". The town proprietors had formerly granted this property to Seth, 24 January 1717. A controversy as to the identities of two William Whipple cousins has been ongoing for several years. However, this 1734 deed, and William Junior's recently discovered nativity and necrology dates, provides compelling evidence that he was the son of William, not David, Captain John's sixth son. He was designated on the 1734 document as "Junior," and signed his name "William Whipple Junior," which would not have been the case were he David's son. The fact that

Elizabeth's name and mark appeared on the deed, and that he clearly was stated to be the brother of Seth, is unequivocal evidence as to his identity.[211]

Only one other William Whipple was born in the 1680s or 1690s in the New England Colonies. He was Captain William Whipple, born in Ipswich, Mass. 28 February 1696, and died in Kittery, Maine, 17 August 1751. His eldest son was General William Whipple, a signatory to the Declaration of Independence from New Hampshire. No proven relationship exists between the early Ipswich, Maine, and New Hampshire Whipples and the Rhode Island Whipples.[212] The only other known Rhode Island William Whipple to be born before 1710 was William (1704) the illegitimate son of William, and grandson of David.

Uncle William's Gift

Smithfield records document the deaths of three of Captain William Whipple Junior's sons in the eighteenth century: Anthony, Joseph, and William. As stated, William Junior's oldest son, Ensign William III, was the father of only one child, a daughter. Consequently, on 4 June 1791, he deeded the ancient William Whipple homestead of 1660 to his nephew Jesse Whipple, the youngest son of his deceased brother Eleazer.

> *Know all men by these presents that I William Whipple of Smithfield...for and in consideration of the love and good will which I have and do bear toward my dutiful and well beloved nephew Jesse Whipple of Cumberland but now residing in Smithfield, son of Eleazer Whipple of Cumberland...do freely, clearly, and absolutely give and grant unto the said Jesse Whipple...four separate tracts of land. The first tract containeth by estimation forty acres be the same more or less, and is the homestead farm whereon I now live. With two dwelling houses, one barn, one coopers shop, one corn crib, and outhouses....The second tract of land is a woodlot being by estimation fourteen acres that did belong to my honored father William Whipple deceased...The third tract being a two-thirds part of a boggy meadow...I do likewise give unto the said Jesse Whipple one –half of the lime kiln. In witness whereof I the said William Whipple have hereunto set my hand and seal this fourth day of June, Anno Domini, one thousand seven hundred and ninety one.* [213]

This land description is almost identical to the 1756 property deeded from William Junior to William III.[214] Apparently, William III did not add appreciably to his estate in thirty-five years. In return, Jesse signed an affidavit affirming that "both my honored uncle and aunt William and Mary Whipple may live on the land for the rest of their natural lives."[215] Also, on this same date, Jesse, with his brother Eleazer Whipple Junior as surety, borrowed £400 from his uncle William.[216] On 1 March 1795, Jesse was deeded by his uncle "one-half of a certain hill or quarry of lime rock" in Smithfield.[217]

The Lime Manufacturing Trade

William Whipple Junior became extensively involved in the lime mining trade in the early eighteenth century, when "he gave a lease of a portion of his farm in Providence (afterward Smithfield) for mining purposes to John and James Alford (merchants) of Boston, on 10 October 1715."[218] William Senior apparently took little interest in the large limestone deposits on this farm; most likely he sold limestone to his sister Abigail's in-laws, the Steven Dexters, as well as to the Harris family, in-laws of his brother Samuel.

"Throughout the seventeenth century and the first half of the eighteenth century, the lime-mining industry was carried on in a part-time and intermittent fashion, an important though small-scale exploitation of the resource. In the hundred years following 1750, however, lime quarrying and processing became a major industry and led to the development of a substantial village."[219] William Senior's next-door neighbor, Steven Dexter, who married William's youngest sister, Abigail, began "burning lime" at what became known as "Dexter's Ledge" in the late 1660s. The Dexter family and the David Harris (nephew of Mary Harris Whipple, wife of Samuel Whipple Senior) family owned the largest lime manufacturing facilities in the area until the mid-1800s, at which time the advent of Portland cement largely put an end to the demand for the product. Thomas Harris, one of the first settlers at Providence and father of Mary Harris Whipple, originally opened the Harris quarry in the early 1700s.

"The village of Lime Rock centered around and was named for its lime-mining industry, one of the oldest quarrying operations in North America. The availability of such natural limestone had a significant impact on the early building traditions of Rhode Island. If not quarried, lime could be obtained only by the burning of shells gathered on the beaches after a storm had washed them ashore. The ability to make burned lime mortars allowed for the development of strong masonry, most evident in the 'stone enders,' a form which dominated northern Rhode Island building for centuries. As recently as the 1960s, the Eleazer Whipple House, a fine 'stone ender' in Lime Rock, was demolished and its material scattered to several sites. [The sons of Eleazer Whipple, William Senior's brother, were likewise successful lime producers]. Only a very few of these dwellings still remain, less than a dozen in the entire state. They are an architectural legacy shared by every Rhode Islander. Each demolition and fire has made the remaining stock of seventeenth-century houses more precious and rare."[220]

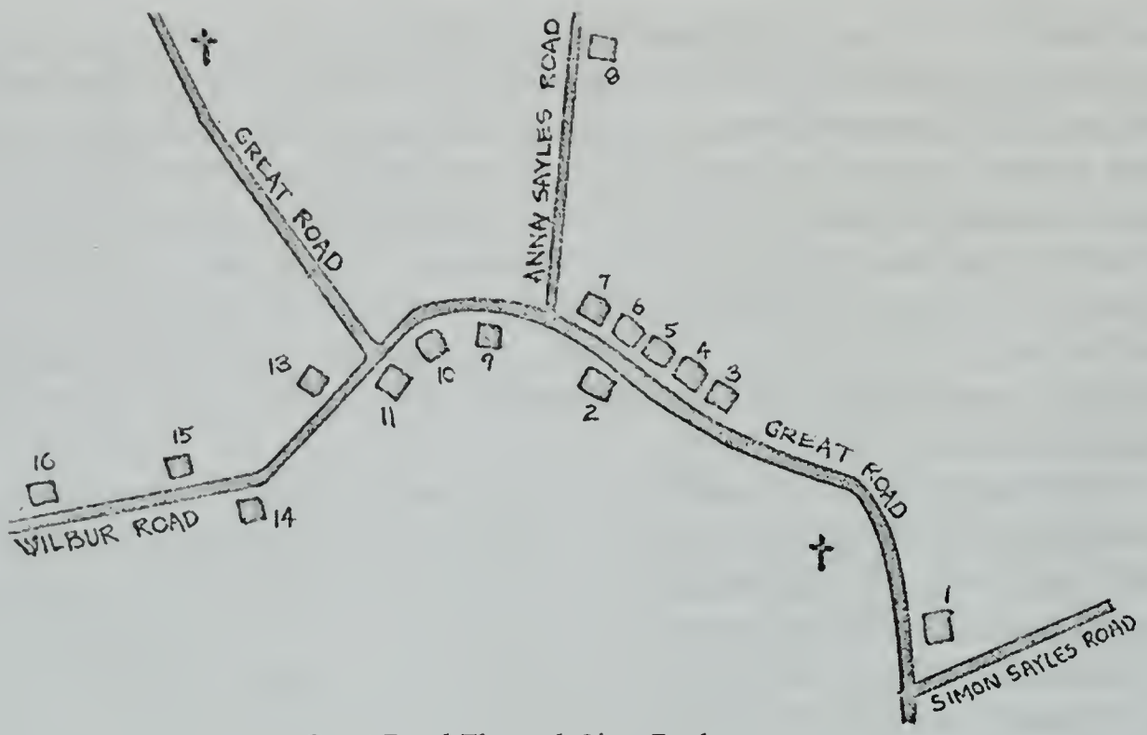
As previously shown, William Junior deeded away most of his mining interests to his sons in the 1750s. Anthony and Joseph Whipple died in 1751 and 1760 respectively. Anthony's estate of over £500 showed large sums of money owned to him by Richard Harris and the Mowrey family. The inventory of Joseph's estate, valued at £3979 (an enormous amount of money at the time), revealed that he was owed over £2000 pounds by such fellow mine owners as John Dexter, Joseph and Christopher Jenckes, Richard Harris, and three of his

own brothers.[221] As late as the mid-1790s, William Junior's son Ensign "William and his nephew Jesse Whipple, who lived on Great Road in the eastern part of the village, (still) owned lime rock, part interest in a kiln, and a coopers shop; but their product was undoubtedly sold to David Harris (son of Richard) who delivered the Whipple lime along with his own to market. This arrangement permitted the farmers of Lime Rock to supplement their income and David Harris to develop a monopoly over the lime business in the years prior to the Revolution. When Harris died in 1797 (one year after Ensign William Whipple III) Smithfield lime was being sold from Boston to Nantucket to the southern states and the West Indies."[222]

"Each stage of lime production was labor-intensive from quarrying stone and making barrels to producing charcoal needed for processing, loading and firing the kilns, regulating them, packing the finished product into barrels, and carting the casks into Providence where the lime was sold. Though Lime Rock's glory days ended...The slow but steady market for its product since then has served to keep it a stable community. Its work force and population are still virtually the same size....The monopoly which the Dexters, Harrises, Whipples, Jenckeses, and Mowreys held for so long over industry and ownership, the community leadership kept Lime rock a close-knit community; the interconnections among these families were labyrinthine and contributed to the social and physical stability of the village. Many of Lime Rock's handsome houses dating from the eighteenth and early nineteenth centuries still stand, and, in our age of mobility and change, a surprising number are owned by families who trace their origins to the early settlers of the village. The unique character of Lime Rock, and, in particular the antiquity of its lime-producing industry have been recognized by the village's inclusion in the National Register of Historic Places.[223]

The Ancient William Whipple House

Among the 29 individual Lime Rock properties listed on the Register is the ancient Whipple home. Part of this property dates back to the time of William Senior and the 1660s. Its National Register description reads: "The Whipple House. The Whipple House is a good example of the Greek revival style---one and one half stories, 5-bays, with a center door, it has paneled pilasters, wide cornices, and a heave Doric portico. Together with his uncle, William Whipple, Jesse Whipple owned interests in limestone deposits, part interest in a kiln, and a coopers shop. [NR-LRHD]." [224]



Great Road Through Lime Rock

The William/Jesse Whipple House [address 1073 Great Road] is located on the northeast corner of the intersection of Great Road and Simon Sayles Road (Structure 1). Next door to this (not shown) was the house (demolished in 1964) of Eleazer Whipple. Today, the Lincoln Central Elementary School stands in its place. Across the Great Road west is the Whipple-Mowrey cemetery, called in the Register "Lime Rock Cemetery," noting "that it is one of the oldest in the state and further the variety and good condition of the headstones." [Unfortunately, the present authors found this cemetery to be in a badly deteriorated condition in 2004]. To the immediate north of the cemetery are the remains of the Nathaniel Mowrey Tavern (Structure 2). The Whipple and Mowrey families intermarried on numerous occasions across the generations. Structures 8 and 10 were Mowrey homes. Other families that claim the Whipples in their genealogies lived in structures 12, 13, 15, and 16; the old Whitman, Aldrich, Harris, and Smith homes. Structure 7 is the Masonic Lodge, whose membership included several Whipple men. The town's only worship center, the First Baptist Church, is Structure 14. [This church is now located next door to the William/Jesse Whipple house].[225] Just off the map, about one fourth of a mile east on Simon Sayles Road at the intersection of the Old River Road, stands the mansion house of Job Whipple, the son of Eleazer. As previously noted, this house is also on the National Register.

"The Limerock Historic District comprises twenty architecturally or historically significant buildings, three lime quarries, and the ruins of three lime kilns. These structures reflect the history of Limerock during its prominence and form the center of this old village. The district begins on the east at the intersection of Simon Sayles Road with Great Road to include the Greek Revival

house built by the Whipple family and distinguished by a fine Doric portico, wide corner pilasters, and heavy cornice. The district proceeds for about one mile north and east. Within one square mile there are in the village good examples of New England vernacular architecture from the late seventeenth through the nineteenth century." [226]

Jesse/William Whipple House

Jesse Whipple sold the estate deeded to him by his uncle and moved approximately 800 miles southwest to the county of Franklin, Indiana, about 30 miles northwest of Cincinnati, Ohio. The land and buildings that he sold[227] had been in the Whipple name since at least the year 1660--over 150 years. More about Jesse Whipple in a subsequent chapter.

Two sons of William Whipple Junior left the Louquisset Meadows and settled in Cumberland Township: Moses and Eleazer. Moses[4] Whipple (William[3], William[2], John[1]), the sixth son of William Junior, was born 21 January 1729 and died 3 September 1807. It is estimated that he left Louquisset no later than 1767, at the age of 38. He lived the last 40 years of life on his new property, located just east of the Blackstone River on the road [Mendon Road] that leads to Cumberland Hill, about two miles from his father's farm. He and wife Patience Matteson had four children. They produced 27 known children, of whom at least 10 continued the Whipple name. Moses was buried in the Ballou Cemetery on Mendon Road in Cumberland, as were two of his children and at least 12 grandchildren. His oldest son, William, inherited the family property, which he kept until his death in 1839. He had 11 children, including six sons. He, in turn, passed the farm on to his son William III. "He resides in Cumberland, on the farm formerly owned by his grandfather, near the Blackstone River."[228]

Eleazer Whipple

The youngest son of William and Elizabeth Whipple was Eleazer, who is the subject of the next chapter.

Chapter 5

Eleazer Whipple
The Whipples of Cumberland, Rhode Island

Eleazer[4] Whipple (William[3], William[2], John[1]) eighth and youngest son of William Junior and Elizabeth Sprague[229], was born 30 January 1733/34 in Smithfield, and died at the comparatively young age of 47 on 22 March 1781 in Cumberland, Rhode Island.[230] He was married to Anna Brown about 1757, who was born 21 August 1736 and died at Cumberland between the years 1800 and 1810.[231] Anna was a great great granddaughter of The Reverend Roger Williams.[232] To this couple, nine children were born:

i. *Eleazer, born 8 November 1758; died, 29 July 1825; married B. Bates*
ii. *Joseph, born 6 December 1760; died 1824; married Mary Follett*
iii. *Susannah, born 11 July 1762; died after July 1803; married J. Jenckes*
iv. *Anne, born 12 February 1766*
v. *Betsey, born 9 January 1768; died after 1811; married Chris Dexter*
vi. *Jesse, born 7 February 1771; died 3 July 1840; married Anna Streeter*
vii. *Amey, born 19 September 1773*
viii. *Freelove, born 5 December 1777*
ix. *Silence, born 23 October 1781; died 23 January 1864; married J. Arnold*

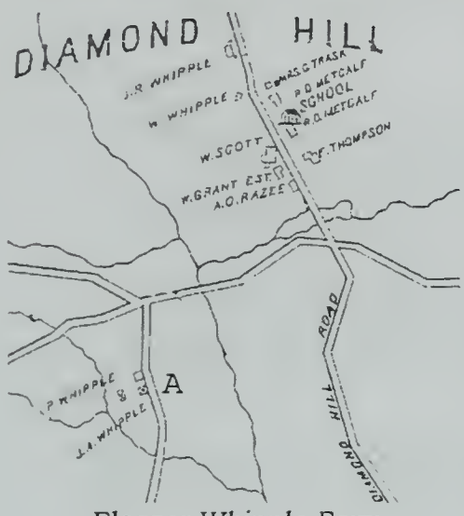
Eleazer, with his brothers, was deeded part of his father's estate-- in his case, about 20 acres, including a young orchard, and a one-eighth part of the family's lime kiln.[233] He married at the age of 23 and lived on his land for the next dozen years. Then, following the lead of his older brother Moses, he left for a less developed and less congested area about five miles north and east of his boyhood home. In 1769, Eleazer bought part of the property of Joseph Razee: a tract of 104 acres in north central Cumberland Township about one mile south of the village[234] of Diamond Hill, and one block south of the intersection of the streets now Little Pond Country Road and the Nate Whipple Highway.

"Diamond Hill is one of Cumberland's oldest nineteenth-century villages. The area was first settled in the early eighteenth century by the Whipple family. It remained essentially a farming area until the early nineteenth century....In 1851, the area contained a hotel, post office, school, store, houses, and a nearby sawmill....The old village, contained primarily between Reservoir Road and Nate Whipple Highway, includes several fine old houses, but modern and unsympathetic intrusions have adversely affected the integrity of the old village."[235]

"The Whipple family figured so prominently in the settlement of this area that it is surprising that it wasn't known as Whippleville."[236] As noted in a previous chapter, Eleazer's distant cousin, Daniel Whipple, the youngest son of

Eleazer (who was the third son of Captain John Whipple), founded the Diamond Hill area in about 1715. The location of homes of several Daniel Whipple descendants can be seen below. However, on this map the letter "A" represents the house lived in by P(ardon) Whipple and J[oseph] A. Whipple, and is the house begun by Eleazer before the Revolutionary War and finished about the year 1782. According to Eleazer's Last Will and Testament, the house was under construction during his illness and death.

"On the west side of Little Pond County Road near its junction with Sneach Pond Road [which is now Nate Whipple Highway] stands the house, one section of which was built prior to the Revolutionary War by Eleazer Whipple. It might be of interest to note that the framing timbers for the principal addition to this house were purchased from the estate of William Bishop....In the latter part of the nineteenth century this farm was occupied by two brothers, Pardon Whipple and J.A. Whipple. The brothers farmed separate portions of the land and lived in separate portions of the same house. They feuded frequently and at one time each section of the house was painted a different color, since the brothers couldn't agree upon a common color." [237]



Eleazer Whipple Farm

The official architectural description of the Eleazer house is: "A two-and-one-half-story Federal house with a large, brick center chimney, set facing south with its gable end to the road. A large, three-story, mansard-roofed addition is attached, slightly offset to the street façade. There are fine stone walls and open fields around the buildings. The earliest part of this house was reportedly built by Eleazer Whipple before the Revolution. At the end of the nineteen-century, it was occupied by two brothers, Pardon and J.A. Whipple, who were farmers. (1838-D. & J. Whipple #110)."[238]

Eleazer was, like most of his ancestors, a farmer, and apparently well esteemed in the community. In 1777, he was appointed to the position of Justice of the Peace.[239] He also served in Captain Enoch Weatherhead's Company of Colonel John Mathewson's Regiment in the Revolutionary War, in service to the United States in the alarm at Providence, Rhode Island, 23 July 1778. His brother Moses likewise served in that war.[240] "Many of these men answered alarms to march to Rhode Island and to the shores of Narragansett Bay from 1775 through the end of 1779, when the British finally evacuated Newport. Most of them responded to the alarm of August 1778 to march in Sullivan's Expedition in the Battle of Rhode Island."[241]

Last Will and Testament

Eleazer Whipple died 22 March 1781 and was buried in the Cumberland Cemetery, which is now referred to as the "Ira Peck Cemetery" (R.I. Historical

Cemetery, Cumberland #19). His wife and two sons are also interred there. "It contains headstones of early families including Ballous, Pecks, and Whipples, as well as a handsome granite-block fronted receiving tomb built for Joseph Whipple in 1825."[242] His three sons inherited the farm, although, as previously noted, Jesse sold his interest to his brothers when still a teenager and moved to Smithfield to live with his uncle William Whipple III. This tract of land was divided into five-acre lots, each brother owning alternate fields of five acres each.[243]

In the Name of God, Amen. I, Eleazer Whipple, of Cumberland, in the County of Providence, and the State of Rhode Island, and Providence Plantations, in New England, Yeoman. Being weak in body but perfect in mind and memory, blessed be God, therefore do this Seventeenth day of March in the year of our Lord one thousand seven hundred and eighty one, make and publish this my last Will and testament in manner and form following. I commend my soul into the hand of almighty God and my body to the grave, and as for that worthy estate wherewith it hath pleased God to bless me in this life I dispose thereof as follows:

First, I give to my dearly beloved wife, Anne Whipple, my best bed and furniture together with one third part of my other indoor moveables with one??? to be and remain to her own free use forever. I likewise give her one-third of my real estate with one-half of the house I now live in until my new house, now being built, shall be fit to live in. I give to my beloved wife the best room in said house with such use and privileges as she need in the kitchen and cellar for her own use, so long as she remain my wife and no longer.

I give to my three beloved sons, Eleazer Whipple, Joseph Whipple, and Jesse Whipple all my real estate not heretofore given away, lying and being within the Township of Cumberland to be and remain to them, their heirs, and assigns in an absolute estate of inheritance in fee simple, forever, and to be divided by quantity and quality.

I give my two sons Eleazer Whipple and Joseph Whipple my personal estate not heretofore given away to be equally divided among them, they paying my debts and funeral charges. I will further that my two oldest sons, Eleazer Whipple and Joseph Whipple the free use and improvement of that part of my real estate which I have given to my son Jesse Whipple until, he my last son Jesse Whipple, shall reach the age of twenty-one years.[244]

Eleazer Junior was Executor. Witnesses were Nathaniel Shepardson, Joseph Razee, and Joseph Turner. The Last Will and Testament was dated 17 March 1781, and proved 18 April 1781. Eleazer Whipple Senior died 22 March 1781.

Eleazer Whipple House Rear View, 2004

In the last part of his will, Eleazer gave beds, cows, sheep, household appliances, etc., to his daughters, which they would receive when they married or reached the age of twenty-one. His daughters were: Suze, Ann, Betty, Amey, and Freelove. His wife was apparently two months pregnant with their last daughter, Silence, at this time.

Eleazer Whipple's estate was copiously inventoried, ranging from "one beaver hat and one felt hat much worn" to stock and farm implements. His movable estate, exclusive of land, was valued at £246.

> WHIPPPLE. Eleazer, of Cu, yeoman. Will dated 17 Mar 1781, proved 18 Apr 1781, pgs 412-414. Mentions: wife Anne Whipple. Sons Eleazer Whipple, Joseph Whipple, & Jesse Whipple. Daughters Anne Whipple, Betsey Whipple, Ame Whipple, Freelove Whipple, & Suze Whipple, some or all under 21.[245]

Eleazer Junior, who died in 1825, and Joseph, who died in 1824, continued to farm this homestead all their lives. Their respective combative descendants, Pardon R. Whipple and Joseph A. Whipple [cousins not brothers], alluded to above, inherited their ancestor's one-half of the property. "Pardon (who died in 1905) was a Mason for ten years, but since 1858 he has been engaged in farming. He was married in 1860...and has two daughters...."[246]

Eleazer Whipple House Front View, 2004

Joseph, who died in 1910, was "the largest fruit grower in Cumberland, a farmer, and dairyman."[247] He apparently had no children. Benjamin Whipple (who died in 1908), brother of John Arnold, owned a nearby farm of 100 acres; he also had no issue.[248] With the death of these three individuals in the early 1900s, and the departure of Jesse Whipple about ninety years earlier, the male line of Eleazer Whipple Senior ended in the state of Rhode Island.

The 225-year-old Eleazer Whipple house, shown above, is the section on the left. The mansard-roofed portion was added in the mid twentieth century, and is presently used as rental property only. The street shown is Little Pond Country Road, which runs north and south. The present occupants have lived there for the past decade. The rear of the house is shown in the first photo; it is believed that most of the house's original Civil War era lumber was used in this area.[249]

Jesse Whipple

The youngest son of Eleazer and Anna Whipple was Jesse, who is the subject of the next chapter.

Chapter 6

Jesse Whipple
From Rhode Island to Indiana

Jesse[5]Whipple (Eleazer[4], William[3], William[2], John[1]) sixth child and youngest son of Eleazer, was born 7 February 1771 in Cumberland Township, Rhode Island and died 3 July 1840 in Franklin County, Indiana.[250] He was married to Percy Anna Streeter about the year 1796. She was born 21 August 1776, and died between the years 1851 and 1860.[251] She lived the final years of life with her son, George. Anna and Jesse had six children:

i. Jabez, born 18 August 1803; died 12 December 1873; married Susan Benton
ii. George, born 29 April 1809;died 5 September 1879; married M. Cottrell & S Rifne
iii. Meribeth or Meribah, born 1811; died, about 1880; married Joel Mann
iv. Arnold, born 13 November 1813; died 13 April 1882; married Rebecca Kennedy
v. Millie, born 1818; married Moses Handy
vi. Abner, born 1822; died 30 May 1893; married Sarah Gibson

Jesse, pictured below,[252] named his oldest son Jabez after his grandfather, Jabez Brown, and his oldest daughter Meribah after his grandmother, Meribah Williams. His second son, George, was named after his wife's father. Percy Anna Streeter was the daughter of George Streeter, who served as a Lieutenant in Colonel Amos Atwell's Rhode Island Troops during the Revolutionary War.[253] He married Rhoda Ballou in 1774. Rhoda[5] Ballou (Peter[4], John[3], John[2], Maturin[1]) was a descendant of Maturin Ballou who came to Providence, Rhode Island in 1645. Maturin lived on north Main Street about one mile north of Captain John Whipple, and was the next-door neighbor of John's son Samuel. The Ballous were one of the founding families of the Universalist religion in America.[254] Rhoda was the illegitimate child of Peter Ballou. Likely because he had no other children, he acknowledged the child as his own, made her his principal heir, and gave her the family name.[255]

Jesse Whipple
1771-1840

George[5] Streeter (Isaiah[4], John[3], Stephen[2], Stephen[1]) was awarded the rank of Captain of the Smithfield militia in 1784.[256] At the February 1797 session of the Rhode Island General Assembly held at Newport, he and his son-in-law, Jesse Whipple, were appointed to a committee to establish a public library of "useful books" at Lime Rock.[257] George's grandfather, Stephen Streeter Senior was the husband of Ursula Adams, the daughter of Henry Adams. Henry Adams was the great great grandfather of John

and Quincy Adams, presidents of the United States. Through the Adams line, the Whipples trace an ancestry back 15 generations to before the year 1500.[258]

Uncle William's Gift

Two years after the Eleazer Whipple family moved to the north side of the Blackstone River to the township of Cumberland, their youngest son, Jesse, was born. It should be pointed out that he was born about five years before his grandfather Captain William Whipple Junior's death. It is probable that they had the opportunity to spend time with one another, perhaps providing memories that Jesse could pass on to his children. When he was approximately 14 years of age, about four years subsequent to his father's death, Jesse went to work for his uncle, William III, as a laborer. This required that he move back to the area of the family's original homestead, about five miles distant. It is not known how often he returned to visit his mother and siblings, but it can be assumed that he often did so. Riding a good horse at a responsible pace he could have traversed the distance in 20 minutes or so.

In 1791, his uncle William, who had no sons of his own, graciously deeded his farm to his 20-year-old nephew. By then, Jesse had lived and worked with him for about six years, and apparently had proven his love for the land and loyalty to the family.

> "Know all men by these presents that I William Whipple of Smithfield...for and in consideration of the love and good will which I have and do bear toward my dutiful and well beloved nephew Jesse Whipple of Cumberland but now residing in Smithfield, son of Eleazer Whipple of Cumberland, deceased...do freely, clearly, and absolutely give and grant unto the said Jesse Whipple...four separate tracts of land. The first tract containeth by estimation forty acres be the same more or less, and is the homestead farm whereon I now live. With two dwelling houses, one barn, one coopers shop, one corn crib, and outhouses...The second tract of land is a woodlot being by estimation fourteen acres that did belong to my honored father William Whipple deceased....The third tract being a two-thirds part of a boggy meadow...I do likewise give unto the said Jesse Whipple one-half of the lime kiln. In witness whereof I the said William Whipple have hereunto set my hand and seal this fourth day of June, Anno Domini, one thousand seven hundred and ninety one."[259]

This description is almost identical to the description of the 1756 property deeded by William Whipple Junior to William III.[260] Obviously, William III had not added to his inherited estate in thirty-five years. In return for the land, Jesse signed an affidavit affirming that "both my honored uncle and aunt William and Mary Whipple may live on the land for the rest of their natural lives."[261] Also, on this same date, Jesse, with his brother Eleazer Whipple Junior as surety, borrowed £400 from his uncle William.[262] On 1 March 1795, Jesse was deeded "one-half of a certain hill or quarry of limerock" in Smithfield, by his uncle.[263]

Jesse Whipple participated in several other land transactions in Cumberland and Smithfield. His brothers, Eleazer and Joseph, bought 30 acres from him for the sum of £90 on 15 April 1793, being his inherited share in his father's Cumberland estate.[264] On 7 June 1795, Jesse sold a parcel of lime rock for £12.[265] Jesse purchased a quarry of limerock on 27 June 1795.[266] On 18 January 1804, Jesse sold the "one-half of a certain hill or lime quarry" given to him by his uncle William.[267] On 28 March 1807, Jesse sold the original homestead that had been given to him by his uncle William. "Jesse Whipple in the County of Providence, State of Rhode Island, gentleman---sells for $5100 to Simon Aldrich of Smithfield, yeoman, a certain tract of land it being my homestead farm lying in Smithfield aforesaid continuing by estimation about 70 acres..."[268] Jesse sold six acres of a boggy meadow on 24 April 1807.[269] On 28 March 1811, Jesse sold 31 acres for $1760.[270] In 1812, Jesse sold nine acres of woodland for $470.[271] Jesse bought for the sum of one dollar 160 acres of land from mother-in-law Rhoda Ballou Streeter on 21 June 1817.[272] This property he promptly sold to Jonathan Cole, then he and his family immediately left for the state of Indiana.

The Lime Manufacturing Trade

The ownership of limestone mineral rights had since the early 1700s proven profitable to William Whipple Junior and his sons William, John, Joseph, Anthony, and Benjamin.[273] The most prominent limestone entrepreneur in the 1700s was David Harris, a descendant of William's Junior's uncle, Samuel Whipple and his wife Mary Harris. William Junior bought several acres of limestone property from him, in addition to what he already owned. "Throughout the seventeenth century and the first half of the eighteenth century, the lime-mining industry...led to the development of a substantial village...The village of Lime Rock centered around and was named for its lime-mining industry, one of the oldest quarrying operations in North America....The ability to make burned lime mortars allowed for the development of strong masonry, most evident in the 'stone ender,' a form which dominated northern Rhode Island building for centuries. As recently as the 1960s, the Eleazer Whipple House, a fine 'stone ender' in Lime Rock, was demolished and its material scattered to several sites."[274] [As earlier noted, the sons of Eleazer Whipple, William Senior's brother, were also successful lime producers].

William Whipple III had come into possession of limestone mineral property by virtue of a deed from his father in 1756.[275] It seems clear that Jesse Whipple continued in the profitable lime manufacturing trade that had been established by his grandfather and continued by his uncles. His uncle Anthony, who died intestate in 1751, acquired an estate of over £500. His uncle, Joseph, who died intestate in 1760, showed a property evaluation of over £3900 (an enormous estate for the time). Both were owed hundreds of pounds by fellow mine operators. In the mid 1790s, "William [III] and his nephew Jesse Whipple,

who lived on Great Road in the eastern part of the village owned lime rock, part interest in a kiln, and a cooper's shop; but their product was undoubtedly sold to David Harris [previously discussed] who delivered the Whipple lime along with his own to market. This arrangement permitted the farmers of Lime Rock to supplement their income and David Harris to develop a monopoly over the lime business in the years prior to the Revolution. When Harris died [one year after his second cousin William III] Smithfield lime was being sold from Boston to Nantucket to the southern states and the West Indies."[276]

One can envision Jesse Whipple, his sons Jabez and George, and perhaps a few hired hands, hard at work in their copper's shop around the year 1816, as they burned limestone and built barrels to store and deliver the product. "Each stage of lime production was labor-intensive from quarrying stone and making barrels to producing charcoal needed for processing, loading and firing the kilns, regulating them, packing the finished product into barrels, and carting the casks into Providence where the lime was sold...The monopoly which the Dexters, Harrises, Whipples, Jenckeses, and Mowreys held for so long over industry and ownership, the community leadership kept Lime Rock a close-knit community; the interconnections among these families were labyrinthine and contributed to the social and physical stability of the village...The unique character of Lime Rock, and, in particular the antiquity of its lime -producing industry have been recognized by the village's inclusion in the National Register of Historic Places."[277]

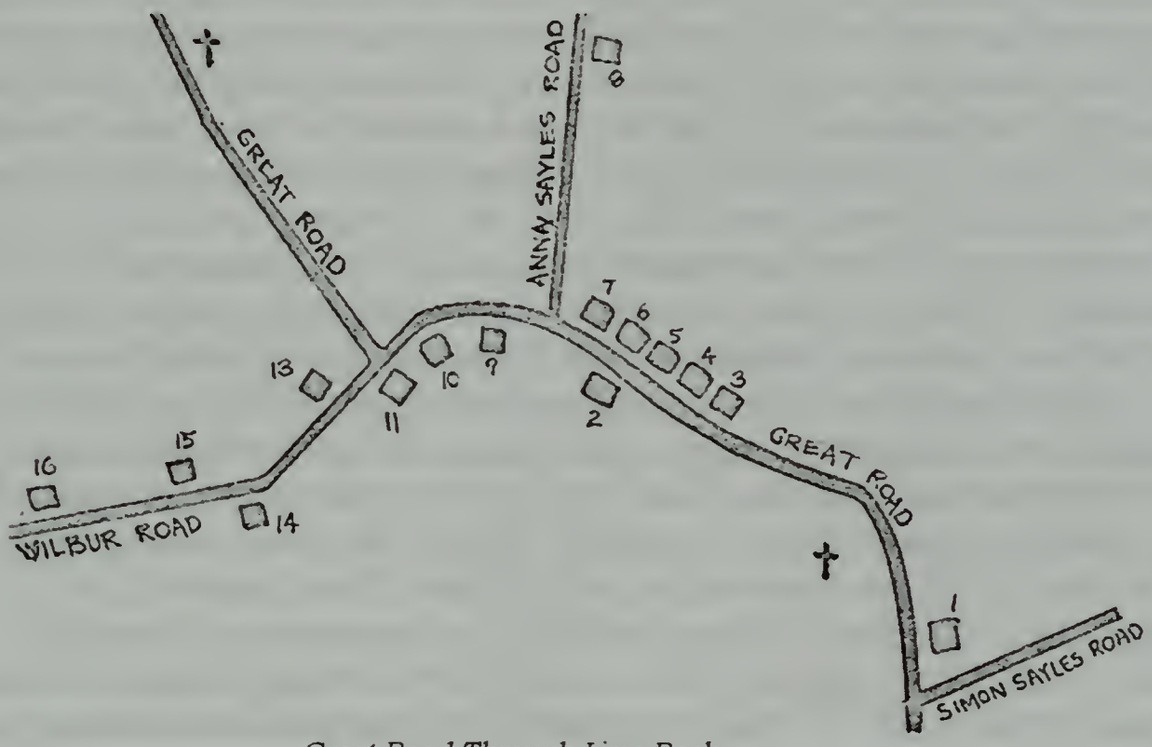
Jesse Whipple House, 2004

National Register of Historic Homes

Among the several individual Lime Rock properties listed on the National Register is the ancient William/Jesse Whipple house, as shown above. Parts of the house undoubtedly date back three/four generations, to the time of William Whipple Senior. In the photograph above, the 27 x 38 foot, two-story, 2300 square foot portion on the left is the only original part of the house. An investigation of the basement by this author in 2004 showed unmistakable signs of late seventeen-century craftsmanship, with the use of wooden nails, etc.[278] William's son, William Junior inherited all of the 1660 land and housing. In William Junior's deed to William III, he granted his dwelling house and the majority of land. As shown, the 1791 deed to Jesse was an exact restatement of this property's description. Indeed, one wonders if at least parts of the house that Jesse and family lived in for about 30 years dated back to the very beginning of Whipple ownership. Its National Register description reads: "The Jesse Whipple House. The Whipple house is a good example of the Greek revival style---one and one half stories, 5-bays, with a center door; it has paneled pilasters, wide cornices, and a heave Doric portico. Together with his uncle,

William Whipple, Jesse Whipple owned interests in limestone deposits, part interest in a kiln, and a coopers shop. (NR-LRHD)"[279]

The old William/Jesse Whipple house, on the map below, is located on the northeast corner of the intersection of Great Road and Simon Sayles Road, at 1073 Great Road (Structure 1). Next door (not shown) was the house (demolished in 1964) of Eleazer Whipple. Today, the Lincoln Central Elementary School stands in its place. Across the Great Road west is the Whipple-Mowrey Cemetery (designated by the cross), called in the Register "Lime Rock Cemetery," noting that "it is one of the oldest in the state and further the variety and good condition of the headstones." [Unfortunately, the present author found this cemetery to be in a badly deteriorated condition in 2004]. To the immediate north of the cemetery are the remains of the Nathaniel Mowrey Tavern, structure 2. (The Whipple and Mowrey families intermarried on numerous occasions across the generations.)



Great Road Through Lime Rock

Structures 8 and 10 were Mowrey homes. Other families that claim the Whipples in their genealogies lived in structures 12, 13, 15, and 16: the old Whitman, Smith, Aldrich, and Harris homes. Structure 7 is the Masonic Lodge, which during the time that Jesse lived in Lime Rock was a one-story schoolhouse that his children likely attended.[280] The village's only worship center, the Baptist Church, is structure 14.[281] [This church is now located next door to the Jesse Whipple house].

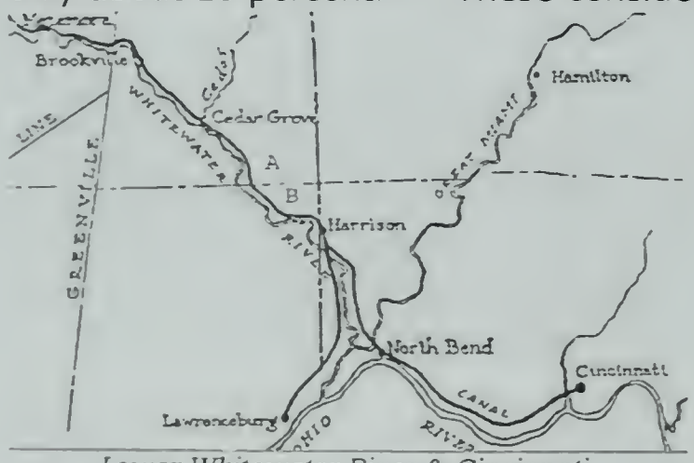
Just off the map, about one fourth of a mile east on Simon Sayles Road at the intersection of the Old River Road, stands the mansion house of Captain Job Whipple, the son of Eleazer. During Jesse's lifetime, this house was owned by

Job's youngest son, Stephen, and grandson Simon. As previously noted, it is also listed on the National Register.

The Move to Indiana

Jesse Whipple sold the 1791 estate deeded and willed to him by his uncle, and journeyed approximately 800 miles southwest to the county of Franklin, Indiana, about 30 miles northwest of Cincinnati, Ohio. The land and buildings that he sold, in March of 1807 and June of 1817[282] had been in the Whipple family since at least the year 1660-- about 150 years. Why did he abandon this priceless property that had never been held by a European before his great great grandfather Captain John Whipple, land that had been in his family name for more than a century and a half? Considerable economic pressure to leave the area is known to have occurred in the early 1800s. At least two developments may have led to what may seem, two hundred years later, to have been such a drastic action. One of Jesse's descendants states that "...the usable limestone on the property just ran low and no one was willing to sell him additional deposits. About that same time, a syndicate of local mine owners bought most all the remaining mining rights and apparently Jesse was left out. Several of his wife's relatives, mostly Quaker farmers, were moving west at the time, so the family just packed up and joined them."[283]

Additionally, by the early nineteenth century, the Rhode Island state legislature, "believing that industrialization served the public interest, allowed mill owners to take precedence over those of farmers and fishermen. Farmers could sue for compensation when mill dams flooded their land but they could not stop the dams from operating...within a short time most rivers became polluted by industrial waste...by 1815, there were a hundred cotton spinning mills in the state employing seven thousand workers...the decline in the farming and maritime trades left the common people no other source of gainful employment...twenty-one of the state's thirty-one towns found some river capable of sustaining a spinning factory...agricultural employment declined to only about 10 percent."[284] These considerations apparently were enough to force Jesse Whipple and many of his Lime Rock neighbors, as well as several relatives in Smithfield and Cumberland townships, to sell out and leave the state.



Lower Whitewater River & Cincinnati

Immediately after the Revolutionary War increasing numbers of people began to settle around the falls of the Ohio River and in other areas of southern Indiana. In 1800, the Northwest Territory was created, with Indiana as its western part. Its first governor was William Henry Harrison.

He bought some three million acres from the Indians in southern Indiana in 1809. Harrison's subsequent victories at Tippecanoe in 1811, and over the Indians and British at the Battle of the Thames in 1813 ended the Indian menace and opened additional land for settlement. This instigated a feverish scramble for inexpensive government land in which Jesse Whipple played a part. Indiana became a state 11 December 1816, and within one year or so, the six-member Whipple family had settled on to land about 30 miles northwest of Cincinnati, Ohio.[285] A record of the deed of title to this property has not as yet been located. The Whipples lived in Cincinnati for a while, then according to the obituary of Jesse's second son, George, bought land from a Squire Benton. This property, indicated by the letter "A" on the map above, would have been located near Rockdale, Whitewater Township, on Johnston's fork. Jesse and his 25-year-old son, Jabez, were taxed in 1828 while living in the Whitewater Township of Franklin County.[286] Jesse participated in the 1828 presidential election.[287] A family tradition handed down through the generations affirms that their farms were located between the towns of New Trenton and Rockdale, a distance of approximately two miles. New Trenton is located on the Whitewater River.[288] Rockdale lies one mile north of the Dearborn County, Harrison Township border, and one mile or so west of the Ohio border on Johnston's Fork Creek.[289] The letter "B" on the map represents the approximate location of Jesse's 1832 property on Peppertown Road. [See the next chapter for further details on these properties]. His children eventually lived a short distance from each other along this street. Jesse and Anna's fifth child, Millie, was born in Indiana in the year 1818. Due to the fact that the Dearborn County Court House burned down in 1826, records prior to that date are scarce or not available at all. Fortunately, the 1820 federal census of Indiana shows that Jesse and family were living in southeast Franklin County at that time.[290] This map also shows the town of Lawrenceburg, where Jabez lived from 1829 until approximately the year1845.

Jesse Whipple was awarded 40.32 acres of land in Harrison Township, Dearborn County---Township 7, Range 1W, Section 3 (NW¼--NW¼--53), given at the Cincinnati, Ohio District Office, 19 August 1832.[291] This acreage was located approximately two miles southeast of New Trenton on what is now Peppertown Road. Apparently, Jesse took possession of the land for the benefit of his second son, the 23-year-old George, as it was deeded to him 7 May 1838. Jesse's wife, Anna, deeded the same to George 14 April 1851, his brother Abner following suit on 29 August 1844.[292]

The Whitewater and Harrison Township properties ostensibly met Jesse's immediate needs for cropland, as well as for limestone mineral rights-- for, in addition to farming, he apparently continued his Rhode Island trade of lime manufacturing. "The Whitewater River bottoms are, or at least once were, as productive lands as could be found anywhere. Some of these lands have produced pretty full crops of corn for fifty successive years.... The blue limestone is very valuable, being a good building stone, good for burning into quick lime,

and for macadamizing roads. It underlies the whole region, and is the only rock found in the southeast third of the county."[293] One wonders if Jesse had learned about the newly discovered limestone in the lower Whitewater River area, particularly in southeast Franklin County, while still living in Rhode Island, and had visited Indiana sometime before the final decision to relocate was made. One thing is certain: his new property was located right in the middle of a massive outcrop of blue limestone. Surely, this was not due to mere serendipity. This is underscored in a letter from one of Jesse's descendants who was unaware of Jesse's life before coming to Indiana:

Nov. 30, 1976

Dear Charles:

Amy sent me a copy of your letter. I was pleased to hear from you and to get more information about the Whipple genealogy. My great grandfather is buried in a small cemetery near Westport, Jabez Whipple (1803-1873). He was a son of Jesse Whipple.

My brother and I have a faded, hand written history of the old family written by someone named Abner or Able Whipple. A second page was probably lost is the reason it is so short. Olive thinks Abner was a cousin. Joseph thinks it came from mother's old things when she died. It is temporarily misplaced at the moment, but here is what we recall.

Jesse Whipple farmed and worked in the lime making trade in Lawrenceburg and Cincinnati. He was one of the first settlers to dig limestone along the Whitewater River in the early 1800s. He had a small company in Franklin before they started to build the canal. Jabez, a man named Man, and someone named Job Whipple worked with him. They couldn't get enough laborers to work after the canal construction started so they had to curtail the operation. Jesse was killed in the 1840s somewhere near the Ohio border when he fell from a cliff while looking for or digging limestone. I think it said that the family came from New England to Indiana with a caravan of Quakers. Most of the family is now Baptist or Methodist. Jesse's wife Perse was widely known as a wonderful seamstress. My cousin Pauline has a quilt she made that is over a hundred years old. That's all I recall for now, but will write more if we find it.

The following nieces may be able to give you more of the history. Amy's daughter, Glenda Rose, Mrs. Colonel (Judy) Smith, Conrad Hgts, Rt. 3 Frankfort, Ind. And Mrs. Donald Whipple at Greensburg, Ind.--don't know her address.

Amy said that she enjoyed the reunion and meeting so many cousins for the first time. It would be a happy occasion to have a Whipple reunion again. Where it would be is the big, big question for me. I have suffered from severe rheumatism for years and have had to retire from the nursing

profession. We will likely move back to Greensburg in the near future to be closer to the family. I can send you my branch of the Whipple line of the younger generation's information if you want it. Please write again. Sincerely, Mary Whipple, Edwardsburg, Mich.[294]

Some information is available regarding the process entailed in quarrying limestone in the days of Jesse Whipple. "In the southern part of the state...were located deposits of some of the finest oolitic limestone in the world.... The stone was at first used in a small way in the immediate vicinity for such things as bridge foundations and tombstones... At first quarrying was done in the most primitive manner. The stone was blasted loose, but most of the work was done by manual labor and horses. The work was seasonal and irregular, and most of the laborers were farmers from the vicinity. The earliest transportation was by horse and wagon, or on barges down the river." [295] Very early records of limestone mining were irregularly kept. Its sporadic mining was not regulated or widespread until the coming of railroads in the 1850s. It is instructive to know that Jesse Whipple is said to have died while carrying on the trade that he had enjoyed during all of his adult life, and that had sustained his family for over 50 years. After his death, his sons Arnold and Jabez sought to carry on the firm in Franklin County and at Lawrenceburg, Dearborn's county seat, but with limited success. Thus ended the family's involvement in a trade that had begun with Jesse's grandfather in 1715, more than 125 years earlier.

Death and Burial

Jesse Whipple, Esq. died in an accident 3 July 1840, according to his gravestone at the age of 69 years, 4 months, and 26 days. [It was pointed out that he was referred to as "Gentleman," a high social status title that allowed him the designation Esquire]. There has been confusion as to the cemetery in which he was buried. Records show that he was buried at a cemetery on the Freeman Farm, in Rudicel Cemetery, and in the Stolts Cemetery. "Sorry, but was unable to find further information re: Jesse Whipple. A Jesse Whipple is mentioned as being buried in two different cemeteries. Freeman, which has been abandoned, and Rudicel where just pieces of stones are visible...no legible names...."[296] The following later correspondence clarifies the issue to some degree:

Dear Dr. Whipple:

We have checked out the cemetery problem and feel that we have a solution. Enclosed are two pages. One shows the Freeman farm cemetery. The other shows Rudicil Cemetery with the note, "no stones left." Then the next entry reads, "An abandoned cemetery..." Then follows some of the same names that are in the Freeman farm cemetery. There is no doubt in my mind

that these two refer to the same cemetery. The question involves what that cemetery is called.

Since there were no stones left in the Rudicel cemetery, I assume that there is no record of who is buried there. It appears to me that someone made a mistake in assuming that the "Abandoned cemetery" paragraph was a part of the Rudicel Cemetery entry. I think not. It looks to me like the Abandoned cemetery is the next entry on the page and is not a part of the Rudicel entry. Notice further that the Abandoned cemetery is on the north edge of Rockdale and the Freeman farm cemetery is near Rockdale. They just have to be the same place. Hope this helps. Lloyd Hosman, genealogist, Knightstown, Indiana.[297]

These cemeteries are now collectively referred to as the "Abandoned Sholts Cemetery." It was located on a bucolic 200-foot hill at the north edge of Rockdale, Whitewater Township, with its headstones no longer visible.[298] This hill is about one block north of the Methodist Church on Johnston's Fork Road, the village's only north-south street. At the bottom of the hill, one seeking the cemetery would take the narrow winding road on the right. The headstones were on the left of this tree-lined road, about two-thirds of the way up the hill. Although a gravestone no longer can be relied upon to mark the specific place of his burial, perhaps a meditative feeling of respect and gratitude for the life of Jesse Whipple while contemplating this small, isolated hill will suffice.

The question has been tendered of whether his wife was buried beside him or near her son, George, in the Braysville Cemetery. Accurate early written records for neither cemetery were maintained, as evidenced in the fact that the wives of Abner, Arnold, and George and George's son are not listed, although they undoubtedly were buried beside their husbands in the Braysville cemetery. Although they cannot cite a specific written record, several members of the Indiana Whipple family, with whom the present author corresponded, state that it was common knowledge among them that Jesse's wife was buried next to Jesse at the Freeman Farm cemetery in 1856. This cannot be proven, however, as the gravestones were destroyed by repeated vandalism over the years, hers apparently before twentieth century cemetery restoration genealogists could record it. Gladys Moffett took the below photograph of Jesse's gravestone.[299] "Jesse Whipple is buried in Franklin County near the Ohio State

Jesse Whipple Gravestone

line, and I have a picture of his tombstone it being the only one left standing in all the cemetery. Most of the tombstones were made of unstable 'creek rock,' as we call it. He owned a parcel of land that he obtained from his mother and it finally became the home of my grandfather, George W. Whipple..."[300]

Five of the six children of Anna and Jesse Whipple lived and died in Indiana. Their descriptions are taken from a family history in the possession of the descendents of Levi Whipple of Decatur, Indiana, and corroborated by vital statistics of that state. Additional information, mostly documented, was supplied by contributors to www.whipple.org, Weldon Whipple, Webmaster.

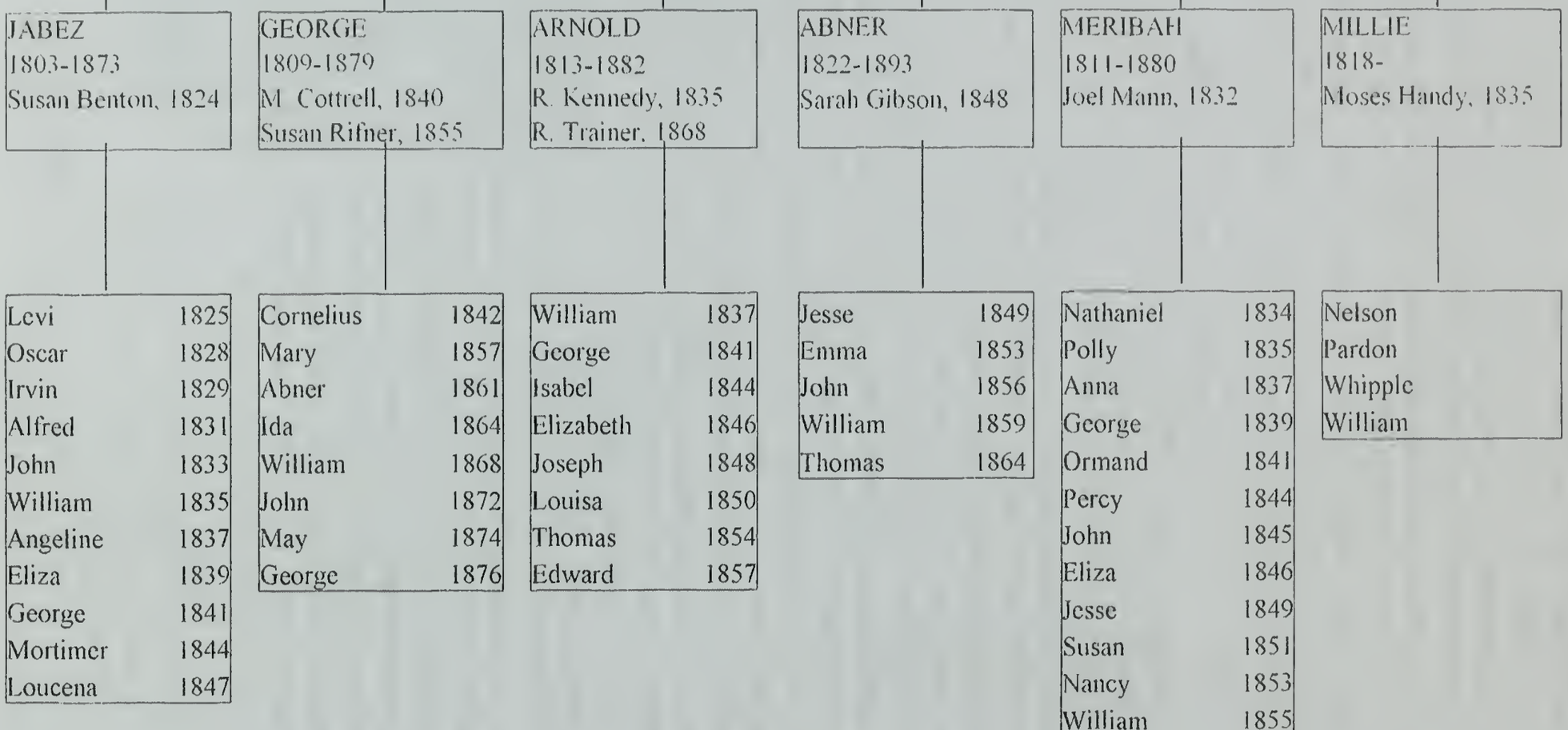
George Washington Whipple

George Washington[6]Whipple (Jesse[5], Eleazer[4], William[3], William[2], John[1]) second child, was born 29 April 1809, in Smithfield Township, Rhode Island, and died 5 September 1879 in Franklin County, Indiana. He was buried in the Braysville Cemetery, which is located on Highway 52 about three miles south of the Franklin County line in Dearborn County, Harrison Township. His obituary appeared in the *Brookville American,* and states:

> George W. Whipple was a son of Jesse Whipple. He was born in Smithfield Rhode Island, eight miles from the city of Providence, April 29th 1809. His parents moved west and arrived at Cincinnati in September 1817. They lived in Cincinnati and then moved on Squire Benton's farm, near Johnston's Fork. He lived in that vicinity until his death, which occurred Sept.5th, 1879. He married Susan Cottrell and by her had one child, Cornelia Whipple. After the death of his first wife, he married Susan Rifner, and by her had six children, five of whom survive him. His father, Jesse Whipple, was a nephew of William Whipple, one of the signers of the declaration of independence. His age was 70 years, 4 months, and 6 days.[301]

[George could not have been thus related to General William Whipple of New Hampshire, the signer, in that the General's children did not live to adulthood. Also, a connection between the General's ancestors and Captain John Whipple has never been proven].[302] At least two twentieth century descendants of George were awarded membership in The General Society of Mayflower Descendants. The present author is also a member.[303] The Braysville cemetery has been sometimes confused with the Longnecker Cemetery located just south of Metamora in Franklin, County. In pioneer days, drovers would stop at Longnecker Station near Metamora one night, and then at Longnecker Station

CHILDREN AND GRANDCHILDREN OF JESSE AND ANNA WHIPPLE



Jesse's Descendants

south at Braysville the following night. They are both situated along the Whitewater River, but some 15 miles apart.[304] The Braysville cemetery is also approximately one mile southwest of the property on Peppertown Road that George farmed from 1832 and was deeded by his father in 1836.[305] He bought an additional 20-acre property that abutted his own on 12 December 1836.[306]

George married Mary S. Cottrell 31 December 1840 in Franklin, County.[307] To this couple one child was born:

i. Cornelius, born 1842; died 18 March 1909; married Ester Trainer

Cornelius was deeded 40 acres of his parent's property on 8 January 1866; they continuing to live on the 20 acres bought in 1836 until her death in 1853 and near to George's death in 1879. Three months later, 18 March 1866, Cornelius was married to Ester A. Trainer. He had just returned from military service during the Civil War, having been a member of Company H, 108 Ohio Voluntary Infantry.[308] Cornelius and Ester had six children: Carrie, George, Rosa, Frank, Lovetta, and Richard. Some of their descendants were still living in Dearborn County and in Cincinnati, Ohio as recently as the late twentieth century under such names as Hahn, Armstrong, and Whipple. Cornelius Whipple died 18 March 1909 on the old homestead, and is buried near his parents at the Braysville Cemetery.

Subsequent to the death of his wife in 1853, George married Susan Rifner, a woman 20 years his junior. She was born 12 April 1829 in Ohio, and died 22 January 1913 at Connersville, Indiana. The first six of the couple's children were born on the family homestead on Peppertown Road. George Seneca, the youngest, was born in Franklin County.

i. Mary, born 29 July 1857; died 1947; married William Stewart
ii. Abner, born 3 December 1861; died 15 February 1936; married F. Gurr
iii. Ida, born 6 May 1864; died 13 February 1938; married Charles Crouse
iv. William, born 4 May 1867;died 7 May 1940; married Henrietta Stoops
v. John, born 1872; died 29 April 1955; married Grace Edwards
vi. May, 30 June 1874; died 7 January 1930; married John Ryan
vii. George, 3 August 1876; died 31 August 1937; married Ida Stephens

It would appear that the family moved about two miles northwest to New Trenton, Whitewater Township, Franklin County around the year 1876. George's brother, Arnold, was living at New Trenton at that time. Susan and George's oldest son, Abner, who was 19 years younger than his half-brother Cornelius, lived out his life in Whitewater Township about four miles north of Rockdale, where his grandfather Jesse was buried, and died there in 1936. His widowed mother and siblings moved 30 miles north on up the Whitewater River to settle in the town of Connersville, the seat of Fayette County. She and the other six children were buried in Connersville, one as recent as 1955. Some of George and

Susan's grandchildren lived in Indianapolis, but even then were returned to be buried at Connersville. It can be said of George Washington Whipple that he was a man of the soil, who never ventured more than five or six miles from the original 1817 Whitewater Township home of his father, Jesse.

Arnold Whipple

Arnold John[6]Whipple (Jesse[5], Eleazer[4], William[3], William[2], John[1]) Jesse and Anna's third son was born 13 November 1813 in Smithfield Township, Rhode Island and died 13 April 1882 at New Trenton, Whitewater Township, Indiana. He was buried near his brother George at the Braysville Cemetery, about three miles south of New Trenton on Highway 52. (The distinction between the Braysville Cemetery and the Longnecker Cemetery was noted above).

Arnold was a four-year-old child when he made the trip to Indiana with his parents. He lived with them until the year 1839 at which time, for $80, he bought town lot number 16, in Metamora, Franklin Township, about 15 miles northwest of the old homestead. From then until1855, he bought and sold six more lots. He then bought 200 acres more in March and October of 1856. He subsequently sold the 200 acres in February and September 1858, including 120 acres for $3240 to his nephew, Oscar F. Whipple, son of Jabez. The last recorded Metamora property sold by Arnold occurred on 4 July 1860, when he sold lots 6 and 17.[309] Through these various land transactions, Arnold realized a profit of approximately $1200.

At some time during the period when he sold off the 200-acre farm, his wife, Rebecca Kennedy, died.[310] She and Arnold had eight children:

i. William; born abt 1837
ii. George, born abt 1841
iii. Isabel, born abt 1844
iv. Elizabeth, born abt 1846
v. Joseph, born abt 1848; died 12 September 1927
vi. Louisa; born abt 1850
vii. Thomas; born abt 1854
viii. Edward; born abt 1857

It appears that Arnold moved back to the village of his childhood, New Trenton, sometime during the Civil War; there he continued his lifelong trades of blacksmith and farmer. He was married again, 3 October 1668, to the widow Rosanna Trainer, a neighbor and friend of his brother George's family in Dearborn County. Arnold, Rosanna, and her three children from a previous marriage, are listed as a family group in the 1870 Franklin County census.[311] Arnold worked most of his adult life (about 25 years) as a blacksmith and mechanic for the Metamora Grist Mill

Braysville Cemetery

Company on the Whitewater River. In summary, it appears that, like his brothers George and Abner, he lived his entire life within a short horseback ride of the old Jesse Whipple homestead in southern Whitewater Township. When he finally left Franklin County it was to be buried.

Abner Whipple

Abner L.[6]Whipple (Jesse[5], Eleazer[4], William[3], William[2], John[1]) was the youngest of the Whipple sons. He was born about the year 1822 on his parent's homestead, located between the villages of New Trenton and Rockdale in southern Whitewater Township. The 1850 Indiana census shows him, his wife Sarah, and two year old son Jesse, to be living next door to his brothers Jabez and George and his sister, Merida Mann, in northern Harrison Township, Dearborn County. The 1860 Indiana Census reveals that he had moved approximately seven miles south to reside in Miller Township next door to his father-in-law's farm. He and his wife, Sarah Gibson, whom he married 27 February 1848, were living there with four of their five children:[312]

i. Jesse, born 1849
ii. Emma, born 1853
iii. John, born 1856
iv. William, born1859
v. Thomas, born 1864

Abner took over ownership of the farm of his brother, Jabez, when Jabez left for Decatur County in1866.[313] The Abner Whipple family is mistakenly listed in the 1870 census as "Aver" Whipple.[314] Abner L. Whipple died 30 May 1893 and was buried near his brothers, George and Arnold, in the Braysville Cemetery, as discussed above.[315]

Meribah Whipple Mann

The daughters of Anna and Jesse Whipple were Meribah (Merida) and Millie. The older sister, commonly listed in the census as "Mary," was born in Smithfield Township, Rhode Island in 1811. She married Joel Mann, the son of John Mann and Pursia Stratton, 11 October 1832.[316] The 1850 and 1860 Dearborn County censuses[317] lists them and their 12 children:

i. Nathaniel, born 1834
ii. Polly, born 1835
iii. Anna, born 1837
iv. George, born 1839
v. Ormand, born 1841
vi. Perce, born 1844
vii. John, born 1845
viii. Eliza, born 1846

ix. Jesse, born 1839
x. Susan, born 1851
xi. Nancy, born 1853
xii. William, born 1855

Meribah and her younger children moved to Jasper County, Illinois after the year 1860 but before 1870. She died in Illinois around the year 1880.

Millie Whipple Handy

Millie was the first of the Whipple children to be born in Indiana, about the year 1818. She married Moses Handy in about 1840, and they had at least four children:

i. Nelson
ii. Pardon
iii. Whipple
ix. William

William married Mary Ann Fox, and Nelson's son was William.[318] Whipple Handy was listed as a customer on a general store ledger in Franklin County in 1859, along with his uncles Jabez and George Whipple and his cousins Cornelius, William, George, Alfred, and Murray.[319]

Chapter 7

Jabez Whipple
The Whipples of Indiana

Jabez[6]Whipple (Jesse[5], Eleazer[4], William[3], William[2], John[1]) was born 18 August 1803 in Smithfield Township, Rhode Island, about eight miles north of the town of Providence. The present address of the house, which is still standing [shown in the previous chapter], is 1073 Great Road. Jabez and his brother George were likely old enough to have attended the brand new elementary school built three blocks north of their home, in the creation of which their father had a hand. This building, seen below, eventually bought by the Masonic Lodge and enlarged to two floors, is still viewable at the northeast corner of the Great Road and Anna Sayles Road.[320] Their father was a member of boards to improve the educational level of the community, including a new library located across the street from the school.[321] On their way to school each day, the boys passed the venerable Eleazer Whipple cemetery of about fifty graves located across the street and to the north of their house. The 125-year-old Eleazer Whipple house, a well-known tavern by then, stood next door.

Jabez Whipple

On some occasions, they could have walked about one-half mile south to the William Whipple family cemetery, there to play among the headstones of their great great grandfather William Whipple Senior and other family members, including his son Captain William and grandson Ensign William III, from whom their father obtained free ownership of their ancestral house and 60-acre farm.[322] A well-known hotel stood just around the corner from the school and north on Anna Sayles Road. Neighborhood children were known to earn extra money by carrying the luggage of travelers, and through taking care of their horses. Jabez, photographed above in 1870,[323] and George were old enough to participate in this, and likely enjoyed it.

Lime Rock School, 2003

Periodic Sunday afternoon picnics with the extended family of uncles, aunts and first cousins, who were all around the same age as Jabez and George, could have brought a visit from Cumberland from uncles Joseph and Eleazer Whipple Junior, along with Jabez' first cousins: David, Cornelius, John, Joanna, Levi, and Sally. Jabez' aunts

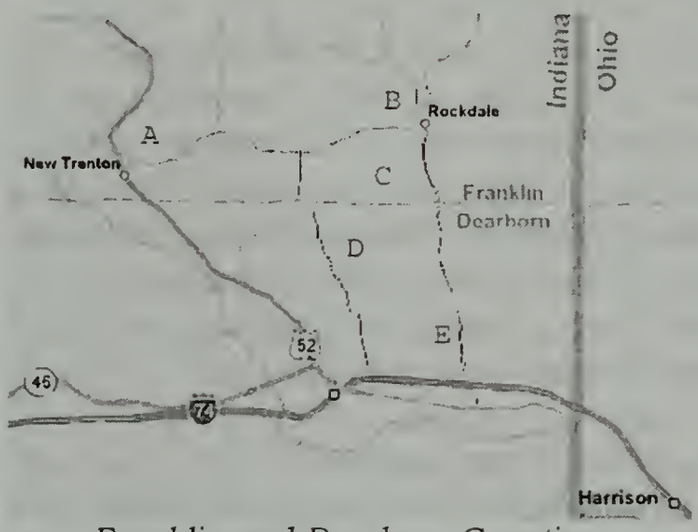
Susannah Whipple Jenckes, Betsey Whipple Dexter, and Silence Whipple Arnold and their dozen or so children, who lived close by in Lime Rock, would have added to the festivities. Captain Jeremiah Whipple, banker, town councilman, their father's first cousin and fellow member of the Smithfield "Grenadiers"[324] and his sons, Reuben, Libbeus, and Arthur most likely were there. Colonel Simon Whipple, their grandfather Whipple's second cousin, a banker, prominent politician and man about town, could have kept the adults at the picnic up to date on what was going on in Providence and Newport. He and his family lived in the 100-year-old Job Whipple mansion, which was located about two blocks east and one block north of them---and is still standing in 2005. Captain George Streeter, their maternal grandfather, and long time leader of the township's militia, could have regaled the grandchildren and cousins with stories about the earliest days in northern Rhode Island when their ancestor William Whipple Senior and his brother, Eleazer, were wounded in the famous 1 August 1675 battle with a band of marauding Indians about 200 yards west of the Eleazer Whipple cemetery. The Reverend Hosea Ballou, their maternal grandmother Rhoda Streeter Ballou's cousin, and a founder of the Universalist-Unitarian religion, may have been there to say grace over the afternoon meal. Even their wealthiest relatives, the Dexters and Harrises, who lived a mile west of the schoolhouse on Wilbur Road and across the street from the lime pits,[325] could have ridden over in their fancy buggies to share part of the afternoon. They were owners of the largest limestone mines in the area and bought the lime that their father produced. Their presence could have added an element of financial security and assurance to the family that the good life they lived in Lime Rock would continue uninterrupted into the foreseeable future. But such was not to be.

The Way West

Perhaps it was a day in the late spring of 1817 when their father interrupted the boys as they worked in the cooper's shed, where they were helping to make barrels for the most recent lime shipment to Providence, and announced that the family was leaving home, friends and relatives to move hundreds of miles west to the frontier state of Indiana. Although there may have been comfort in traveling with some of their mother's relatives, the trauma of such a sudden, drastic move would be hard to overcome, even for the resilient minds of children. Perhaps the parents tried to protect them from the knowledge that they likely were leaving forever. Jabez, George, Meribah, and Arnold looked back at their beloved home for the last time as their caravan of wagons headed south along the Great Road to connect with the Postal Road that led to New York City and beyond. Soon they were among hundreds of wagons being loaded aboard barges for the long trip down the Ohio River.[326]

Before they knew it, the children found themselves disembarking at Cincinnati, Ohio a wild, undisciplined frontier town when compared to the quiet,

settled community of Lime Rock. While the women and children set up a temporary camp, the men likely hurried over to the land office to buy land in the newly opened wilderness territory of southeastern Indiana. A few Caucasians had lived in parts of Franklin County for at least 20 years and it is conceivable that Jabez' father had been to Indiana before and had purchased partially developed land from previous owners. Or, as sometimes occurred, a local land agent could have been sent money to buy the kind of property, or a specific property, the potential owner desired. By Indiana standards of the time, the Whipples were a wealthy family. With the thousands of dollars received from his share of the lime-manufacturing business and the sale of his and his wife's properties, they would have been able to purchase several square miles of land at the going rate of $1 to $1.25 per acre.[327] As a long-time entrepreneur in the manufacture of lime, he would have been cognizant of the potential profits to be made from a massive outcrop of blue limestone on his new property ---and this most likely was the reason it was purchased. At any rate, the family soon found itself traveling up the Whitewater River bottoms for about 30 miles toward their new property in southeast Whitewater Township, Franklin County. Perhaps they paused to buy supplies at the newly founded tiny village of New Trenton, on the banks of the Whitewater River, while anxiously anticipating the sight of their new home about two miles to the east of there.[328] According to the obituary of Jabez' brother, George, the family spent some time in Cincinnati, and then bought property from a Squire Benton who farmed at Johnston's Fork, which would have been near the village of Rockdale.[329]



Franklin and Dearborn Counties

The letter "A" on the map above is New Trenton. Family tradition avers that the Whipple farm of several hundred acres lay between this village and Rockdale in southeast Whitewater Township, Franklin County. Jabez' brothers, George and Arnold, died in the New Trenton area, at least their post office boxes were listed there at the time of their deaths. The letter "B," Rockdale, shows the approximate burial place of Jesse Whipple and his wife in the Stolts Cemetery. This abandoned cemetery was on a hill located at the spot on the map where Johnston's Fork Road north out of Rockdale divides. The cemetery (with Jesse's gravestone shown in the previous chapter) was near the road on the right, and near the top of the hill. Jabez' great grandson, Abner, through his son George, was living just north of Rockdale as late as the mid twentieth century. The letter "C" is the approximate location of the original 1817 Whipple property in Whitewater Township, Franklin County. The 1820 federal census enumerated the

10 member Whipple family on this land [the family had only seven members--husband and wife and five children--it is not known who the other three persons were, perhaps they were servants or hired hands], and an 1828 tax list shows that Jabez and Jesse each owned property there.[330] This land encompassed one of the richest deposits of limestone in all of Indiana. Letter "D" shows the location of Peppertown Road in Harrison Township, Dearborn County. In 1832, Jesse bought a 42-acre farm near this road that he gave to his second son, George. By the year 1850, three of the Whipple children, Jabez, George, and Meribah Whipple Mann, lived on or near this road. Letter "E," Johnston's Fork Road, is where two Whipple children, Abner and Millie Whipple Handy, lived for a number of years. The multi-member Benton family of Jabez' wife, Susan Benton, owned most of the land along this road and creek from the Whitewater River north to Rockdale. Arnold Whipple, the remaining family member, lived most of his life about 10 miles north on highway 52 in the town of Metamora.

The Benton Family of Franklin County

Within five years or so of his arrival in Indiana, Jabez married Susan Benton a member of the Squire Benton family.[331] They were married about 1824/25. She was born 16 March 1808 in Benton, New York and died in Decatur County, Indiana 5 November 1883. Susan's 3great grandfather, Andrew Benton immigrated to America as a young man where he married Hannah Stocking about 1649 at Milford, Connecticut. He was born 15 October 1620 in Brobe, England, and died 31 July 1683 in Hartford, Connecticut. The Benton family traces its earliest ancestry to Edward, who was born about the year 1539 in Epping, Essex, England, married Joan Halloway in 1563, and died at Epping 16 September 1605.[332] Susan named her youngest son after her well-known first cousin, Mortimer Murray Benton, son of Joseph.

> He was the first mayor of Covington, an early advocate of education for young women, a businessman, attorney, and state legislator. In an era just after the pioneer period, few people made their mark on northern Kentucky like Mortimer Murray Benton. Benton was born Jan. 21, 1807, in the community of Benton in Ontario [Yates] County, N.Y. The town was named after his grandfather, Levi Benton. The Benton family emigrated from England. Both his grandfather and father were born in Litchfield, Conn. Mortimer Benton's father was Joseph Benton and his mother was Amy Reynolds Benton. Joseph Benton worked as a surveyor and moved his family to Franklin County, Ind., in 1814. While living there young Mortimer decided he wanted to become an attorney, so he moved to Cincinnati about 1827...He completed his studies in 1831 and moved to Covington [a suburb of Cincinnati]...He was elected to several terms on the city council and served as council president from 1849 to 1853...A biographical encyclopedia of that era said, "In his private character and daily walk, his life has been

distinguished by the same purity and many devotion to right and honorable principles." ...The account added that at 6 feet tall, Benton was an imposing physical figure, a man of good qualities and a person of zealous devotion to the Episcopal Church.[333]

The 1830 census shows that Jabez and Susan's family was composed of one son, age 5 to 10 years old (Levi 1825), and two sons aged four years or younger (Oscar 1827, Irvin 1829).[334] The first extant record of Jabez' life in Indiana was an 1828 Whitewater Township tax that he and his father were assessed.[335] Due to the prosperity of the family's business, by 1830 the 27-year-old Jabez had moved to the county seat at Lawrenceburg, nearer to the mouth of the Whitewater River, to oversee the sale and distribution of their product. From there, lime could be transported worldwide to centers on the Ohio and Mississippi Rivers, and to the port of New Orleans.

The 1840 census record of Jabez' whereabouts at that time is unavailable. One paragraph from a handwritten letter dated 17 May 1947 sent to and received by two Jabez descendants, and forwarded to the present author in 1977, touched on the status of the Whipple family around the middle years of the nineteenth century: "...When I finally got home from the cemetery, I couldn't stop thinking about all those conversations. I guess all that talk about the old days made me recall a letter my mother showed me years ago. It was partly a story about grandpa Jabez. Seems he, his brother Arnold, and father, Jesse, owned a rock business in Ohio. He was trying to get to Indiana for a funeral, when his boat sank on the Ohio River and he almost drowned. The funeral was for his mother or father. I suppose I recall that part because it was so dramatic...."[336] The funeral in question would have had to be that of his father, who died in a work-

Surname	Given Name	Age	Sex	Race	Birthplace	State	County	Location	Year
	GEORGE W	29	M	W	IN	IN	DECATUR	SAND CRK TWP	1870
	JABEZ	66	M	W	RI	IN	DECATUR	MARION TWP	1870
[illegible]	LEVI B	44	M	W	IN	IN	DECATUR	SAND CRK TWP	1870
[illegible]	OSCAR F	43	M	W	IN	IN	DECATUR	SAND CRK TWP	1870
	WILLIAM B	35	M	W	IN	IN	DECATUR	SAND CRK TWP	1870

1870 Decatur County Census

related accident 3 July 1840. By the time of his mother's death in the mid 1850s, the business was apparently no longer operating. According to the 1850 census, Jabez had purchased land near to his brothers George and Abner in northwestern Harrison Township in Dearborn County.[337] Apparently he lived the life of a gentleman farmer at that address for the next 16 years.[338]

Jabez, George, and Arnold appear on a general store ledger in the year 1854, and Jabez and George again in the year 1859. The 1859 ledger also lists George's son Cornelius, and Jabez' sons George W., William, Murray (Mortimer),

and Alfred. Millie Whipple Handy's son, Whipple Handy, is also listed. These ledgers list the merchandize bought and the amounts of the payments made to the store. The Whipples bought such items as nails, molasses, boots, tobacco, shoes, silk, pants, and vests. They usually paid their bills with cash but, often as not, paid by trading such products as hay, apples, eggs, timber, peaches, etc. From March 15 to 10 October 1859, Jabez bought goods worth $23.97 and paid $11.58, showing a balance due of $12.39.[339]

The Move to Decatur County

Jabez and Susan likely moved to Marion Township, Decatur County, Indiana around the year 1866. They sold property in Dearborn County on 29 December 1865 for the sum of $2000, a few months after the conclusion of the Civil War.[340] The above1870 census record reveals that they were living with their 26-year-old son Mortimer and his wife at their new residence about 50 miles west-southwest of Harrison Township.[341] Four other sons and two daughters had lived there for some time, and this is thought to be the only circumstance that would have convinced Susan and Jabez to leave their comfortable home of many years.[342]

According to the personal knowledge of several living descendants in 1976, a lengthy family history in the possession of the descendants of Jabez' oldest son, Levi, given to the present author in 1974, and corroborated by Indiana census and vital statistics records, Jabez and Susan had twelve children:

i. Levi B., born 13 December 1825; died 30 March 1905; married E. Seeley and Jane Patterson.
ii. Oscar F., born 18 May 1827; died 19 September 1905; married Mary Watkins and Clarissa Elliott.
iii. Irvin A., born 1829; died 1912; married Catherine Larimore
iv. Alfred J., born 26 February 1831; died 27 January 1909; married Mary Redmon and Elizabeth Doak
v. John C., born 11 January 1833; died 7 August 1893; married Priscilla Gray
vi. William T., born 10 April 1835; died 1 August 1908; married Emily T. O'Donnell and Amelia Pavy
vii. Louisa, born 1837; died 1911; married Robert Seeley
viii. Eliza A, born 7 June 1839; died 1 August 1918; married Joseph Dales
ix. George W., born 1841; died 1 December 1904; married A Wilson and E. Gold
x. Mary; born 1843; died young
xi. Mortimer M., born 1844; died c1915; married Sarah Pettigrew
xii. Loucena, born 7 December 1847; died 10 January 1911; married Jacob Smith and James Underwood

Irvin died at age 83; John dying at 60, and George at 63 were the shortest lived; the others died in their seventies. Of the daughters, Eliza died at 79, Loucena at 63, and Louisa at 74. Levi, Irvin, Mortimer, Eliza, and Louisa died

in Indiana; William and George in Oklahoma Territory; Alfred and Oscar in Kansas; John in Iowa; and Loucena in Texas.

Levi B. Whipple

Levi B.[7] Whipple (Jabez[6], Jesse[5], Eleazer[4], William[3], William[2], John[1]) was born 13 December 1825 at Whitewater Township, Franklin County, Indiana and died 30 March 1905 in Decatur County, Indiana. Levi moved to Decatur County, about 50 miles west-southwest of his birthplace, before the year 1850. The 1850 census places him in Decatur County at that time.[343] He returned to Dearborn County, where his parents still lived, and there married Elizabeth Seeley, 16 September 1851. The Reverend Moses Hornaday, a Baptist minister, performed the ceremony.[344] Elizabeth, who was the sister of Robert who married Louisa Whipple, died five years later. In 1852, she gave birth to John C. Whipple, who died as a child, and to a second son,

Levi Whipple

i. Rial R., born 1853; died 1898

"On the east side of Letts about 2 miles in a small graveyard lies grandfather Levi's first wife, Elizabeth. She lived only 5 years after their marriage. There were 2 sons. One lived about 9 years, the other, Rial, about 50. Both are buried near their mother."[345]

Rial had a son, Edward, who lived and died at Bloomington, Illinois. He married Pauline Purvis, and their daughter was Pauline Taylor of Bloomington. The children of Pauline and Harold Taylor were Alice Steinberg, Shirley Robinson, and Phyllis.

Levi's second wife was Jane Patterson, whom he married 26 February 1860 in Decatur County.[346] To this couple, three children were born:

i. Walter, born 6 June 1661; died 7 August 1923; married Loretta Hodson.
ii. Edgar, born 1864; died 1943; married Jennie Logan
iii. Charles, born 1873; died 1954; married Mary Purvis

Walter Whipple married Gertrude Hodson 5 January 1896,[347] and they had four children: James, Nellie, Mary and Joseph. Edgar Whipple married Martha Logan 8 March 1893,[348] and had no children. He was married a second time to Margaret Purvis in 1904. Charles Whipple married Mary Purvis 28 October 1896.[349] Their children were Wayne, Marle, Gladys, and Bernice.[350] These families lived out their lives in Decatur County. Levi was the only one of the five brothers still to be residing in Decatur County by the year 1890. Amy Fidler, daughter of Mary Whipple Taylor and granddaughter of William Whipple, brother

of Levi, wrote the following narrative about her Decatur County uncles, aunts and cousins:

> Summers were the highlight of my life in those days. Uncle Levi and Jane Whipple lived outside of Letts Corner, and their three children, Charles, Walter, and Ed, with their families lived close by. I was allowed to spend weeks at a time at Charles and Mary Whipples'. Iris and Bernice Whipple, my cousins, were about my age and we had a wonderful time together. We had to work, feed the chickens, help with the washing, feed hogs, and drive in the cows. Of course, we could always catch a horse and ride bare back, play in the hay, wade in the creek and hunt snakes along the way. Wayne and Marle were older and didn't want to be bothered with us. Of course, we could always get even with them like the Sunday we rode Marle's buggy horse after he had her shining to go see his girl friend. We rode her in the creek then up a dusty road and she was a sight to behold. Believe me, we did a disappearing act you wouldn't believe. Walter's children were Jim, Mary, Nell and Joseph. Joseph was our age, and he was with us as much as possible. He had one leg that didn't grow and he had to wear a brace and a built-up shoe but it didn't get him down very much. Jim and Nell were married and Jim Parker, Nell's husband, was our buddy. He taught us to swim, took us places and raised Great Dane dogs. He owned the first auto any of the family had ever seen. From Letts Corner to Westport was four miles and the first time my mother rode with him she swore she never got her breath in those four miles. We had a grape swing, and Joseph swung out on it as it broke and he wound up in the creek. Curtis, Bernice, Iris and I were sitting on a log at the creek with out feet in the water watching some men painting the bridge over us. Bernice, being the smallest, wasn't getting her feet in as much water as she wanted and, in trying to do so, fell in. She came up sputtering and cussing a blue streak. In fishing her out we all got good and wet. Marle had been left at home to watch us while the grown-ups had gone to town. That same summer, 1918, my grandmother Dales, the only grandmother I ever knew, died and it really hurt me. She was my favorite person.
>
> The days we all gathered for a big dinner and a visit were red-letter days. There would be Charlie and Mary with Wayne, Marle, Iris, and Bernice. Also, Walter and Girt with Jim, Nellie, Mary, and Joseph would be there. Ed and Rose never did have any children. Where do you see 22 people visiting and eating a huge meal now days, one Sunday at one house, another Sunday at another? And we loved going to Ed's, he always made ice cream and it sure was delicious. Then there was blackberry time. Charlie had the most and biggest blackberries anywhere. We would pick every day till they were gone, and we had jelly and jam and blackberry pie. Those days were the best of our lives....[351]

Levi Whipple died 30 March 1905 at Letts Corner. His Last Will and Testament states: [352]

I, Levi B. Whipple, of the County of Decatur, in the state of Indiana, do hereby make and publish this my Last Will and Testament hereby revoking any and all former wills by me made.

Item 1. I will, devise and bequeath all of my property both real and personal of which I possess and am the owner of to my three sons, Walter S. Whipple, Edgar Whipple and Charles A. Whipple in fee simple in equal parts, share and share alike upon the following conditions: my said sons are to pay all my just debts, expenses of last sickness, funeral expenses, and erect a monument at the graves of myself and wife costing such sum as my said sons may agree upon, support and maintain, and can for my wife Jane Whipple for and during her natural life, and give her a burial suitable for her station in life all of which is hereby made a charge upon the real estate herein devised. My said wife shall have the right to make her home with any or either of my sons as may suit her convenience from time to time, and the cost of such maintenance and support shall be borne equally by my said three sons.

I make no provision in this will for my grandson Edgar Whipple, son of my deceased son Rial Whipple, deceased, for the reason that during the lifetime of said deceased son, I advanced him several hundred dollars, and I have no ill will towards my said grandson but the provision herein are made in Justice to my said three sons.

In witness whereof I have hereunto subscribed my hand this 8th day of February 1901. Signed Levi B. Whipple

A brief account of his death appeared in the local newspaper.[353]

Death At Letts

Levi Whipple, eighty years died at his home at Letts Thursday night after a several months illness of la grippe, which finally developed into pneumonia. Deceased has been a resident of Letts for over a quarter of a century and was a well to do and respected citizen of that neighborhood. He leaves a wife and three grown sons to mourn his demise. The funeral services will be held at the Baptist church Sunday at 10:30, Rev. Bringle officiating.

In summary of Levi and his children: Levi Whipple was a tiller of the soil. He seldom left the confines of his immediate environs after he had left the home of his childhood subsequent to the collapse of the family business. His sons emulated him in their love for the bucolic life.

Oscar F. Whipple

Oscar F.[7] Whipple (Jabez[6], Jesse[5], Eleazer[4], William[3], William[2], John[1]) was born 18 May 1827 on the Whipple homestead in Whitewater Township, Franklin County, Indiana, and died at Eureka, Kansas 19 September 1905. He grew up working around the farm and helping his grandfather, father, and brothers dig for limestone. His teen years were spent at Lawrenceburg, Indiana and in Ohio, where his father worked in the family lime business. The Whipple lime business ended when his grandfather, Jesse Whipple, was killed in an accident when Oscar was 13 years old, forcing his father to move to northern Dearborn County in the mid 1840s and take up the trade of farming. While living there, he met and married Mary Watkins 12 October 1848.[354] The Reverend Moses Hornaday performed the wedding ceremony. Oscar and Mary had four children:

i. Henry I., born 4 October 1854; married Minnie Wigton
ii. Johnson, born August 1855, died after 1930; married Mary Wigton
iii. Rinaldo P., born 1859; died 30 January 1925; married Nellie Lyons
iv. Ellsworth S., born August 1863; died 8 November 1892

In the photograph of the Oscar Whipple family below, those standing from left to right are: Ira, Henry, Ellsworth, Rinaldo, and Johnson. Seated are: Clarissa, Grant, Laura, and Oscar. The 1870 Indiana census[355] lists Henry I. Whipple, age 16, as a farm laborer on his father's farm in Decatur County, Indiana; the 1880 census[356] does not. In the Oklahoma Census of 1900,[357] he is listed as a farmer with wife Minnie and children, George, Arthur, and Roy. George, age 19, was born in Kansas in 1881; thus the family had to have been in Kansas by that time. The youngest son, Roy, was also born in Kansas in 1889; thus the family left for Oklahoma sometime in the 1890s. He and his wife, and sons Arthur and Roy, are listed in the Oklahoma census of 1920.[358] Henry also helped with

Oscar Whipple Family, 1883

Bertha Whipple, daughter of his brother Johnson after the death of Johnson's wife, 15 August 1896.[359]

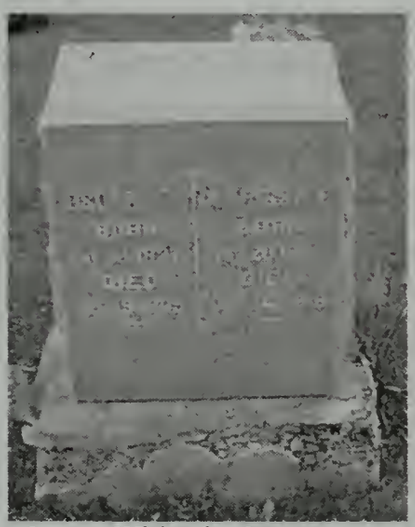
Johnson (John) Whipple is listed in the 1870 Indiana census, age 12, as a farm laborer on his father's farm. He was not listed in the 1880 Indiana census. He bought land at Eureka, Kansas on 31 March 1885 and in 1901.[360] He is listed in the 1900 Greenwood County Kansas census as John W. Whipple, widower, age 49, born August 1855 in Indiana.[361] Others have attempted to research his background:

> If you haven't already solved the mystery regarding Johnson/John W. Whipple {97732}, I would like to posit that he is John/Johnson Whipple

{92648} the son of Oscar F. Whipple {424} and his first wife Mary Watkins {443.} The link I found to connect him is the 1900 Census, Madison Twp., Greenwood, KS where he was living next to Grant Whipple {2652} in whose household is Daisy Whipple, niece. In the 1910 Census, Midland Twp., Pontotoc, Ok, Daisy is enumerated as the daughter of Johnson W. Whipple.[362]

The 1910 Oklahoma census lists Johnson Whipple along with his wife Mary Lovern, whom he married 5 October 1902, and their children: Daisy, age 18; Willis, age 16; Vivian, age 8; Eldo, age 6; Edwin, age 4; and Winnie, 1. The 1920 census corroborates this, adding: Vinson, age 8: and Johnie, age 5.[363] Johnson Whipple died 2 March 1937 in Ada, Oklahoma and is buried in the Rosedale Cemetery.[364]

The third son of Oscar and Mary Watkins was Rinaldo. He was born in Westport, Indiana 21 October 1859 and died at Eureka, Kansas 30 June 1925. He married Nellie Lyons 13 March 1889. She was born in Indiana and died 12 April 1961 at Eureka, Kansas. Rinaldo appeared in the 1880 Decatur County census as a 20-year-old laborer on his father's farm. He is known to have been living in Greenwood County Kansas as early as 20 June 1889, when he sold property to his father.[365] The 1900 Oklahoma census indicated that he was living in Kay County near his oldest brother, Henry.[366] His family was composed of two daughters: three-year-old Cordelia, who was born in Kansas, and died at the age of 10, and Mable, age 1, who was born in Oklahoma. This information shows that he moved to Oklahoma in 1899. Mable died 17 March 1920 at Eureka, Kansas. Rinaldo returned to Kansas within two years, when he bought government land in Greenwood County on 2 October 1901.[367] Rinaldo is listed in the 1920 Kansas census as a 60-year-old teamster/general loader. His wife Nellie was 50, and their daughter Mable was 20. Rinaldo Whipple died at Eureka, Kansas 30 June 1925.



Oscar Whipple Gravestone

The second wife of Oscar Whipple was Clarissa Elliott, whom he married 17 May 1866 in Jennings County, Indiana. She was born in Indiana 20 November 1843, and died at Greenwood County, Kansas 14 October 1916. They were the parents of two sons and two daughters:

ii. Mary B., born 1867, died 1872.
iii. Laura, born 1868; died 8 August 1890; married Robert Johnston
iv. Grant, born 26 September 1870; died 9 October 1943; married G. Freeman
v. Ira S., born 8 November 1875; died 29 March 1951; married Ella Willis

Ellsworth Whipple purchased property from the US government 27 March 1886 at Greenwood County, Kansas.[368] He died there 8 November 1892 from peritonitis.

Grant Whipple appeared in the 1880 Indiana census as a nine-year-old child living with his parents. The 1900 Kansas census lists him, his wife Gertrude Freeman, and infant daughter, Helen, as residents of Greenwood County.[369] Gertrude died in January of 1901 and Helen 23 August 1963 in Salina, Kansas. Grant and his second wife, Jennie Hanson did not have children. The 1910 census shows that he was a widower, with his 10-year-old daughter and his mother living with him.[370] Grant purchased at least 13 plots of land in Greenwood County beginning 11 December 1901 and continuing through 17 July 1942.[371] He died approximately one year later. His obituary appeared in the local newspaper:

> Mr. Grant Whipple, prominent farmer and stockman of Otter Creek, township, and a resident of this county for the past sixty years died at his farm home, presumably on Tuesday, October 12, 1943 from a heart attack. His body was found by a neighbor....Mr. Whipple had been living alone since the death of his wife about three years ago. Mr. Whipple was a man of sterling character, one who held the respect and esteem of a large circle of friends. He was the son of Oscar and Clarissa Whipple...and came to Greenwood County with his parents in February 1883...He leaves to mourn his death his only daughter, Helen Ryberg and one brother, Ira S. Whipple of Eureka, Kansas....

Ira Sumner Whipple was born 8 November 1875 at Sand Creek Township, Decatur County, Indiana and died 29 March 1951 at Eureka, Greenwood County, Kansas. He married Ella Willis, 15 July 1897. She was born 1 November 1877 and died 28 November 1976 at Eureka Kansas. The 1880 Indiana census lists Ira as a child five years of age living on his parent's farm. Greenwood County, Kansas records of deeds place him there by 21 December 1912, when he bought land from the government.[372] The 1910 Greenwood County Kansas census lists Ira as a 35 year old "general farmer" from Indiana, with his wife and four children: John, Clarissa, Kenneth, and Gerald.[373] The children were born in Kansas, including the eldest who was 11 years old, thus showing that Ira and Ella had to have been residents of Kansas no later than 1899 or so.[374] The 1920 Kansas census reveals that the family had added three more children by then: Ralph, Maurice, and Ruth. The obituary below appeared in the *Eureka Kansas Herald* newspaper 3 April 1951:

Ira Whipple Family

> Ira Sumner Whipple, son of Oscar and Clarissa Whipple, was born November 8 1875. He departed this life March 29, 1951 at his home in Eureka, Kansas. He was united in marriage with Ella Willis July 15, 1897 and

they celebrated their golden wedding anniversary in 1947. To this union seven children were born five boys, John of Mt. Home, Arkansas, Kenneth of Eureka, Gerald of Grenola, Ralph and Maurice of Kansas City, and two girls, Mrs. Clara Cox of Troutdale, Oregon and Mrs. Ruth Lindrud of Kansas City. All the children survive.

Ira had always lived a good Christian life and when his health permitted took an active part in church, school, and community welfare. He served two terms as county clerk of Greenwood county. He was a person who enjoyed having his family and grandchildren around him and especially happy when they all gathered at the home in August for a reunion. His suffering was great but was a person who rarely complained. He leaves to mourn his passing other than his wife and immediate family, a great number of nieces and nephews, twenty-eight grandchildren, eight great grandchildren and a host of relatives and friends. Interment was in the Greenwood Cemetery....

Of the children of Ira Whipple, John married Helen Hendrix 20 May 1922; Clarissa married Ernest Cox 1919; Kenneth married Leona Purkeypyle 2 April 1933; Gerald, married Lelia Bobbitt 24 May 1934; Ralph married Fay Elletta Wholf 17 September 1939; Maurice married Dorothy Baker, 25 November1938; and Ruth married Luther Shook, 3 July 1938 and then Clifford Lindrud, 6 November 1948. John, whose children were Kelda and Alta, died 29 November 1962 at St. Louis, Missouri. Clarissa and her husband had 12 children (Richard, Wayne, Betty, Robert, Thelma, Patricia, Alberta, Merritt, Mary Lou, Theresa, Joanne, and Norman), before she died 6 February 1971 in Gresham, Oregon. Kenneth's children are Dale, Alan, Carol, and Larry; he died at Eureka Kansas 2 September 1977. Gerald died 19 December 1983 in Eureka Kansas; his daughter is Geraldine. Ralph and Elletta's children are Thomas, Patsy, and Bonnie; he died 18 November 1973 at North Kansas City, Missouri. Maurice died 13 April 1984 in Eureka, Kansas; children are Janet, John, and Michael. Ruth had three daughters: Jeanette and Joanne by her first husband, and Jacquelyn; she died 8 March 1985 in Gresham, Oregon. In the photograph of the Ira Whipple family above, those in the front row are Ruth, Ira, Ella, and Clara. The back row is composed of Ralph, Kenneth, Maurice, Gerald, and John.[375]

Family history records in the possession of Oscar's descendants Larry Whipple of Eureka, Kansas, Fay Whipple of Lawson, Missouri, and Carol Sears of Anamoose, North Dakota indicate that Oscar Whipple settled in Greenwood County Kansas in February of 1883. His brother, George Whipple, moved to Kansas with him. Oscar and Clarissa purchased at least seven pieces of land beginning 29 May 1886 and ending 24 March 1902 in Greenwood County.[376] His obituary appeared in the *Eureka Herald* newspaper 21 September 1905.

O.F. Whipple, Old Settler, Dead

Oscar F. Whipple, an old settler of Greenwood County and an esteemed and highly respected citizen of Eureka died at his home here at 9:15 p.m., Tuesday, September 19, aged 78 years, four months and one day. The funeral services were conducted by Rev. R. T. Harkness. After which the Masonic Order, of which he has been a member for 56 years, took charge of the body and conducted the burial service at the grave.

Mr. Whipple is one of the old settlers of Kansas coming here from Decatur county Indiana in February 1883. He located in Greenwood county and has resided here ever since; about five years ago he left the farm and moved to Eureka.

Mr. Whipple was a kind hearted hospitable man and a good citizen to have in a community...He leaves a wife and five children to mourn his loss.

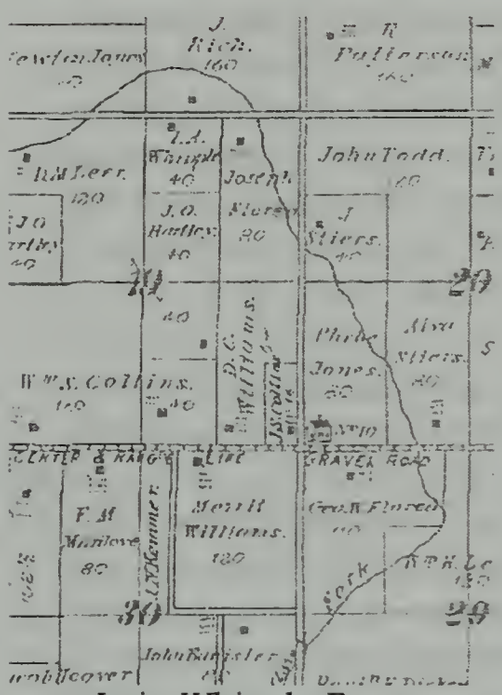
In summary of Oscar Whipple and his children: Oscar F. Whipple left Decatur County, Indiana in 1883 at the age of 56, and lived the next 22 years in Greenwood County, Kansas. Of his sons, Henry located to Kansas in 1881 or earlier. He moved to the town of Blackwell, Kay County, Oklahoma in the 1890s. Johnson, (or John), had moved to Greenwood County, Kansas by the year 1885 or earlier. He had moved to the town of Ada Pontotoc, County Oklahoma before 1910. Rinaldo may have moved to Kansas in 1883 with his parents where he lived the rest of his life. Ellsworth moved to Greenwood County, Kansas in 1883 at the age of 16 with his parents, where he died nine years later. Grant moved to Greenwood County, Kansas with his parents at the age of nine in 1883, where he lived the rest of his life. Ira was eight years old when he moved to Greenwood County, Kansas in 1883, where he lived the rest of his life. Laura moved to Greenwood County, Kansas in 1883 with her parents, where she died 8 August 1890.

Irvin A. Whipple

Irvin A.[7] Whipple (Jabez[6], Jesse[5], Eleazer[4], William[3], William[2], John[1]) was born at Whitewater Township, Franklin County, Indiana in March of 1829, and died in Liberty Township, Grant County, Indiana in 1912.[377] He married Catherine Larimore 24 August 1851;[378] she was born March 1833 and died in 1911. Irvin and Catherine had 12 children, eight of whom lived into adulthood:[379]

i. Arnold, born in 1853.
ii. Louisa, born in 1861
iii. Lewis, born in 1860
iv. Oliver, born in 1864.
v. Mary, born in 1866
vi. Clarrisa, born in 1869
vii. Anna, born in 1871
viii. Silas, born in 1874

The 1860 Indiana census shows the young couple to be living in Grant County, Indiana, about 135 miles north-northwest of Lawrenceburg. They had one child by this time: Arnold, age 7. They probably moved to their new farm shortly after their marriage. According to the 1877 map of Liberty Township below, their farm of 40 acres was located approximately one mile east of the Point Isabel Cemetery on the south side of Highway 26.[380] Irvin's brother Murray would soon move about 20 miles east on Highway 26 to the county of Blackford, Hartford City, and his sister Loucena to Jackson Township in Blackford County. Irvin's sister Louisa lived about five miles east of him in Green Township. Irvin served as a private in the 22nd Indiana Regiment in the Civil War.[381]



Irvin Whipple Farm

The 1900 census[382] indicates that Catherine and Irvin were living in separate housing, each listed as the head of household, he living in dwelling133 and she in dwelling 188. Irvin living alone, age 71, and had been married for 48 years. His wife, age 67, was listed as living with her 36 year old son, Oliver M, and 29 year old daughter, Anna, and as married for 48 years. The 1910 census[383] shows that Catherine was still living with her son, whose profession was "doing odd jobs." Irvin was not listed in the 1910 census. By 1920, there were no Whipples listed in Grant County. The 1900 census for the state of Kansas shows that Irvin's oldest son, Arnold, was living at Sterling, Rice County, Kansas. He had been married for 22 years to Prudence. She had given birth to five children, two of whom, Mable and William, survived. Mable was born in1884 in Indiana, and William in 1892 in Kansas. The 1910 and 1920 Kansas censuses show Arnold to be a widower living at Stafford and working as a carpenter.

Alfred J. Whipple

Alfred J.[7] Whipple (Jabez[6], Jesse[5], Eleazer[4], William[3], William[2], John[1]), the first of nine children born in Dearborn County, Indiana 26 February 1831, died at Eureka, Greenwood County, Kansas, 27 January 1909. He married Mary Redmon 19 July 1865, she dying in 1866. Alfred then married Elizabeth Doak 13 March 1867 in Wapello County, Iowa. To this couple, three children were born:

i. Etta, born 20 December 1869
ii. Laura, born 20 August 1870
iii. Milo, born 30 January 1873

In the 1860 Dearborn County Indiana census,[384] the 29-year-old unmarried Alfred is seen to be living with his parents at their Harrison Township property on Peppertown Road. Also living there were three teenage siblings: George, Murray, and Loucena. Levi and Oscar, his two older brothers, had by then located to Decatur County, Indiana. Their 25-year-old brother, William, was working for Levi as a farm laborer. Eliza, their sister, had married and moved to Decatur County as well. Irvin, a fourth brother, had recently moved to Grant County, Indiana as had their sister Louise. John had long since moved to Wapello County, Iowa where Alfred was soon to again relocate. An 1870 census shows Alfred and John (J.C. on the record) to be living in close proximity in Highland Township. (Other entries in that census are not known to be related to them).

Alfred Whipple Headstone

It is interesting to note that although the 57-year-old Jabez is listed as the head of household of dwelling 680 in the 1860 census, the value of his estate was about $1300; whereas, Alfred's estate was valued at over $3200, a considerable sum of money for the time. He may have earned the money by buying and selling a farm in Iowa. Alfred lived in Iowa for an undetermined number of years, and then returned to Indiana before the year 1860. Most likely he and his brother John had originally moved to Iowa at the same time in 1854.

> Whipple, Alfred J., far., Sec.9; P.O. Ottumwa; was born in Dearborn Co., Ind., Feb. 26, 1831; came to Wapello Co. in the fall of 1854. Married Elizabeth Doak, March 13, 1867; she was born in Beaver Co., Penn., Dec. 3, 1832; they have three children - Ettie J., Born Dec. 20, 1866; Laura A., born Aug. 20 1870; Milo D., born Jan. 30, 1873. Owns 250 acres of land, valued at $35 per acre. Mrs. W. is a member of the Presbyterian Church. Republican.[385]

It appears that immediately after the death of his wife in 1866, Alfred returned to Iowa and there married Elizabeth in early 1867. The 1870[386] census for Highland Township, Wapello, County, located in the extreme southeast corner of the state of Iowa, shows that Alfred, his wife Elizabeth, and daughter Etta were living there at that time. His real and personal estate was evaluated at over $5500. As an informative aside, Alfred is listed as "deaf" in this census.

The 1900 census[387] shows that he was still living in Highland Township with his wife Elizabeth and two daughters, ages 32 and 31. Etta was listed as a schoolteacher. Laura's occupation was indecipherable on the document. In dwelling 530 lived his 27-year-old farmer son, Milo, with his wife May. They had been married for six years, she having birthed two children, both of whom had died. By this time, Alfred and Elizabeth had been married for 33 years.

Alfred purchased approximately 500 acres of farmland in Greenwood County, Kansas next to his brother, Oscar, who had lived there since 1883, on February 28 1903 and 28 March 1904.[388] He, his wife, and their two daughters

lived there until his death 27 January 1909. His obituary appeared in the local *Eureka Herald* newspaper:

> Alfred J. Whipple was born in Lawrenceburg Indiana February 26 1831 and died in Eureka Kansas January 27th 1909, after a lingering illness of several years. He was patient in all his sickness and when near death he was willing to depart and be at rest. He was married to Elizabeth C. Doke March 13 1867. To this union were born three children Etta, Laura and Milo, all of whom with the widow were present at his death. He went to Iowa about fifty years ago, and lived there until two years ago when he came to Kansas. In the death of Alfred his wife has lost a kind and loving husband, the children a devoted father. We part here at the river of death but there no dividing lines to the saints...There was a short funeral service Thursday night...after which the family departed on the midnight train for Ottumwa, Iowa, where interment was made. He was of a family of eleven children, two brothers and two sisters remain.

A brief sketch of his life subsequently appeared in the Ottumwa, *Iowa Courier*, 10 February 1909: [389]

> Alfred J. Whipple was born in Lawrenceburg, Ind., Feb. 26, 1831, and died in Eureka, Kan, January 27, 1909, aged 77 years, 11 months, and one day. He was united in marriage with Elizabeth C. Doak in Ottumwa, March 13, 1867. He leaves to mourn his loss besides his wife, two daughters and one son, Misses Etta and Laura of Eureka, Kan., and Milo, of Agency.

The 1910 Iowa census[390] indicates that Alfred's 77-year-old widow, Elizabeth, and daughter Laura had returned to Iowa to live at Ottumwa, the seat of Wapello County. Her son, Milo D. Whipple, aged 37, was living in Agency Township with his wife May, who had given birth to six children, four of whom were still living: Wayne 8, Donald 7, Audrey 2 and Helen 1. The 1920 census shows the family unit still the same, but Elizabeth was no longer listed.[391] Milo, who died in 1961, his wife, who died in 1947, and their two infant sons, Cleon and Vernon, are buried near Alfred and Elizabeth in Section 21 of the McCormick Cemetery.

John C. Whipple

John C.[7] Whipple (Jabez[6], Jesse[5], Eleazer[4], William[3], William[2], John[1]) was born at his parent's residence at Lawrenceburg, Dearborn County, Indiana 11 January 1833. He died at Highland Township, Wapello County, Iowa 7 August 1893. At about the age of 21 he set out with his brother Alfred for the recently settled state of Iowa, about 400 miles west/northwest of his boyhood home, where he met and married Priscilla Gray 4 September 1856.[392] Priscilla was born

27 April 1834 and died 3 December 1880, subsequent to being thrown from a horse. John and Alfred were listed in the 1856 Iowa state census as unmarried farmers living side by side.[393] The 1860 Iowa census[394] shows that the 27-year-old John was living in Wapello County with his wife and daughters Sarah 3, and Mary 1, who were both born in Iowa, and an unknown 19 year old schoolteacher, a Miss Hogan. His property was valued at approximately $1300. According to the 1870 census and other data,[395] John and Priscilla had the following children:

i. Sarah, born 1856; married William Dorr
ii. Clara, born 1858; Married John Barliff
iii. Mary, born 1859; died 21 October 1860
iv. Cordilia, born 1861; married Jerome Kitterman
v. Lillian K., born 1863
vi. Susan, born 27 August 1866; died 12 April 1941; married George Arnold
vii. Bernice V., born 1868; died 19 February 1964; married George Spry
viii. Oscar, born 1870; died 1940
ix. William, born June 1873; died after 1930; married Bertha
x. Jennie; born 1876;married George Fry

According the 1870 Highland Township census, his property was valued at over $7600. At least three of their daughters appear in an early twentieth century lineage book: Mrs. Bernice Whipple Spry in 1914, Mrs. Susan Whipple Arnold in 1914, and Jennie Whipple Fry in 1917.[396] These lineage entries incorrectly state that John died in 1895--a clear error in that John's obituary appeared in the *Ottumwa Courier* newspaper, 24 August 1893.[397]

The subject of this sketch, John C. Whipple, was born January 11, 1833, in Decatur [Dearborn] County, Indiana; came to the state of Iowa when a young man, settled in Wapello county, near Highland Center. On Sept. 4, 1856, he married Miss Priscilla Gray, who died in 1880. Mr. Whipple was the father of ten children, nine of whom are living. He was a good citizen and a loving father; by his industry he succeeded in accumulating considerable property. Tired of farming he sold his home property and moved to Ottumwa, where he went into the lumber business. Disposing of this he bought property in Creston, where he was engaged in business at the time of his death, which was caused by dropsy of the heart.

Mr. Whipple was a man highly esteemed by all for his honest integrity and true principles of justice. A republican in politics, while not a member of any denomination he had great respect for religion. His religious principles were malice toward none and charity for all, which the church and the poor will feel his loss and sympathize with the bereaved ones.

John Calvin Whipple died 7 August 1893 and was buried beside his wife and infant daughter in Section 21 of the McCormick Cemetery in Highland

Township. Gravestone information indicates that he was "60 yrs 6 mos and 26 days old."[398] He spent the last 13 years of life as a widower. He spent the first 21 years of life in Indiana, and 39 in Iowa.

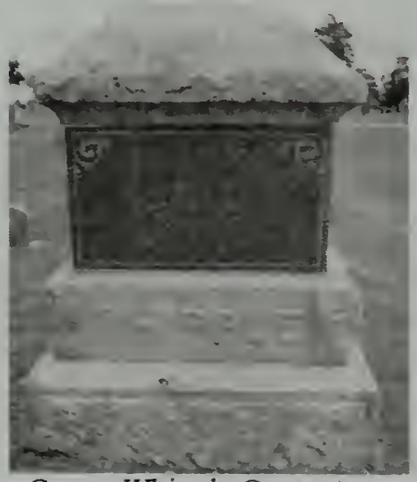
The 1900 census also shows that John's son, William, was now the head of household, with his 30-year-old brother, Oscar, living with him and listed as a day laborer. In the 1910 census, Oscar was living in a boarding house in Ottumwa with eight other men. Oscar apparently never married, died in 1940, and was buried in the McCormick Cemetery near his parents. William and family were listed in the 1910 census of Kings Valley, Benton, Oregon. In the 1930 census, he was a widower, working as a mechanic, and listed with his son, John C., in San Francisco, California.[399]

George W. Whipple

George Washington[7] Whipple (Jabez[6], Jesse[5], Eleazer[4], William[3], William[2], John[1]) was born at Lawrenceburg, Dearborn County, Indiana 10 May1841, and died in Guthrie, Logan County, Oklahoma Territory 1 December 1904. He married Angeline Wilson 5 April 1864. He then married Emeline Gold, 9 January 1865.[400] She died 25 January 1873, and was buried at the Horseshoe [Bancourt] Bend Cemetery, Westport, Indiana.[401] George and Emeline are listed in the Decatur County, Indiana 1870 census[402] with their children:

i. Milby, age 4
ii. Benjamin, age 2.

In 1870, George lived in the southern part of Decatur County, next door to his 35-year-old brother William, and near his brothers Levi, Oscar, Albert, Murray and their parents. Irvin, their brother, had just moved about 125 miles north to Grant County, Indiana and another brother, John C., had resided in the state of Iowa for about 15 years. The 1880 Indiana census shows George still farming at the same address with his sons and his widowed mother Susan. His mother died three years later, at which time George, along with his brother Oscar, moved to Greenwood County, Kansas. Subsequent to living in Kansas for about nine years, George and his son Benjamin homesteaded on land near the Cimarron River in the formerly unassigned lands of Oklahoma Territory, approximately 10 miles northeast of Guthrie, and 150 miles southwest of Greenwood County. [The location is East County Road 70 and Hiawassee Road. The river was the north and east boundary of his land]. No white man had owned this land before. Guthrie was the Territorial Capitol at the time. George came to Oklahoma Territory in 1892, after it was opened to non-Indians, and his brother, William,


GeorgeWhipple Gravestone

joined him in 1896, settling about 50 miles southwest of George in former Cheyenne and Arapaho territory at Calumet. Henry Whipple, their nephew, son of Oscar, moved to the Cherokee Strip in the 1890s at Blackwell, about 50 miles to the north. Henry's brother, Johnson Whipple, moved to former Chickasaw lands about 65 miles to the south of George's property.

On 1 August 1898, George obtained receipt of ownership: Homestead Certificate #3004, Application 10748, approved for the NW¼ of section 34-township 18, range 1 west.[403] "From this date, he would have had to be on the property, proving it up for at least 5 years, so one might deduce that he came to this property in Logan County at least by 1893." [404] In the 1900 Logan County census, he is listed as "George Whipper." George's oldest son, Milby, who had been living approximately 20 miles north of the Cimarron River, moved to a farm of 80 acres just south of him 24 October 1899.[405] Milby and his wife, Cena, sold this property to his brother Benjamin 23 June 1903 and moved out of the county.[406] After this, Milby is not heard of for the next two decades-- in fact, not until he was buried, in 1923, next to his father in a Guthrie cemetery. Benjamin and his wife, Cora, sold their farm 23 May 1909[407] for $12,000 and moved back to Kansas. The 1910 Federal Census places them at Wichita, Kansas, with their seven-year-old son, Ralph.[408] In 1920, the family was still living in Wichita, with Benjamin working as a real estate salesman.

George Washington Whipple died after a lingering illness in 1904.[409] His obituary appeared in the *Guthrie Daily Leader* newspaper, 2 December 1904:[410]

Death of G.W. Whipple
Sketch of One of Logan County's
Departed Pioneers

George Washington Whipple, son of Jabez and Susan Whipple was born in Dearborn County, Indiana on May 10, 1841. He was married to Emeline Gold, January 1865, settling in Decatur County Indiana.

Of this couple were born two sons, Milby Ellsworth Whipple, and Benjamin Franklin Whipple, 39 and 36 years old respectively. Both are residents of Logan County.

Mr. Whipple's wife died January 25 1873; he never afterward remarried. Mr. Whipple was one of a family of eleven children, eight sons and three daughters. Six brothers and three sisters still survive him. The oldest, a brother, is 79 years old and the youngest, a sister, is 55 years old. Mr. Whipple came to Oklahoma in 1892, settling in Logan County seven miles north and seven miles east of Guthrie. At the time of his death he was 63 years, 6 months, and 20 days old.

A notice in Guthrie's second newspaper, the *State Capitol* noted,

Prominent Farmer Dies. Notice was received in the city yesterday of the death of G.W. Whipple, who resides near Coyle. He was a well to do farmer of that community and had a number of friends in Guthrie. The

body will be brought to Guthrie this morning and will be interred in Summit View cemetery this afternoon.

A third obituary appeared in the hometown newspaper of his brother Oscar at Eureka, Kansas. George was apparently well enough remembered to warrant an obituary in that community's newspaper.[411]

> G. W. Whipple died at his home in Guthrie, Oklahoma, Thursday, December 1st. Mr. Whipple had been ill for some time so his death was not unsuspected to his family. The deceased is a brother of O.F. Whipple of Eureka who was with him at the time of his death. He lived in Greenwood County for many years and has many friends who will be pained to learn of his death.

George W. Whipple was buried in the Summit View Cemetery at Guthrie, Oklahoma next to his son, Milby, and infant granddaughter Paula, daughter of Benjamin.[412] George lived the first 42 years of life in the state of Indiana, nine in Kansas, and 12 in Oklahoma. He was a widower for the last 31 years of life.

Mortimer M. Whipple

Mortimer Murray[7] Whipple (Jabez[6], Jesse[5], Eleazer[4], William[3], William[2], John[1]) was born in 1844 on his parent's farm in Harrison Township, Dearborn County, Indiana and died between the years 1910 and 1920 at Hartford City, Blackford County, Indiana. On some documents his first and second names are reversed. He married Sarah Pettigrew, 5 May 1869.[413] The 1860 Indiana census[414] shows him to be living at his parent's home along with siblings, Alfred, George, and Loucena. According to the 1870 Indiana census,[415] he and his new wife were living with his father and mother in Marion Township, Decatur County, Indiana just across a stream called Sand Creek east from the farms of four of his brothers, Levi, Oscar, William, and George.

Mortimer moved to the county of Blackford, about 125 miles north of Decatur County around the year 1878, after his father died and his mother moved in with his widowed brother George. His siblings Irvin, Louise, and Loucena had lived in the Blackford area for several years. The 1900 Indiana census[416] indicates that he and his wife were living in Hartford City, Blackford County Indiana. They had no children.[417] According to the 1910 Indiana census,[418] they had moved to Jackson Township, Blackford County. He is listed as 66 years old, she as 56 years old. This is the last time he is listed in the census. The 1920 census shows the widow, Sarah Whipple, living at the same township with a 52-year-old nephew: Oliver Mort Whipple, son of Irvin.

Louise A. Whipple Seeley

Louise Angeline Whipple was born in 1837 at Dearborn County, Indiana and died in 1911 in Green Township, Grant County, Indiana. She married Robert Seeley 8 March 1859.[419] At least four children were born to them:[420]

i. William, born 1862
ii. Frank, born1865
iii. Eva, born 1869
iv. Emma, born 1875

Louise lived in the adjoining township of her brother Irvin, and as noted Irvin was buried in Green Township, about one-half mile south of her farm. Another brother and sister, Mortimer and Loucena, lived in Blackford the adjoining county to the east. Early life for Robert and Angeline (as she is usually referred to in the literature), likely was typical of the time. It is probable that they attended the same school in the 1840s.

> I was born in Franklin County December 23, 1834. When I was a boy our family lived in a rude log cabin...When I was old enough to go to school my father bought me a McGuffee's reader...This was a subscription school and the teacher only got seventy-five cents a day...The seats were made by cutting a long log into two pieces, cross-wise, and driving pegs into the bottom to serve as legs. The big boys had to go early of a morning and build the fires. School only lasted three hours a day. The most advanced work the teacher could do in arithmetic or sums was long division...My people moved to Grant County when I was a boy. We had to go thirty miles to the nearest railroad...I never had a 'boughton' suit of clothes until I was twenty-two years old. When I was twenty-two years old I was united in marriage with Angeline Whipple. I have lived in Grant County practically all my life. I certainly enjoyed those old days.[421]

Angeline and Robert were mentioned in a 1914 book as contributors to a charitable fund.[422] Their oldest child, William,[423] married Elnora Collins. Their children were Herman of Swayzee, Indiana, who married Lavonne Bradford; Emma, who married Albert Morris; and, Eva, who married John Haviland.

Eliza Whipple Dales

Eliza Ann, the second of the Whipple daughters, was born on her parent's farm at Lawrenceburg, Dearborn County, Indiana 7 June 1839, died in Sand Creek Township, Decatur County, Indiana 1 August 1918, and was buried next to her husband at the Letts, Indiana Cemetery. She was married at the age of 17 to 34-year-old Joseph Dales 1 August 1856 in Dearborn County, The Reverend Moses Hornaday, officiating at the ceremony.[424] Joseph was born in 1824 and

died in 1909. The 1860 Indiana census[425] shows the couple to be living next door to the farm of her parents with a daughter, Elizabeth, age three.

i. Elizabeth
ii. Estella

Eliza Whipple

This census reveals that Eliza and Joseph did not own real estate, as their personal property was valued at only $50. The 1870 Indiana census[426] shows that they had moved some 50 miles west to Decatur County near to her four brothers and their families and bought a farm. Her parents and brother Mortimer soon joined them. By the census of 1900,[427] Eliza and Joseph were living alone at their farm in Decatur County. She had given birth to three children, but only one survived. From 1882 until about 1892 she also raised Mary Elizabeth, daughter of her brother William. Amy Fidler, Mary Elizabeth Whipple's daughter, states "My mother was left with her aunt, Eliza Dales--the only grandmother I ever knew--when her father took the rest of the family and moved to Texas. At about the age of 14 she lived with and worked for her cousin for whom she had been named, Mary Elizabeth Dales Cann. Mother earned about 25 cents per week and her room and board. She would walk home to grandma Dales on the weekends, about five miles and back again on Mondays. The two cousins were inseparable for many years."[428] The 1910 Indiana census[429] shows Eliza to be living as a widow with her daughter Elizabeth and son-in-law Milton Cann. Elizabeth and John's daughter, Cora, married Carvel Underwood. When she died in 1918 Eliza (pictured above) had lived as a farmer's wife in Sand Creek Township for over 50 years.

Loucena Whipple Underwood

The youngest daughter of Susan and Jabez Whipple was Loucena [spelled "Louisania" on some documents], born 7 December 1847 at Dearborn County, Indiana. She married Jacob S. Smith on 17 March 1867,[430] he dying from tuberculosis in 1875. "Jacob and Lou were the parents of Charles Elmore Smith and one daughter named Zella. She married L. Larois in Keller, Texas. The Charlie Smith issue is correct in your book. Lou married again to James Underwood. Their children were: Nellie, who married a man named Davis; Addie, who married Ed Olsen of Keller; Elbie who married someone called Lockwood of Humble, Texas. Edwin Underwood, their only son, lived in west Texas, no children I think. To the best of my knowledge all the Underwood children are deceased."[431] Loucena's second marriage was to James B. Underwood in 29 April

1877[432]. In 1880, the family lived in Blackford Township, Jackson Township, Indiana not far from her brother, Mortimer.[433] To this union were born four children:

i. Ada, born 1879; married Ed Olson
ii. Nellie, born 1880; married David
iii. Elba, born 1882; married Lockwood
iv. Edwin, born 1887

The last child, Edwin, was born in Texas, showing that the family, including Charlie Smith, had moved west between the years1882 and 1887. In the 1900 Texas census,[434] Loucena and her husband, age 68 of Kentucky, were living at Keller, Tarrant County, Texas with their four children. That census also shows that she had given birth to nine children, five of whom were still living. Tombstone information on their graves at Sweet's Chapel Cemetery southwest of Roanoke Texas and one half mile west of their home on the Old Denton Road, indicates that Loucena Whipple Underwood died 10 January 1911. Her husband died 14 April 1910.

Loucena Whipple

It is worthy to note that the wedding ceremonies for the daughters of Jabez and Susan Whipple were officiated by The Reverend Moses Hornaday, a Baptist minister. As the bride usually selects the officiating clergyman, it is understandable that they would have possibly selected the minister of their local church. Hornaday served as the pastor at New Trenton, Indiana for many years, and as its postmaster, before moving to Dearborn County in the 1840s. The Reverend Hornaday likewise conducted the weddings of at least three of their brother's: those of Levi, Irvin, and George.[435]

The Death of Jabez Whipple

Jabez Whipple died 12 December 1873, intestate, and was buried in the Horseshoe (Bancourt) Bend Cemetery, Westport, Indiana near to his daughters-in-law Emily O'Donnell Whipple and Emeline Gold Whipple, and granddaughter Mary, daughter of Oscar. His wife Susan, who was born 16 March 1808, died 5 November 1883 and was buried beside him. This cemetery[436] is located approximately one mile east of the town near the west bank of a stream called Sand Creek. His farm was just on the other side of the creek in Marion Township. In the photo above, Susan's headstone, which is to the right of Jabez', has fallen over, and due to its fragility, it has been cemented to the ground. The headstone to her right is that of Emeline Gold Whipple. The photographer stood next to the

grave of Emily Whipple, looking west, while taking the photograph. The information on the stones is all but illegible. A description of the cemetery is provided in one descendant's narrative:

..."Now, let's go a little east of Westport to an old cemetery called Horse Shoe Bend. When Marle's mother was old she loved for us to take her to places she knew in the past. One afternoon she wanted to go to Horse Shoe Bend. Cora Underwood was living then. Mary Whipple Taylor was living with her taking care of her. We went past their house and took them with us. I remember Mary taking a big butcher knife. The cemetery was on a little incline. Near the road was a lot with 4 stones, the tall, thin type. I took down the information:

Emeline Gold
Wife of G. W. Whipple
Born Nov. 25, 1846
Died Jan.25, 1873

Mary
Daughter of O.F. and C. Whipple
Died June 17, 1872
Age 5 yrs 2 mo. 10 days

Jabez Whipple
Born Aug. 18, 1803 R.I.
Died Dec. 12, 1873

For we know that if our earthly house of this tabernacle
were resolved , we have a building of God, a house
not made with hands. 2 Cor. 5:1

On the top was a carving of a weeping willow tree.

Susan
Wife of Jabez Whipple
Born Mar. 16, 1808
Died Nov. 5, 1883

I know that my Redeemer liveth.

In the next row up the incline was a tall, square stone. It read:

Emily T. Whipple
Wife of W.T. Whipple
Born Dec. 16, 1844
Died Dec. 2, 1875

Here Mary WhippleTaylor began wielding her knife to cut the weeds and tall grass from around the stone and on the grave. Then she leaned on the stone and said with tears in her eyes, "This is my mother's grave. She died when I was born. We were twins. The other one died." Then I noticed a tiny stone near the big one. She went on, "my father gave me to his sister to raise." I wish now I had asked her more, but there were other things on my mind...."[437]

A quaint notice of Jabez' death appeared in the local newspaper. "Eight miles south of town, Dec. 13th, Jabez Whipple aged 88 [sic] years. Deceased was one of the oldest inhabitants of that section. He fed his hogs the day before his death."[438] Because Jabez died without a will, it took several months for the disposition of the estate to be resolved. His son George was appointed administrator of the estate. It took over one year for his farm to be sold and the proceeds to be distributed. As seen in the document below, only Irvin did not

Bancourt Bend Cemetary

State of Indiana
County of Decatur

Thursday morning 8 O'Clock

November 19, 1874

Court-pursuant to adjournment
Present-the same judge and officer as on yesterday
On the matter of the estate of

Jabez Whipple deceased

Now comes George W. Whipple administrator of the estate of Jabez Whipple deceased and his petition to sell real estate to pay debts, filed herein August 11, 1874 is shown to the court-and reads as follows To-wit:(here insert) and proof of publication of notice of the filing of said petition is made by the affidavit of Joseph McKee publisher of the Greensburg Standard, a weekly newspaper of general circulation printed and published in the county Decatur showing three successive publications of said notice in said paper, the last being more than thirty days prior to this first day of the present term

of court To-wit: (here insert) further made to appear to this court-by the affidavit of said administrator, that-the posted written notices of the filing of said petition in three public places in the township where such real estate is situated more than thirty days prior to the first day of November 1874 viz (here insert affidavit) Whereupon the appearance answer and consent of Lois Smith, Jacob Smith her husband, Alfred J.Whipple, John W. Whipple, Lois Seeley and Robert Seeley her husband, Mortimer Whipple, Levi B. Whipple, Oscar F. Whipple, William T. Whipple, Eliza Dales and Joseph Dales her husband. To said petition as shown the court-and reads as follows, viz: (here insert) Thereupon Irvin Whipple is three times audibly called and comes not-wholly makes default-.and thereupon an appraisement of said real estate by Andrew Ferris and Kenny Vanderberg reputable householders of Decatur county disinterested and not of kin to any of the heirs of said deceased-appraising the same at eight hundred dollars is filed herein viz: (here insert) and said administrator also files an additional bond herein in the penalty of sixteen hundred dollars with Levi Whipple and Kenneth Miller sureties thereupon which bond is approved by the court and reads as follows To Wit (here insert). Whereupon the court being fully advised of the premises and being satisfied of the propriety of selling said read estate does adjudge and decree as follows.

It is therefore adjudged and decreed by the court that said administrator sell said real estate at a public sale the same being situated in the county of Decatur, state of Indiana, and described as follows, viz: The undivided two thirds of the east half of the northeast quarter section fifteen, town nine, range nine, containing eighty acres more or less, also three acres south of the line road and west of said eighty acre tract...Inasmuch as said lands are appraised at less than one thousand dollars, notice of said sale is dispensed with. [439] The property was sold to Rial Whipple, Jabez grandson, for $800.[440]

It can be said of Jabez Whipple that had he not moved to Decatur County in his old age, to be near his children, he likely would have (like his father and brothers), lived and died within a dozen miles or so of the old homestead in Whitewater Township, a stone's throw from the Ohio border. Most likely he would have been buried near his brothers in the Braysville Cemetery near the banks of the Whitewater River, a river so determinative in the earliest years of the families' sojourn in Indiana, and a lifetime removed from their ancestral home on the banks of the Moshassuck River in Lime Rock, Rhode Island.

Sons and Grandsons of Jabez Whipple

Of the 12 children of Jabez and Susan Whipple Levi, Irvin, Murray, Eliza, and Louise lived and died in Indiana, with Mary dying in infancy. Oscar and Alfred died in southeastern Kansas, although Alfred was buried in Iowa. William and George were buried in central Oklahoma. John died and was buried in

southeastern Iowa, and Loucena in north central Texas. Ten of the children produced at least 53 offspring who lived to adulthood: 27 males and 26 females. Of the males, 22 bore the Whipple name:

Sons of Levi: Rial, Walter, Edgar, Charles
Sons of Oscar: Henry, Johnson, Rinaldo, Ellsworth, Grant, Ira
Sons of Irvin: Arnold, Lewis, Oliver, Silas
Sons of Alfred: Milo
Sons of John: Oscar, William
Sons of William: William, Alva, Charles
Sons of George: Milby, Benjamin
Sons of Mortimer: none

Research is ongoing as to the names of Jabez' great grandsons and further descendants who carried on the Whipple name. What is known is presented below.

Grandson	great grandson
Levi	
Rial	Ed
Walter	James, Joseph
Edgar	none
Charles	Wayne, Marle
Oscar	
Henry	George, Arthur, Roy
Johnson	Eldo, Edwin
Ellsworth	none
Grant	none
Ira	John, Kenneth, Gerald, Ralph, Maurice
Rinaldo	none
Irvin	
Arnold	William
Lewis	unknown
Oliver	unknown
Silas	unknown
Alfred	
Milo	Wayne, Donald
John	
Oscar	unknown
William	William
William	

William	William, Henry, Harvey
Alva	Harry, Edwin, Floyd, Olive
Charles	Roy, John, Charles

George

Milby	unknown
Benjamin	Ralph

Mortimer
No children

William T. Whipple

The sixth son of Jabez and Susan Whipple was William, who is the subject of the next chapter.

Chapter 8

William T. Whipple
From Indiana to The Great Southwest

William Theodore[7] Whipple, (Jabez[6] Jesse[5], Eleazer[4], William[3], William[2], John[1]) sixth son of Jabez, was born 10 April 1835, at Lawrenceburg, Dearborn County, Indiana, and died at Calumet, Canadian County, Oklahoma, 1 August 1908.[441] The 1850 Indiana census lists William as a 15-year-old boy living with his parents and siblings in Harrison Township, Dearborn County, about 30 miles west of Cincinnati, Ohio.[442] The 1860 census shows him as a laborer on the farm of his oldest brother, Levi, in Decatur County, Letts, Sand Creek Township, approximately 50 miles west/southwest of his place of birth.[443] Levi and his second wife, Jane, were newlyweds in 1860 and lived in dwelling 556. Their next-door neighbor was James B. Underwood, the eventual husband of Loucena Whipple. Another neighbor was their brother, Oscar Whipple, in dwelling 530. Eighteen months later, William[444] married Emily Theresa O'Donnell of Greensburg, Indiana.

William T. Whipple

William Whipple and Emily O'Donnell were married 16 February 1862. The Reverend John W. Reynolds officiated at the ceremony in Greensburg.[445] They lived for the next 13 years on their 80-acre farm about 12 miles south of Greensburg. Their only separation appears to have been for a period of approximately 18 months during which time William served as a private in the Indiana volunteers during the Civil War. While separated, Emily and her oldest child, William Junior, lived in Greensburg with her parents. She was a woman of slight stature, about five feet tall, spry with flashing blue eyes, dark reddish hair, and with an Irish temper to match. Emily lived to be but 31 years of age. Her entire adult life was apparently lived out within a dozen miles or so of Greensburg. Eight children were born to them:

i. William, born 1863; died 1899; married Jessie Beckwith
ii. Alva, born 31 July, 1866; died 2 September 1951; married Louise Elstner
iii. Ollie, born 16 April 1872; died 1942; married John Underwood
iv. Charles: born 12 February 1874; died 1 May 1944; married Marcella Raidt
v. Mary; born 25 November 1875; died 2 June 1965; married Henry Taylor

Twins of Charles and Mary died shortly after birth, and another child, Augusta, died before adulthood.

The O'Donnell Family

Emily's father was Barnard "Barney" O'Donnell of Donn-ell, County Donegal, Ireland. He was born 4 March 1804 and immigrated to the United States about 1830, where he met and married Mary Meyers in 1832 at Cincinnati, Ohio. She was born 7 April 1815, in the state of Kentucky, and died on 6 January 1897. She and Barney, who died 29 November 1878, were buried at St. Mary's Cemetery in Greensburg. This couple had 12 children, born in Cincinnati and Greensburg:[446]

i. Hugh, born 8 November 1833, died 9 February 1918; married Sarah McCallister
ii. Margaret, born 1836; died before 1892
iii. William, born 1840; married Mary Burke
iv. Catherine, born 1842; died in 1884
v. John, born 15 January 1844; died 26 October 1915; married Alice Shane
vi. Emily, born 16 December 1844; died 2 December 1875; married William Whipple
vii. Jennie, born 1846; died after 1892; married George Larson
viii. Sarah, born 1848; died before 1892
ix. Thomas, born 1849; married Mollie
x. James, born 1851; died 25 May 1925; Married Mary Huegel
xi. Rosa, born 1854; died in 1888.
xii. Jannetta, born 1856; married Frank Smith

From the dates and places of birth of the children, it is estimated that the family moved to Greensburg, Indiana about 1850. Barney and most of his children were farmers. Mary Meyers O'Donnell wrote a letter to her grandson, William Whipple Junior, in 1892.[447] In it, she mentioned the siblings of William and some of her own children:

Greensburg, Indiana
March 6, 1892

My dear grandson

I received your photograph and your___ me. I did not know before I read the letter from your sister Mary. I think you have a noble looking wife. She is stout looking lady and I think your little baby boy is as pretty as it can be and when you___ I want you to write and tell me what you have named it. Well Willie___picture the more natural do you look your Aunt Janey [Jennie O'Donnell Larson] says she thinks you look like your ma. Your Uncle George [Larson] has been dead 2 years and your Aunt Janey has 4 good boys to support the 4 other small children. Your Aunt Kate [Catherine O'Donnell] is dead 8 years. And Aunt Rosa has been dead 4 years. Out of the six girls I have only 2 left, Aunt Janey and Aunt Ket.

Well Willie I have saw very much trouble since I last saw you. I keep pretty well considering an old woman like me, 78 the 15th of April. I live in the same old house in which you lived so long ago in the time of the war. Your Uncle Hugh [O'Donnell] lives in Indianapolis and are doing well. Your Uncle John [O'Donnell] has 2 daughters married and they have 1 and 3 children a piece. Your Uncle Henry [O'Donnell] lives at __Yeto Fountain County__. His 2 oldest sons are married and have children. I can't count all my grandchildren.

I have worked awfully hard ever since I saw you last. I can't work anymore. I rent out 2 rooms of my house for $3.00 a month and that is all I have to live on. Net lost her first husband and had 3 children and now she is married again and your Uncle Jim [James O'Donnell] is married and has one child, a young lady 13 years old, a beautiful writer and scholar. I have told you all about my children as I can recollect.

Barney O'Donnell

Your sister Mary [Whipple Taylor] has been up her 2 times and I was down there [Westport, about 15 miles south of Greensburg] 1 time and if I live I shall go down there this summer. She is a beautiful girl as pretty as a peach and she is a good girl to. I have been awfully sickly here this winter, a great many died with the grippe. Your Uncle Hugh is sick now with it. Your cousin Bart Larsin [Jennie's husband] __said he would write to you and your Brother Charley [Charles T. Whipple]. Tomorrow I will write as soon as I'm able to Charley. I will send you my photograph as soon as I can. Do you know where Ollie and Alvie [Ollie Mae Whipple Underwood and Alva Whipple] is. If you see them you tell them to write to me. Well Willie I hope that God will bless you and your family and that you may prosper and do well. Oh Willie I forgot to tell you that your Cousin Chilla [child of Jennie?] Larson was married about 2 weeks ago to a nice railroader. He is a nice young man. Now Willie I want you to answer this letter. I send my best regards to your family and kiss your little boy for me.

Direct. Mary O'Donnell, Greensburg, Ind.

Amy Taylor Evans Fidler, granddaughter of Emily, recalled her mother and other older family members saying, "Emily had been born in Ohio, and that Emily's mother was red-headed, with a disposition to match, and smoked a corn cob pipe. Mrs. Fidler also recalled that one of the O'Donnell boys was redheaded and very Irish, and that the O'Donnell's were a close knit family: after Emily died, the Whipple children spent a lot of time in Greensburg with them. Seems like my mother said that her father worked for Emily's dad, and that's how they met."[448]

From the files of the United States Army Pension Office, dated 9 February 1909, Eliza Dales and Lizzie Cann completed an affidavit:

Emily Whipple Gravestone

We knew Emily Whipple, the first wife of William T. Whipple. She died Dec. 2, 1875 and was buried in Horseshoe Bend grave yard near Westport, Indiana. Both were present at the burying. That William T. Whipple married Amelia A. Pavy for his second wife. Both were present at the wedding. They know these facts by living near to said William T. Whipple. They lived two miles from him.

As seen above, subsequent to his wife's death, William married Amelia "Milly" Pavy, an in law by marriage of his daughter Mary, on 6 May 1877. W.E. Spears, a Baptist parson, joined them in marriage.[449] To this marriage was born one child:

i. Emma, born 28 March 1879; died 18 March 1906; married Walter Reed

Amelia Whipple, who was born in Cincinnati in 1844, had previously married Charles Pavy in 1860, he dying one year later of a "hot bowel" (appendicitis). They had a son, Charles, born 10 March 1861. This stepson played an important role in William's later years. On the below map of Decatur County, Indiana the letter "A" is Greensburg, the county seat where William was married. The letter "B" represents the location of Jabez' farm. The letter "C" is Bancourt (Horseshoe Bend) Cemetery where William's parents and first wife were buried. The Letter "D" is Westport.

Decatur County Indiana

William Whipple served in the Union Army during the Civil War as a private in Company H. 123rd Regiment, of the Indiana volunteers.[450] He entered a few months after the birth of his first child, entering 7 March 1864, and was honorably discharged 25 August 1865.

> The One Hundred and Twenty-third Regiment was recruited from the fourth and seventh congressional districts and rendezvoused at Greensburg during the winter of 1863-64. It was mustered into service on March 9, 1864, with John C. McQuiston as colonel. On March 18 the regiment left for Nashville, Tennessee and shortly afterward was ordered to join Sherman in his attack on Atlanta. After remaining with Sherman for most of the summer in Georgia, the regiment returned to Tennessee in pursuit of Hood and participated in the battle of Nashville, December 15-16, 1864. Within a few weeks it was taken to Washington, D.C. enroute to Fort Anderson, North Carolina, where it remained through February and March 1865. It was then taken to Newbern and later through the central part of the state until it joined Sherman at Goldsboro. It was eventually mustered out, August 25, 1865, at Raleigh, North Carolina, and left for Indianapolis on the same day, arriving there September 4.

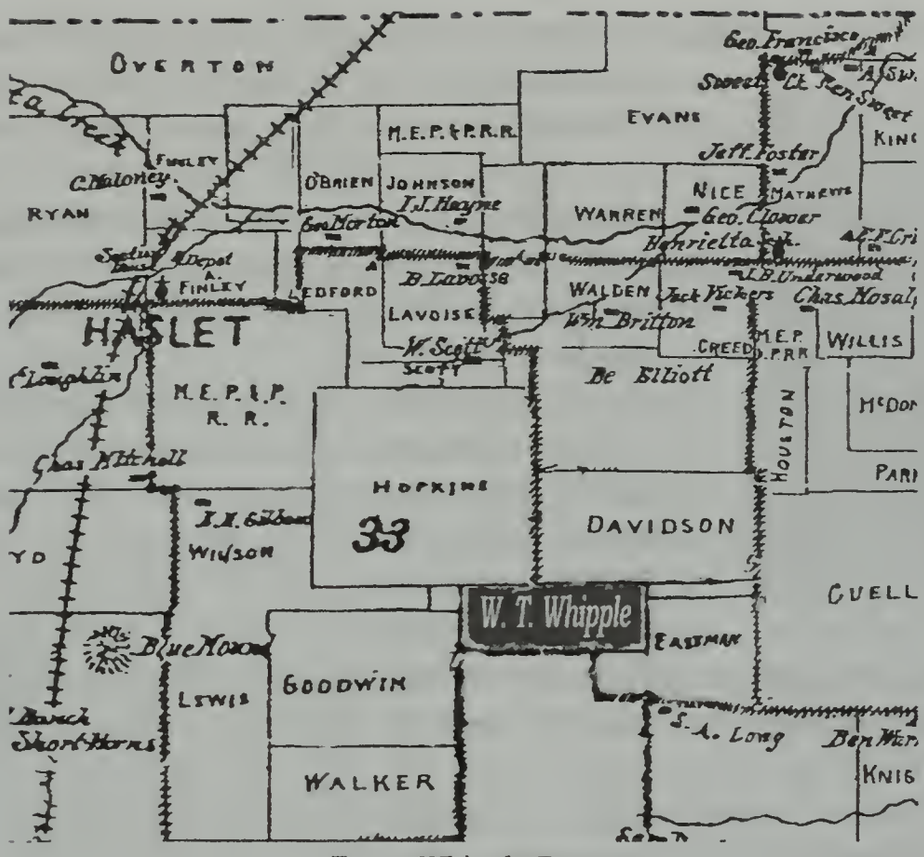
Because William was injured while in the military, we have been able to piece some of his life together, as his service injury necessitated that he apply for a military disability pension.[451] Beginning in the year 1879 and routinely at

one or two year intervals thereafter, the government required affidavits or physician's statements as to his physical condition. These were obtained from the National Archives and number close to 100 in all. By virtue of these, we learn of his move to Texas in 1882, and to Oklahoma Territory in 1896, and of his ability to provide for his family. William was 5 feet 6 inches tall, weighed around 150 pounds, had hazel eyes, and black hair as a youth. A verbatim sampling of a few these records follows:

William T. Whipple, on or about the __day of May 1864, the said while in the line of his duty at Burnt Hickory, Georgia contacted chronic diarrhea [crones disease] and was at one time so low that his recovery was thought to be impossible... Signed, W.F. Burk, Late 2nd Lt., Co. H. 123 Regt. Ind. Vols. Oct. 1880.

William T. Whipple was afflicted with sore eyes while we were on the Atlanta campaign, and he was also lame at the same time. I think that it was in the month of June 1864. Am not certain as to time however. After we reached North Carolina, he became worse, was so ill that his recovery was despaired of by his friends. I visited him about daily while he was in the hospital at Charlotte, N.C. Signed, W.F. Burk, Late 2nd Lt., and Co.H. 123 Regt. Ind. Vols. Nov. 8, 1891.

...said claimant is suffering from chronic rheumatism and during this time has complained from weakness in back and left hip. That at times he is totally disabled from performing any kind of manual labor. The said James B. Underwood knew the claimant prior to his going to war, that he went into the war a sound man, and upon his return was suffering from the above. Signed, James B. Underwood, William Meredith of Keller, Texas, 1891.



Texas Whipple Farm

From such affidavits and "declarations for the increase of an invalid pension" requests from 1879 to 1904, it is clear that he received benefits for "disabilities resulting from spinal disease, curvature, from heavy machines and exposure during the war, nasal catarrh and disease of the eyes incurred by reason of exposure and loss of sleep and camp smoke while in the service." By the year 1890, William was almost totally unable to perform manual labor. For in addition to the above infirmities, he also suffered from Brights Disease, had lost his teeth due to scurvy, and had cataracts. By the year of his death, he was receiving about $12 per month in disability benefits.

The Move to Texas

The date that William moved his family to Texas is not definitively known. It is possible, however, to make a close approximation because his last recorded pension request from Indiana was dated 30 September 1881, with the first request from Texas dated 11 May 1882. It is likely that the family took up residence in Keller, Tarrant County, Texas, in the spring of 1882. His daughter, Mary, was left in Indiana under the care of William's sister, Eliza Dales. This was to have been a temporary arrangement necessitated by Mary's severe illness at the time. In November of 1883, while attending his mother's funeral, William was to bring his daughter to Texas, but again, due to an illness, Mary could not travel. At least one other attempt proved futile. During one of these trips back to Indiana, William gave Mary a small bedside clock, which during a 1905 visit to Oklahoma, she gave to her beloved younger half-sister Emma, who was ill at the

time and died shortly thereafter. The clock passed to her mother, Amelia, and at her death in 1919, to her son Charles Pavy, who gave it to his son John. John Pavy gave the clock to the present author in 1987.[452] The Parker-Whipple Clock Company of Meriden, Connecticut manufactured the clock in the early1880s. It stands 3½ inches tall, is 2½ inches wide, and 1½ inches deep. It is presently in safe keeping in a bank vault.

William Whipple Clock

William's 80-acre farm, pictured just to the lower right of the number 33 on the map above, was approximately 1½ miles southeast of Haslett.[453] At present, I-35W cuts directly through the middle of this property just north of Exit 64. William bought this land in 1889 from the family that his oldest son married into. Moreover, William sharecropped with this same family for the first seven years of his residency in Texas. The property payment of receipt reads as follows:

> The State of Texas, County of Tarrant. Know all Men by these Presents: that I, A.J. Beckwith...for in consideration of eight hundred ($800) dollars, to me in hand paid by William T. Whipple and wife Millie Whipple, the receipt whereof is hereby acknowledged as follows: Four hundred dollars cash and the promissory note of the said William Whipple for the sum of four hundred dollars with the deed payable to my order due five years after date with interest from date at the rate of 10 percent per annum to secure the payment of which the vendors lien is hereby retained on hand hereinafter described, have sold granted, and conveyed, and by the Presents due grant, sell and convey unto the said William Whipple and Millie Whipple of the county of Tarrant in the state of Texas all that certain track of parcel of land lying and being in Tarrant County and described towit: seventy five acres of land out of the J.M. Lilly survey, lying about fifteen miles north of the city of Fort Worth and described by metes and bounds as follows: Beginning at the stone in the North line of the William McCowan survey at the S.W. corner of the Beckwith 120 acre tract out of said Lilly survey; thence north 733 varas to a stone in the south line of the E.Hopkins survey; thence east 209 varas to the S.E. corner of said survey; thence south 135 varas to a pile of stone at the S.W. corner of the H. Davidson survey; thence east 571 varas to the stake in the south line of said McCowan survey, thence west 880 varas to the place of beginning. Also, 5 acres of land lying about 13 miles north from Fort Worth...To Have and To Hold the above described premises, together with all the singular the rights and appurtenances thereto in anywise belong unto the William T. Whipple and Millie Whipple their heirs an assigns, forever. And I do hereby bind myself my heirs, executors and administrator to warrant and forever defend all the singular right said preemies unto the said William T.

Whipple and Millie Whipple their heirs an assigns against every person whomsoever lawfully claiming or to claim the same of may part thereof. Witness my hand at Forth Worth this 21 day of September A.D. 1889.[454]

The approximately fourteen years, 1882-1896, that the family resided in Texas appear to have been financially difficult. Claude W. Underwood, son of Ollie Mae, recalled his mother saying, "Some of the time all we had to eat was wild rabbit meat and syrup." Charles Whipple Senior recalled how his father, Charles T., would occasionally comment on his expertise at hunting as a boy, "My shoulder was always sore from the kick of my shotgun...." Ethel Whipple Jost noted that the Whipples sharecropped a little north of Keller, Texas until the late 1880s, at which time they bought the land from the owner. She added "Grandpa William made extra money by preaching at various Baptist churches in the neighborhood." Because of a war injury, her grandfather, William, was unable to do much physical labor, and if it had not been for her father, Alva, her uncle William Whipple Junior, and Mr. Pavy they likely could not have made it. William Junior did a lot of the work, although he had his own sharecropping to do as well. He died from high blood pressure at a young age. During these fourteen years, Augusta died. William Junior, Alva, Ollie, and Emma were married. The youngest son, Charles, went into the army.

William T. Whipple, 1905

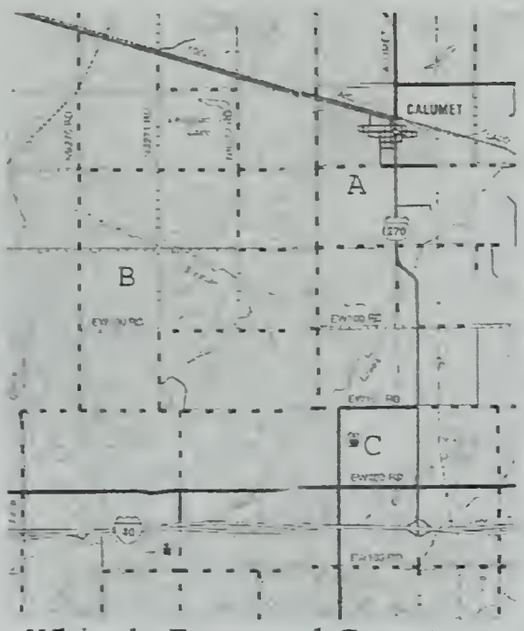
The Move to Oklahoma

William Whipple, shown above in front of his Calumet farmhouse in 1905, applied for a grant of land on 25 September 1895. This land was the northeast quarter of Section 29 in Township 13W, of Range 9W, containing 160 acres in Oklahoma Territory, approximately 200 miles north of Keller. He was granted this homestead after paying the standard fee of $14. According to the legally mandated "Homestead Proof/Testimony of Claimant" submitted 24 April 1903, William had resided continuously at that address. He further testified as follows:

> There was a house on the land when took the claim; established residence about March 10, 1896. The house was only a shell when I took claim, have improved it and built nearly all of it. It is all fenced and cross fenced, part 3, 4, and 2 wired; granary; well; orchard; cellar under house; about 45 acres broke; cistern, hen house; value of improvements about $1000. I have raised six crops and have a crop in now. The personal property I have includes household goods; horses and cattle; chicken; and farming implements.

The final patent deed, application #10417, certificate #676, was granted 1 March 1904, and signed by President Theodore Roosevelt.

Frontier life on the Oklahoma prairie, particularly for a man with William's physical disabilities, proved arduous. William, his son Charles, daughter Emma, and Charles Pavy worked hard to see to its success. It fact, it was Pavy who had been responsible for the Whipple's westward move. John Pavy commented, "My father ran away from home immediately after his mother married Mr. Whipple. He eventually located to Fort Worth, Texas. He constantly wrote to Indiana and begged his mother to move closer to him, and did make arrangements for them to move about 15 miles north to the town of Keller. Then dad decided to make the run of 1892 for free land in the newly opened Cheyenne/Arapaho lands of western Oklahoma. He made a successful run, staked a claim to 160 acres about five miles west of Fort Reno, and while in Oklahoma City recording the claim, others jumped his claim. He and the other man shot it out for several hours until the other guy gave up and left. A couple years later when an abandoned claim came open, he wrote to his mother and again begged her to move near. Eventually the Whipples took over a claim about three miles west of him. So you see, if it had not been for dad's persistence I doubt that the Whipples would have ever moved west. It's remarkable how history works out that way."[455] Gladys Pavy Miller recalled that her grandmother, Amelia Whipple, told her that they "sold their property in Texas for a small amount of money and a sewing machine, and traveled to 'The Territory' in a covered wagon with cows and horses tied on behind." William Whipple was listed in the 1900 territorial census.[456] On the map above, letter "A" is the village of Calumet.[457] The letter "B" is the precise location of William's 160-acre farm. The letter "C" is the location of Red Rock Cemetery. To get to the cemetery, turn north off I-40 at Exit 115, or Highway 270, turn west at the first traffic sign and go one mile. The cemetery and church are visible off to the right. The Pavy farm was one mile straight north of the cemetery.

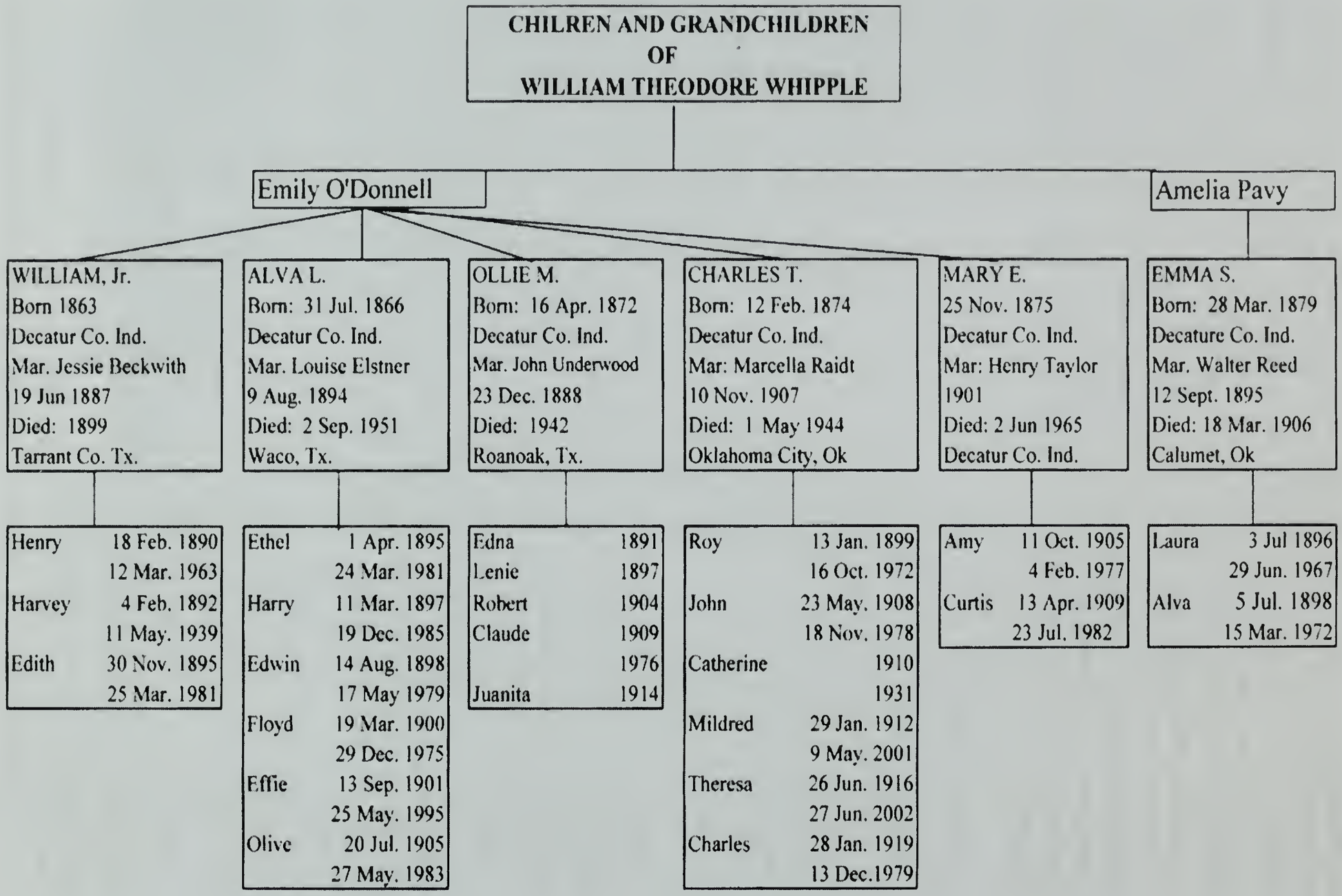


Whipple Farm and Cemetery

Downtown Calumet in 1908

William and Amelia had a major share of the responsibility of rearing two grandchildren after their daughter Emma died in 1906. William served as an elder in the Bethany Church located about one mile west of their house. This church building, which was eventually taken over by the Methodists, was still standing as late as 1990, but at that time was being used to store hay. Howard Benson, a teenager in the early 1900s,

remembered that "Brother" Whipple was a great sermonizer who really knew the Bible, and that his son, Charles, was quite a Bible scholar as well. Step-grandson of William, John Pavy, recalled that William's horse was killed by lightening about a block from the Pavy house while he was driving down what is now state Highway 270, and he recalled William's long white beard. Jesse Haydon, a long-time resident of Calumet, and, although in his 90s in 1975, still working in his own real estate office in El Reno, Oklahoma, stated that he remembered eating with the Whipples quite often. He particularly remembered Amelia's peach cobbler pies. He likewise recalled William's one-horse wagon, and the fact that he was a hunchback. Mr. Haydon and his father signed William's Last Will and Testament.


CHILREN AND GRANDCHILDREN
OF
WILLIAM THEODORE WHIPPLE
Emily O'Donnell
Amelia Pavy
WILLIAM, Jr.
Born 1863
Decatur Co. Ind.
Mar. Jessie Beckwith
19 Jun 1887
Died: 1899
Tarrant Co. Tx.
ALVA L.
Born: 31 Jul. 1866
Decatur Co. Ind.
Mar. Louise Elstner
9 Aug. 1894
Died: 2 Sep. 1951
Waco, Tx.
OLLIE M.
Born: 16 Apr. 1872
Decatur Co. Ind.
Mar. John Underwood
23 Dec. 1888
Died: 1942
Roanoak, Tx.
CHARLES T.
Born: 12 Feb. 1874
Decatur Co. Ind.
Mar: Marcella Raidt
10 Nov. 1907
Died: 1 May 1944
Oklahoma City, Ok
MARY E.
25 Nov. 1875
Decatur Co. Ind.
Mar: Henry Taylor
1901
Died: 2 Jun 1965
Decatur Co. Ind.
EMMA S.
Born: 28 Mar. 1879
Decature Co. Ind.
Mar. Walter Reed
12 Sept. 1895
Died: 18 Mar. 1906
Calumet, Ok
Henry 18 Feb. 1890
12 Mar. 1963
Harvey 4 Feb. 1892
11 May. 1939
Edith 30 Nov. 1895
25 Mar. 1981
Ethel 1 Apr. 1895
24 Mar. 1981
Harry 11 Mar. 1897
19 Dec. 1985
Edwin 14 Aug. 1898
17 May 1979
Floyd 19 Mar. 1900
29 Dec. 1975
Effie 13 Sep. 1901
25 May. 1995
Olive 20 Jul. 1905
27 May. 1983
Edna 1891
Lenie 1897
Robert 1904
Claude 1909
1976
Juanita 1914
Roy 13 Jan. 1899
16 Oct. 1972
John 23 May. 1908
18 Nov. 1978
Catherine 1910
1931
Mildred 29 Jan. 1912
9 May. 2001
Theresa 26 Jun. 1916
27 Jun. 2002
Charles 28 Jan. 1919
13 Dec.1979
Amy 11 Oct. 1905
4 Feb. 1977
Curtis 13 Apr. 1909
23 Jul. 1982
Laura 3 Jul 1896
29 Jun. 1967
Alva 5 Jul. 1898
15 Mar. 1972

Last Will and Testament

William Theodore Whipple, Senior died in his own bed 1 August 1908. S.N. Stone, M.D., wrote the physician's statement of cause of death as "general decline or senility." His obituary appeared in the *Calumet Chieftain* newspaper:[458]

> Mr. W. T. Whipple, an old and respected resident of this community died at his home near here August 1, 1908. He was born in Dearborn County, Indiana, April 10, 1835. Aged 73 years, 3 months, and 21 days. He married Mrs. Amelia Pavy in 1877. To this union was born one daughter, Mrs. Wm. Reed, who died two years ago. To a former marriage was born four children; Mrs. Mary Taylor of Indiana, Mrs. Ollie Underwood and Alva Whipple of Texas, and Charles Whipple of Chicago. Deceased leaves a wife, four children, fourteen grandchildren, one stepson, Mr. Pavy; and many friends to mourn their loss. The funeral services were conducted at the home by Rev. J.W. Booen of Calumet, Sunday, August 2nd at 3:30 P.M. The remains were interred at Red Rock Cemetery.

William's Last Will and Testament is as follows:[459]

> This is the last will and testament of me, W.T. Whipple, made this 16th day of July 1908 at my home in Canadian County as follows. I bequeath all of the land now my homestead, and all my personal property and money on hand at the time of my death to my wife Amelia Whipple, subject to the payment of my legal debts. And as the time of said Amelia Whipple's death all property real and personal shall be divided between the following heirs especially as follows to wit: Mary Taylor and Ollie Underwood my daughters and Alva Whipple and Charley Whipple my sons. Also, Alva Reed and Laurie Reed shall have their mother's share. I also bequeath to the heirs of William T. Whipple Jr., one dollar each. In addition, I leave my wife as Executrix and guardian for Alva and Laurie Reed, and Charles Pavy as her assistant. Signed and delivered in presents of witnesses hereto attached this 16th day of July 1908. Witnesses: Jesse Haydon, and W. W. Haydon, and Wren Moores.

Amelia Whipple lived on the homestead for 11 more years, years that were spent in taking care of her orphaned grandchildren. Her obituary appeared in the *Calumet Chieftain* newspaper:[460]

> As a result of a fall a week ago, Mrs. W.T. Whipple died at her home in Calumet, Monday night. In her death the community loses one of its best and most beloved citizens. Amelia Ann Taylor was born in Cincinnati, Ohio, Oct 12, 1840, moved to Indiana where she was married to C.T. Pavy, March 11, 1860. To this union was born one son C.T. Pavy of this place. The father died July 8, 1861. She was married then to W.T. Whipple May 5, 1877. To this union was born one daughter who died March 18, 1906. The deceased who has lived in Red Rock community for the past 24 years, moved to Calumet about a year ago. She leaves a son, C.T. Pavy, two grandchildren, Alva Reed, and Mrs. E.H. Hyde and a stepson Alva Whipple.

Funeral services were held this afternoon at 2: 30 at the M.E. Church and the body will be laid to rest beside her last husband in the Red Rock Cemetery.

William T. Whipple Junior

William T.[8] Whipple (William[7], Jabez[6], Jesse[5], Eleazer[4], William[3], William[2], John[1]) was born in 1863. He was approximately 18 or 19 years old when he moved with his parents to north Texas. Five years later, 19 June 1887, he married Jessie Beckwith in Denton County, Texas, the Reverend B.F. Hussey, a Baptist minister, presided at the ceremony. They were parents to three children:

i. Henry, born 18 February 1890; died 12 March 1963; married Daisy
ii. Harvey, born 4 February 1892; died 11 May 1939; married Grace McGee
iii. Edith, born 30 November 1995; died 25 March 1981; married Claudis Neel

William Whipple Junior, who is photographed opposite with his brother, Alva, died between the month of April 1899, when he last signed a deed, and December of 1899, when his widow married J.A. Bechtel.[461] William and Jessie purchased 82½ acres of land in Tarrant County, near the land purchased by his father and mother, on the waters of the Big Bear Creek about 12½ miles north of Ft.Worth from Ella Beckwith, executrix of the estate of Anna and Henry Beckwith (Ella's parents) in May of 1889.[462] Thirty-one years later, at the occasion of the disposition of the estate of their grandfather, William Whipple Senior, when his wife (and executrix) died in 1920, Henry was living at San Benito, Texas; his wife was Daisy. Edith was married to Leon C. Neel of Ozan, Arkansas, and Harvey and his wife Grace, were living in Ft. Worth, Texas. Each child was willed one dollar. Helen Whipple Towles of Fort Worth, Texas, provides the following details:

William and Alva Whipple

It was believed that Grandpa William Whipple Jr., or 'Willie' as they called him, died while out in a wheat field of unknown causes. He was buried at Sweet's Chapel Cemetery about one-quarter mile west of Aunt Ollie Underwood's farm. Unfortunately, the family could not afford a headstone, or, it could be that they were afraid of grave robbers who were very prevalent at the time. Jessie married J.A. Bechtel within less than six months of William's death against the family's wishes. That's why great grandpa Whipple willed the three children only one dollar each. He didn't want Mr. Bechtel to get his hands on the money.

My uncle, Henry T. Whipple, was married twice. They had three children; Kenneth, who was killed in the WWII; Doyle, who was a deputy sheriff in Downey, California, and; Anita, who married Merlin Henry of West Covina, California. Uncle Henry resided in Los Angeles, California, moving there from Ft. Worth, Texas in the early 1920s. He was a long time employee of the Southern Pacific Railroad within the city of Los Angeles. As far as I know he was not affiliated with any church, but was active in the Masonic Lodge. He died in Los Angeles March 12, 1963 of lung cancer.

My father, Harvey C. Whipple, was born February 4, 1892 in Keller, Texas. He married my mother, Grace McGee, May 26, 1919. They had two daughters. Helen, born August 19, 1927 at Ft. Worth, married Robert Towles and we have three children, Randall, Donald, and Carolyn. The second child of Harvey was Mary, born September 25 1929, who married Robert Sitton and they have three children, Marylynne, Robert, and Michael.

Harvey Whipple was employed by the city of Ft. Worth street department from 1923 until his death in 1939, at the age of 47. He died of cerebral hemorrhage after suffering from high blood pressure for years. He was a member of the Methodist Church. His formal education probably ended by the fourth or fifth grade, but he was a skillful in repairing mechanical things. He was also talented at growing flowers and landscaping. Neighbors referred to his yard as looking like it had been manicured. Although living in the city he kept a cow, chickens, ducks, and goats as his early roots living on a farm were evident. After Henry moved to California, I don't think the three children were ever together after that. Henry came from California and Edith from Illinois for my dad's funeral in 1939. I think now how much more it would have meant had they been able to come before he died.[463]

Randolph Neel of Van Nuys, California describes the life of his grandmother, Edith Whipple Neel.

My grandmother, Edith Mirtie Neel, was born November 1895 in Keller, Texas to Willie Whipple Junior and Jessie Beckwith Whipple. Jessie's parents, Henry and Anna Beckwith brought the family to Texas in the early 1880s from central Illinois where Jessie was born in 1870. Edith, or Ada, as she was usually called, married my grandfather, Claudis L. Neel, September 26, 1916 in Colorado City, Texas. Her mother, who she loved very much, died 2 years later, also in Colorado City. The Neels had come to the American colonies in the early 1700s, moving from South Carolina in the early 1800s to Alabama, Mississippi in 1840 and then to Arkansas.

Ada was a very hard working housewife, always doing work outside the home to bring in the extra money needed to feed and clothe her children. She did everything from domestic work to taking in laundry to cotton picking in the Texas heat, which she described to me in a firm way as 'hard, hard work.' She was a remarkable cook, always having her children's individual favorite type of fruit pie baked fresh when they walked in the door. Special

occasions, of course, would see an even greater variety and quantity produced from her kitchen.

Ada and Lon had 11 children: Woodrow, Margaret, Harvey, Marvin, Evelyn, William, Jack, Harold Helen, Thomas, and Marthellen. She passed away March 25, 1981 in Carlinville, Illinois and is buried there, next to Lon, very warmly remembered by her family.[464]

Alva L. Whipple

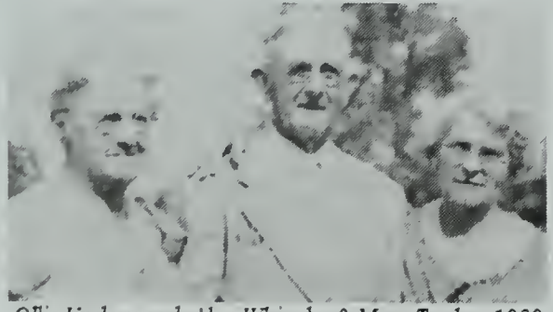
Alva[8] Whipple (William[7], Jabez[6], Jesse[5], Eleazer[4], William[3], William[2], John[1]) second son of William and Emily was born in Decatur, County, Indiana 31 July 1866, and died 2 September 1951 at Waco, Texas. He married Mattie Walker, who died in childbirth in 1889. He then married Louise Elstner at Waco, Texas 9 August 1894. To this union six children were born:

i. Ethel, born 1 April 1895; died 24 March 1981; married Arthur Jost
ii. Harry, born 11 March 1897; died 19 December 1985; married Mary Lopez
iii. Edwin, born 14 August 1898; died 17 May 1979; married Edna Smith
iv. Floyd, born 19 March 1900; died 29 December 1975; married Grace Thomas
v. Effie, born 13 September 1901; died 25 May 1995; married Edgar Schroeder
vi. Olive, born 20 July 1905; died 27 May 1983; married Louise Ilderton

The following 1939 newspaper article lists several of Alva's relatives that were and will be described in this history. The photograph of Alva and his two sisters was taken at that reunion.[465]

Wacoan reunited with kin to end 58 year absence. A vacation trip which united him with his family in Westport, Ind., after a 58 year absence was experienced by A.L. Whipple of 124 Gurley Street, who has returned to Waco. Whipple, a local citizen during his entire residence in Texas, was joined by his sister, Mrs. Ollie Underwood and son, of Roanoke, Texas. Mrs. Whipple and her granddaughter, Helen Schroeder, accompanied the party to Coffeyville, Kan., where they visited their son and uncle, O.J. Whipple.

The Whipple reunion was celebrated, July 30, at the home of Mr. And Mrs. J.M. Cann and Mr. And Mrs Carvel Underwood in Westport, Indiana. Mr. Whipple's sister, Mrs. Mary Taylor, present at the reunion, had not seen her brother since she was three years of age. The affair took the form of an all-day picnic with a basket luncheon served at noon. Attending besides the Texans were: Mr. And Mrs. Clarence Whipple and daughter of Springfield, Ohio; Mrs. Bell Kyle of El Dorado, Ohio; Mr. and Mrs. Will Whipple; Mr and Mrs Russell Suttle. Mr. And Mrs. Floyd Arnold and son, James Whipple; Raymond Addison, all of Connersville;


Ollie Underwood, Alva Whipple, & Mary Taylor, 1939

Ben Creech; Herschel Johnson; Mr and Mrs James Parker and daughter, Mary and son Joseph; Mr and Mrs. Harry Bridges of Elwood; Mrs. Mary Taylor; Mr. And Mrs. John Evans and daughters; Mrs. Eva Heaclin of Fairmont; George Fear of Marion; Maurice Nicholson of Fairmont; and Mr. And Mrs. William Seeley of Swazee, Ind.[466]

The photograph below of Alva's family was taken in May of 1934. Those standing from the left are: Edward, Harry, Effie, Ethel, Floyd, and Olive. Seated are Alva and Louise. The children of Alva and Louise have many memories of them, which they have graciously shared. Effie Schroeder, their oldest daughter, recalled that her father moved to Waco around 1890 as a very disillusioned young man. He had recently lost his wife and child at birth. He was working on a ranch, in a cow lot, which was muddy and sloppy and he fell right down in the middle of all that slush. He made up his mind at that time to leave and come to Waco. He drove a mule streetcar for several years, and then was an engineer for the power company. He later became the engineer for Baylor University, also superintendent of buildings and grounds for a while, until he went into the dairy business for himself.

Alva Whipple Family, 1934

Alva's oldest son, Harry, states that his dad came to Ft. Worth, Texas in about 1882, at the age of 16. He worked as a cowboy in and around Ft. Worth. His first real job was driving a mule streetcar. Then he moved to Waco to work at the power plant until 1902. Then he took a job at Baylor University until 1922, at which time he started a dairy with two cows and increased his stock to a successful dairy until retirement in 1932.

Mildred Peters, a granddaughter, recalled that Alva bought a farm before he retired, and also worked his garden and the few acres where his home was. He was never idle and was in good health until his last few years. The farm had several pecan trees. "He and granny went to the movies every Saturday night, and it was always a treat for me to spend the night with them. He loved to listen to the radio and later to the television, and they traveled often. He was so precise and punctual in his ways that it was said that you could set your watch by him as he delivered the milk each morning as he passed the courthouse at exactly 7 a.m. They were Baptist and when my mother was young, she remembered the preacher coming for Sunday dinner. He and I used to talk about the Lord in his last years."

Claude Underwood, Alva's nephew, stated that he remembered as a boy that Alva visited them on several occasions. It seemed that he was trying to locate the burial site of his first wife. John Whipple, another nephew, recalled several boyhood visits to the Alva Whipple dairy, and remembers playing with

the children. Charles Whipple Senior remembered that he had heard of his uncle Alva all of his life, and had sent letters, but had never met him. He sent Alva a telegram when his father Charles (Alva's brother) died, and Alva wrote back saying that because of bad health and the fact that he could not see well anymore, he could not attend the funeral. That's the last time the family heard from him.

Alva Leonidas Whipple died at the age of 85 on 2 September 1951. His wife died 20 February 1964, and was buried next to him in the Oakwood Cemetery, Waco, Texas. The following information on Alva's children and grandchildren was taken from biographical forms completed by each member of the family:[467]

Ethel Whipple Jost

The Whipple's oldest child, Ethel, married Arthur Jost, 18 July 1913. She was born 1 April 1895 and died 24 March 1981. Their three children lived and died in the Dallas, Texas area. Arthur, who was called by the nickname "son" was a dairyman and carpenter. He died in August of 1956. Ethel stated that along with the activities normal to wives and mothers, her 81 years of life were filled with happiness, concern for others, and confidence in the Lord. Arthur and Ethel's children are:

i. Edwin, born 1915; died 1939; married Lorrie Keele

ii. Leonard, born 28 February 1918; married Willa Dodson

Their children are:

Gary, born 25 April 1941; married Phyllis Thomas

Judith, born 3 November 1942; married Jerry Gallagher

Janet, born 11 March 1946; married Mike Gallagher

Linda, born 16 March 1948; married Robert Dickens

iii. Mildred, born 3 September 1919; died 1990 married Brownie Peters

Their children are:

John, born 12 March 1942; married Judith Shivers

Susan, born4 July 1943; married Malcolm MacLeod

Brownie, born 18 September 1946; married Charlotte Cullum

Stephen, born 24 September 1947; married Linda Callison

Harry Whipple

The second child was Harry Lee Whipple, who married Mary Louise Lopez, 13 March 1919. He was born 11 March 1897 and died 19 December 1985. Harry worked as a manager over newsagents on trains, but for most of his life was in his own sewing machine businesses in several states, but mostly in El Paso, Texas. Harry had two sons:

i. Harry, born 1 January 1921; married Leona Machala

Their chidren are:

Harry III, born 23 October 1951;married Lory Redden, Betsy Duncan and Diane Thorgeson
James L., born 10 February 1954; married Mary Jean Virgil
Mary Ann, born 6 October 1966

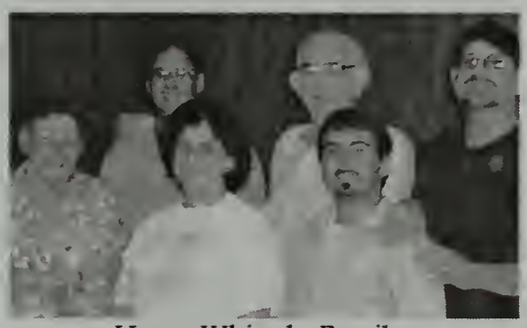
ii. *James, born 7 August 1922; died 1 April 1989; married Jane Smith*
Their children are:
James C., born 30 October 1949; married Annele Jones and Connie Bartlet
Kenneth L., born 8 March 1950; married Jeannie Leonard
Larry A., born 7 July 1954; married Debora Searcy and Martha Barncastle

The photograph below is of the Harry Whipple Junior family. In the front row are Leona, Mary Ann, and Bryan. In the back row are James, Harry Junior, and Harry III. Harry Junior and his wife Leona wrote the following narrative about Harry's parents, themselves, their children, and his brother James.

My father left home at the age of 13, riding freight trains to, as he put it, "see the world." He even worked in Old Mexico as a roustabout drilling oil wells. He then entered the Navy, stationed at Treasure Island out of San Francisco during the First World War.

After the war, he was engaged by the Interstate Company as a newsagent selling items like newspapers, sandwiches, drinks, candy, gifts, pillows, etc. This allowed him to meet and marry a "Harvey Girl" named Mary Louise Lopez, 13 March 1919. Around 1921, dad was made manager of operations in Houston, Texas. The reason I remember is that mom would take Jimmy and I to the office in a Model T Ford, and we would take the monkey that dad kept at home. His name was "Edgy" and he would jump onto the hood of the car when we were at the A&W Root Beer stand, he loved Root Beer. We kept him on a leash because he sure could bite.

Shortly after that, dad returned to Waco, Texas to help run the family dairy. Grandpa and grandma Whipple, Alva and Louise, would take my brother and I to the Dr. Pepper plant every Saturday for a 5 cent bottle of the soft drink, which as few people are aware, originated in Waco. Then afterward we would all go to the movie house for15 cents. About that time, grandpa bought a farm loaded with pecan trees. My aunt Ethel Whipple Jost and her family ran the farm for him. But before grandpa had the dairy, he worked for the city of Waco driving trolley cars. He also was a custodian at Baylor University.


Harry Whipple Family

In time, dad became the owner of successful sewing machine businesses the states of Arizona, New Mexico, and Texas. While in Arizona in the 1930s, he was the only white man allowed on the Indian Reservations. He sold and repaired sewing machines out of his 1930 Chevy. He would pick up the machines, fix them, and return them only to receive a small portion of the

balance due (perhaps 25 cents on the dollar). He was a very compassionate person and well liked.

Later, he ran the Charlie Clark Restaurant in Pinetop, Arizona. Then in the 1960s, he worked at the Chaparral Hotel as a bartender. Finally, back in El Paso, Texas, he owned a successful sewing machine business for over 20 years. My mother Mary Louise was supportive in all of the different ventures undertaken during their 66 years together. She was the backbone of her family. She died 13 April 1985 and dad soon after, 21 December 1985.

I fondly remember working on grandpa Whipple's dairy. My brother and I helped milk cows, feed chickens, ride horses, feed pigs, work on the tractor, pick vegetables, and climb trees. We had to go on the delivery route and deliver milk all over town every morning and evening. Dad took over the business for a while moving it across town where he had rented a 100 acre farm.

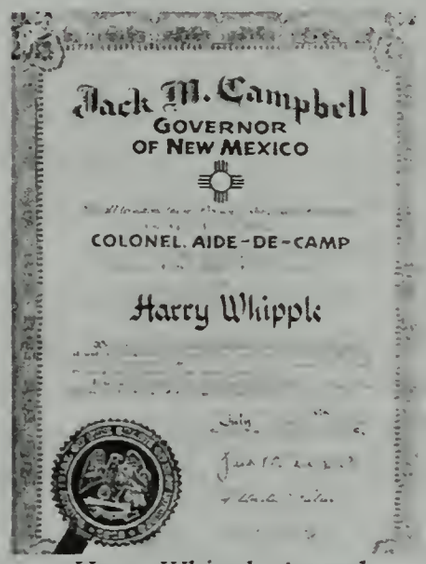
During the Depression years, we lived in several states finally moving to Mesa, Arizona. This is where Jimmy, my brother, and I graduated from high school. At 21 years of age I joined the Navy. I was an electrician on a Sub Chaser for three and a half years, traveling mostly in the Pacific. Then I was assigned to a destroyer, the James E. Keyes. I was discharged two days before Christmas in 1945.

After the war I joined my dad in his office at the Interstate Company in Houston. Then I had the opportunity to travel on a ship, the General Gordon, which went from San Francisco to Honolulu, Guam, Manila, Hong Kong, Shanghai, and Yokahama. I had the concessions on the ship and was out for six weeks at a time, but traded it for the newsstand in El Paso, Texas because I planned to be married. Through a mutual friend I had met Leona Machala, who worked at the Peden Iron and Steel Company in Houston as a secretary.

Leona and I were married 1 May 1949 and immediately moved to El Paso where we both worked at the Union Depot. While there we had two children: Harry III and James Louis. Fortunately we had the opportunity to become involved in several business enterprises over the next several years. We owned the Loop Drive-in in El Paso, while I was a partner in a jewelry store, Mart Jewelers. We moved to Ruidoso, New Mexico and built Whipple's Drive-in Restaurant, curio store, archery shoot, with living quarters. While living there from 1961 to 1965 we also built a shopping center on the property. Soon afterward, several investors were building a first class hotel at Ruidoso Downs Race Track, where I oversaw the bookkeeping. After we bought the hotel, we added an ice-skating rink and a convention center. The business handled many large conventions, bringing in over 50,000 people one summer and received the Governor's State Award for most conventions in New Mexico. The state of New Mexico asked me to serve on the Tourism Board since we brought the most tourists into the state. In 1965, then Governor

Campbell presented me with an award. Leona wrote a book, which was published in 2004, about all of this entitled *The Chaparral Hotel*. As an interesting aside, my wife went to a doctor in Ruidoso and was told that she had a sinus infection...nine months later she had a baby girl, Mary Ann.

We then moved to Truth or Consequences, New Mexico and ran a restaurant and the concessions at the docks at Elephant Butte Lake. Eventually we moved back to El Paso and became involved in the manufacturing of cultured marble products as H & L. This was followed by the production of whirlpool bathtubs and spas as "Whipple Enterprises, Inc.," a business that has lasted for over 40 years. Due to health reasons and being 84 years old, I finally retired. My wife and I have loved every moment of our different enterprises, and our wedded bliss of over 56 years. One can say that we were true entrepreneurs providing for the entire family and having fun along the way.



Harry Whipple Award

Our oldest son, Harry III or "Chuck" as we call him, worked in all of the different businesses in which we were involved, as did all of the children. He has two sons: Bryan who works for a company in Florida that makes ocean-surveying robots, and Jake who lives in Boston. Chuck who lives in Ruidoso, New Mexico loves the mountains and cold weather. He manufactured marble spas and tubs, and invented the closed mold process. He has had his own companies: C & D Marble, Fibermold, and Exotic Spas. Our son, James, was president of Whipple's Enterprises, Inc. He was also a partner in the J & M Company, and owned Crystal Enterprises. He currently lives in El Paso. Mary Ann, like her brothers, worked in all aspects of our businesses, and was a partner in J & M Company and K & M Company. She has a degree in accounting and still continues to work and does whatever needs to be done, plus helps take care of my wife and me.

With assistance from relatives, Harry Junior and Leona wrote the following narrative about James Olive Whipple, his brother, who was born 7 August 1922 in San Antonio, Texas. He died in 1989 in El Paso.

My brother James, or Jimmy as we called him, spent his childhood on our grandparent's dairy. We worked hard, but had fun singing on the back of the milk wagon as we delivered milk. Jimmy was very athletic and great in sports. After moving many times with the family, he graduated from high school in Mesa, Arizona. He then worked at a lumber mill with me before the two of us joined the Navy. Jimmy was assigned to an Aircraft Carrier, The Gambier Bay, which was sunk during the battle of the Leyte Gulf, just off the Philippine Islands. He was in the water for two days before a PC Boat picked him up. He was lucky because sharks ate many of his shipmates.

When he left the Navy in 1945 he went to Houston, where mom and dad lived at the time, and worked for the Interstate Company along with dad and me. It was there that he married Jane Smith and had three sons: James, Kenneth and Larry.

Jimmy followed us to Ruidoso where he ran the bowling alley and the Peppermint Bar Soda Fountain for us. He eventually became the accountant for the Chaparral Hotel. When we moved back to El Paso Jimmy came with us. He kept the books for the family businesses and got divorced. He died of diabetes 1 April 1989.

The oldest son of Jimmy and Jane was James Craig Whipple. Upon returning from a tour in Vietnam, he lived in Ruidoso, New Mexico and had a son names James Paul. He moved to El Paso and worked for H & L Marble for a while but moved back to Ruidoso. He divorced and married Connie and had another son, Cutter, who is big into rodeo. Jim Paul now lives in Cloudcroft, New Mexico and has a son. Craig has his own construction company in Ruidoso. Jimmy's second son, Kenneth, also worked for H & L Marble driving semi trucks delivering marble all over the nation. He has a son Paul who lives in Florida with his family. He also has a daughter, Wylla, who lives in Little Rock, Arkansas with her husband and children. Kenny now owns Noisy Water Spas, a store that sells and services spas and hot tubs in Ruidoso. The youngest son of Jimmy and Jane is Larry. After graduating from high school he joined the El Paso fire department. He received his degree in psychology and worked his way up to Chief and retired. He now works for the Western Refinery in El Paso. He has two sons: James, who was in the Navy and now lives in El Paso and Raymond Leigh who is currently in the Navy.[468]

Edwin Whipple

Alva's second son was Edwin Whipple, who was, like his brothers, a sewing machine salesman in several states. He was born 13 August 1898 and died 17 May 1979. He married Edna Smith 21 June 1930 and had two sons:

i. Edwin Junior, born 30 May 1932; died 1976; married Patricia
ii. Robert, born 3 August 1934; married Jean Bright

Edwin Junior was a sewing machine salesman, who was killed in a fire involving his store in Dallas, Texas in 1976. Robert is a career Naval officer.

Floyd Whipple

Floyd C. Whipple married Grace Thomas in Albuquerque, New Mexico 28 November 1927. He was born 19 March 1900 and died 29 December 1975. Floyd and Grace moved to Flagstaff, Arizona where Floyd was manager of a Singer Sewing Machine Company office. He became owner of a clothing store named "Whipples of Winslow" a few years later at Winslow, Arizona. He served two

terms as Winslow's Mayor. Floyd and Grace had three children: Vance, who worked in the family business; Mary Hawk, who was a housewife in Dallas, Texas; and Tom, who is a marketing executive in Denver, Colorado.

i. Floyd Vance, born 18 August 1928; died 6 August 1998; married Ursula Stowell
Their children are:
Garry, born 24 December 1974; married Debra Jones
Lauri, born 1 July 1957; married Kevin Benson
Cynthia, born 14 September 1961; married David Hale
Curtis, born 13 July 1965; married Kimberly Arasim
Floyd's first wife died and he married Peggy Nichols: Their daughter is:
Coty, born 26 January 1970
ii. Mary Lou, born 28 April 1933; died 1 May 2005; married Orville Hawk.
Their children are:
Mark, born 30 April 1955; married Susan Donaldson
Scott; born 5 December 1956; married Audry Holmes
Kevin, born 2 November 1959
Jonathan, born 20 August 1965; married Laura Lynch
Jeffery, born 1 September 1966
iii. Thomas, born15 February 1937; married Betty White.
Their children are:
Thomas, born15 February 1961; married Kimberly Murray and Cheryl Lawson
Rory, born7 March 1964; married Marilee Smith
Burke, born12 October 1967; married Elizabeth Morris
Roxanne, born 26 July 1958; died 1966

In the below photo of the family are from left to right: Vance, Grace, Thomas, in his mother's arms, Mary Lou, and Floyd. The photograph was taken near Flagstaff, Arizona in 1938. Thomas wrote the following account of his family, his father, and his grandfather.

We lived over 1000 miles from my paternal grandparents, Alva and Louise Whipple, and that made it difficult to establish a close relationship with them. Sensing that, and their advancing age, my father sent me on the bus to visit them in July of 1950. They lived on their little farm outside of Waco, and for me, that visit was very special. Grandmother would let me help her in their little garden and then she would fix a "farm house" meal of fresh corn on the cob, green beans, okra, summer squash, sliced tomatoes and newly baked corn bread. To this day, these are my favorite foods. Grandfather let me do something my own father would not trust me to do. He taught me how to shoot his twenty-two rifle, and then let me go hunting in the woods nearby. That was an awesome experience for this thirteen year old. Grandpa died one year later, so I will always cherish that time I had to

Floyd Whipple Family, 1938

spend with him. I also have the privilege of being his namesake and was given his name of Alva as my middle name.

My father, Floyd C. Whipple, married my mother Grace Thomas in Albuquerque, New Mexico when she applied for and worked part time at his Singer Sewing Machine Agency. They later moved in succession to Flagstaff, Jerome, Bisbee, Phoenix, and then Winslow, Arizona as an agent for Singer Sewing Machine Company. My parents had three children: Vance, Mary Lou (Hawk) and myself. Vance passed away in Heber, Arizona in 1998, and my sister Mary Lou passed away in Dallas, Texas in 2005. During the Second World War, sewing machines became scarce and dad started selling women's clothing and soon became a very successful clothing merchant. The store had various names, but eventually became "Whipple's of Winslow." I bought the business from him in 1960, and ten years later, my brother Vance joined me in that business. It grew to become a small regional junior department store chain "Whipple's Family Fashion Centers" in northeastern Arizona. It was sold in 1983.

Thomas A. Whipple Family, 2004

My father was very civic-minded starting Winslow's annual Christmas parade in 1950. The parade is now in its 60th year and attracts thousands of people each year from the surrounding area. He also served as Mayor of Winslow for two terms (1949-1952). I had the privilege of following in my father's footsteps as Mayor of Winslow being elected to three terms (1968-l974). Since 1984, I have operated my own firm, Thomas A. Whipple, Inc., a retail marketing company located in Centennial, Colorado, serving retail clients throughout the west and southwest.

I married Betty Jo White of Phoenix, Arizona, August 3, 1957, and we have four children: (1) Thomas A. Whipple, Jr., who lives in Jacksonville, Florida with his wife Kimberly (Murray). They have two children, Jacob and Megan. He has three children from a previous marriage, Jeremy, now attending the University of Louisiana at Lafayette; Brittany, attending Louisiana State University at Baton Rouge; and Travis, who is still in high school. (2) Rory, an attorney lives in Mesa, Arizona. He is married to Marilee (Smith). They have five children Zachary, Erica, Roxanne, Brandon, and Jessica. All are still in school.

Zachary is attending Arizona State University in Tempe, Arizona. (3) Burke lives in Phoenix, Arizona and is an accounting executive with America West Airlines. He married Elizabeth (Morris) and they have three children Chandler, Garrison, and Hudson. All are living at home. (4) Roxanne (deceased). She died in a car-pedestrian accident in front of our home in Winslow in 1966 at the age of seven. My wife of thirty-four years passed away in 1993, and I am now married to my second wife, Cheryl (Lawson) of Mesa Arizona. She has six children from a previous marriage, so combined we have a family of ten children and twenty-seven grand children. We have now been married eleven years and live in Centennial, Colorado.

Florence Effie Whipple Schroeder

Florence Effie, the youngest Whipple daughter, lived and died in Waco, Texas. She was born 13 September 1901 and died 25 May 1995. Her husband, Edgar Schroeder, was secretary/treasurer of the Waco Hardware Company, and Effie was a homemaker. They were married 25 December 1922 and had two daughters:

i. LaVonne, born 18 June 1923; married Jack Cayot
ii. Helen, born 25 July 1929; died 18 May 1995; married Bill Story

Lavonne married Jack Cayot, whose occupation was an engineer, which led them to live in several states, ending in California. They had two children: Leslie and Jackson.

Helen married Bill Story who was a land developer in Dallas, Texas, and formerly president of a mortgage company. They had three children: Mark, Linda, and Alan. Dr. Mark Story, a Waco medical doctor, wrote the following of his grandparents:

> My grandmother, Effie Schroeder, had five grandchildren and I was the oldest by 18 months. As a small child, I could not say the word grandmother; my attempt came out "gommie." This name stuck, and all the ensuing grandkids called her "gommie" for the rest of her life.
>
> Grandfather Schroeder was referred to as either Ed or "granddaddy Ed." We spent so many memorable afternoons under the trees in their backyard eating watermelon or watching grandfather cook barbecued chicken on his grill. He was a master of outdoor cooking and I have never tasted better.
>
> Grandmother prepared wonderful meals with fresh vegetables and always included either a dewberry gobbler or peach cobbler for dessert. Grandfather Ed farmed a small acreage on south 3rd Street with his

brother-in-law, Sam Gardner, which provided for a full refrigerator throughout the winter months.

When I returned to Waco from our home in Dallas to attend Baylor University, I spent many afternoons at my grandparents home studying or simply trying to get away from the hectic college life. Grandmother always had words of encouragement, and lots of food available for a growing boy, as well as a roast with all the trimmings on the weekends.

Grandmother was an extraordinary bridge player, and played frequently when she was younger continuing until she was in her 80s. She was awarded Life Master in bridge, which I understand is quite an accomplishment. She also enjoyed traveling, and for several years after my granddad had retired they traveled with a travel trailer. Along with her bridge, Gommie also would sit in the evenings and knit while she and Ed watched Bonanza and Gunsmoke, which were two of their favorite programs during that era. I am grateful that I still have several of the Afghans that she created during those years.

After grandfather Ed died, grandmother would work crossword puzzles or play solitaire at the breakfast room table. She was moved to Ridgecrest Retirement Center and Nursing Home where she spent the last three years of her life. She died at the age of 94, just one week before my mother died from lung cancer.

Olive James Whipple

Olive James Whipple Senior, or O.J., as he was always called, was in the sewing machine sales and service business for over 50 years, at the time of his death in Houston, Texas. He was born 20 July 1905 and died 27 May 1983. His wife, Louise Ilderton, whom he married 6 December 1925, was the daughter of William and Sophia Bergman. She died 10 March 1994, and was buried next to her husband in Forest Park Cemetery in Houston. To this couple, two daughters and a son were born:

i. Jeanne, born 26 May 1929; married Arthur Shaw
Their children are:
Larry, born 12 April 1954; married Lesley Arnold
Bruce, born12 July 1956, married Deborah Pearce

ii. Jerrie, born 14 January 1933; died 28 March 2002; married William Wilson
Their children are:
James, born 16 July 1952;married Robin Cook
John, born 13 October 1954; married Sonya Cervantes and Lisa Alexander
Robert, born 15 February 1957; married Judy Lyles
William, born 28 July 1959; married Susan Kress

iii. Olive James Junior, born 20 October 1934; married Nancy Dunford.
Their children are:
Terri, born 11 August 1958; married Carl Harry

Mark, born 11 November 1960; married Marjorie Garcia
Joseph, born 2 February 1962; married Windy Yi

The photograph below is of the Olive James Whipple family. Standing from left to right are: Olive Junior, Nancy, Arthur, Jeanne, Jerrie, and William. Seated are Louise and Olive.

I, Jeanne, am the first-born child of Olive and Louise Whipple. My father and mother met as teenagers. My mother was a baby sitter for my father's brother Harry's children, Harry Junior and James. When they fell I love and wanted to get married, my grandmother, Sophie, forbid it until my mother became 16. She became 16 on 9 October 1925. He was 20 years old when they married two months later on 9 December 1925. I didn't arrive until almost four years later on 26 May 1929. They were beginning go believe that they weren't going to be able to have children. Another four years passed before my sister, Jerrie, arrived on 14 January 1933, and then my brother O.J. Junior arrived on 20 October 1934.

My father was a short man, only 5' 4" tall. I was born during the depression years and we were taught to be frugal. We kids were regularly told "get up and go turn off that light you left on" and "turn off the water in you want but eat what you take." Daddy was a strict disciplinarian and my the tub" when it was about 2 - 3 inches deep. We also were told, "Eat all mother was the gentle one. He also had a tender side, especially when his grandchildren came along. He was jovial and full of corny jokes. He nicknamed all my friends--Frances was Franswah, Lila was Lilacs, etc.

Olive Whipple Family

Daddy was in the business of selling and repairing machines nearly all of his life. He was a manager for Singer Sewing Machine Company for a number of years early in his career. During World War II, when metal went to war and there were no sewing machines, he went to trade school to become a chipper and worked at Brown Shipyard. After that, he worked in Sears Sewing Machine Department for a short period. He was a newsagent on trains for a while and finally decided to go into the sewing machine business for himself. He did well and continued working up to nearly the time of his death. He died of complications of prostate cancer in 1983 and my mother Louise, died 10 March 1984.

Because daddy was a manager for Singer Sewing Machine Company and was transferred so often, by the time I was seven years old, I had lived in San Antonio Texas, Corpus Christi, Texas, Silver City, New

Mexico, El Paso, Texas, Springfield, Missouri, and Coffeyville, Kansas. When I was about 10, our family moved to Houston, Texas. I didn't have much opportunity to really know grandpa Alva and grannie Louise up until that time (1939/40).

After that we made many trips to Waco. Their dairy farm was about one-fourth mile from the Brazos River so when we went to their house for weekends, my brother, sister and I would always get very excited when we crossed the river bridge because we could see the top of grandpa's red barn. Than meant that we were almost there.

My sister and I were named after our grandfather...Jeanne Alva and Jerrie Lee. We spent many happy times there. When we visited Waco other family members would be there. Uncle Edwin, Aunt Ethel and their families would drive down from Dallas. Aunt Effie's family lived in Waco and they would also come over. I especially loved getting to spend Saturday night with my favorite cousin, Helen Schroeder. Uncle Harry's family lived in Waco for a time but they moved away and missed out on some of it.

Grannie always served fried chicken, mashed potatoes and gravy, and wax beans plus other things. The women cooked, the men talked, and the kids had fun finding "pretty rocks," playing in the hayloft, or balance walking on steel barrels. We played "Rock School" on the front porch where the "teacher" held a rock in her hands behind her. When she put them in front, if you guessed which hand held the rock, you could move up a grade on one of the six or seven steps. The men always ate first, then the women, and unlike today's children, we ate at third table.

We loved to go to the little milk house. It housed a cooler with pint glass bottles of ice-cold milk and straws and then we'd run to the kitchen where grannie always had a jar of large sugar cookies with a raisin or pecan piece right in the center. During the fall, we could gather pecans in the pasture next to the house.

One tale they told about my dad was that when he was small, he and grannie were in a store and daddy pitched a fit for a tricycle. In order to pacify him, grannie told him it would be delivered. The next day he walked a round the yard all day waiting for the delivery and telling his siblings, "From now on, all you're going to see of me around here is just three tracks---that's all, just three tracks." He never got it, poor kid!

Another tale is that grandpa would tell the boys that if they didn't straighten up, they would end up in jail. One of the brothers would sit across the table and look through the tines of a fork (like bars) at the brother being addressed. That caused some friction.

I married Arthur Mack Shaw (23 October 1926-11 December 1984), 12 June 1953, while he was a storekeeper in the Navy during the Korean War. He was stationed at North Island, San Diego, California and we resided in Coronado, California until he was discharged in December 1954. We

returned to Houston and in 1960 moved to Memphis Tennessee, where he became district sales manager of four states for Bondified Money Order Systems. In 1964, we returned to Houston and Mack began selling mesh and wire products. During this time I was a housewife and mother. When the boys were about ten years old, I returned to work as a secretary for a machine tool company. Three years later, I joined the Houston Independent School District as an administrative assistant for 27 years, until retirement.

My first son, Larry Mack, was born 12 April 1953 in San Diego. He and his second wife, Lesley, have one child, Stayten, and an adopted son, Brenton. Larry now resides in Lindale, Texas and is a heavy machinery maintenance man for a pipe manufacturing company. My son Bruce was born 26 December 1955, married Deborah Pearce, and has one son, Bradley. Bruce was an inside salesman for an electrical control panel distributor until he suffered a spinal cord injury in 1992, which left him partially disabled. He lives in Richmond, Texas.

My sister, Jerrie, married her high school sweetheart, William Wilson (30 January 1932- 30 December 2004), on 11 August 1951. Four sons were born to this union. When the boys were little, she was a housewife and mother. She then became an administrative assistant for the Houston Independent School District for 29 years. She died 28 March 2002 in Houston, and was buried in the Forest Park Lawndale Cemetery near our parents.

Jerrie's oldest son, James, married Robin Cook, and has two children, Jacqueline and Kelly, both who live in Toronto, Canada. Her second son, John, and his two wives had three children Michael, Robin, and Michael II. The third son, Robert, has no children. Don, the youngest, married Susan Kress, and has two children: Dustin and Shannon. All of Jerrie's sons live in or near Houston, Texas.[469]

Olive James (Buddy) Whipple, Junior, was born in El Paso, Texas and married Nancy Allis Dunford 9 August 1957 in Houston, Texas. Buddy earned degrees in three different subjects and certification in another. He spent approximately 42 years associated with engineering consulting firms doing failure analysis and providing courtroom testimony as an expert on several subjects. After retiring and selling his engineering firm, he was a part-time instructor of computer application courses at the University of Houston and Harris County College for 13 years. His wife Nancy was born 6 September 1938 in Chambersburg, Pennsylvania to Gordon Dunford and Zula Zimmerman. Nancy was a stay at home mother until her children were in high school. She then graduated with honors from the University of Houston School of Architecture, worked as an architect for several years, and later chose to become a mathematics teacher in Pasadena, Texas. She died 20 September 2004 in the home she designed and they had built near Houston for their retirement years. She was involved in training and successfully competing

with her dogs in obedience and tracking events, earning multiple titles with several doges. She eventually became a licensed AKC judge. Buddy and Nancy have three children. The oldest, Terri, is employed as an auditor and her husband is an executive at a chemical company. Their children are: Travis and Jamie. The oldest son of Nancy and Buddy is Mark, who earned degrees in two engineering fields and works as a computer programmer. He has co-authored two books on the subject and holds several related patents. His son is Alexander. The youngest child is Joseph who, is employed as an information technology specialist. He and his wife have four children: Benjamin, James, Christopher, and Jacob. Buddy wrote the following memories concerning his father and grandfather Whipple:

My dad spent a great deal of time working and was not home a lot, therefore, we did not do a lot of things together when I was a child, at least not that I can remember. During WWII, which time is about the first really continuous memories I have, daddy worked at Brown Shipyard in the war effort. He left home early in the morning and got back late in the evening. Near the end of the war, he returned to work as a "News Butcher" on the Southern Pacific RR Lines, and worked a continuous five-day cycle where he was out of town for three days, then home for two days. On the other hand, I also did not spend much time at home once I got to high school, because I worked at a movie theater every day from 30 minutes after school until midnight or later. The combination of these two schedules did not provide a lot of "quality time" together.

Daddy had apparently worked hard as a youngster on the dairy farm, and had left home at age 15 to go to Arizona to help his brother Floyd in the sewing machine industry. Because of this background, he expected us to work hard as well. He wanted us to be prepared to stand on our own two feet and to not expect a "handout" from anyone. When I mentioned that a friend had been given a new baseball glove or something of that sort, Daddy would tell me to pick out whatever I wanted and then go out and earn the money myself to get it. None of my friends had to do anything like this, and, at the time, I felt it was unfair even though I got keep the money I earned. Later, when I realized his goal was to make me self-reliant, I was thankful for his guidance. He repeatedly told me not to buy things on time payment plans unless I had the money in hand to pay for them in case something happened to my job, etc. When you consider that the Great Depression occurred shortly after he and Mama married (about three years), it is easy to understand why he did many of the things he did in the way he did them.

I used to watch him work on cars as I was growing up. When I finally bought a car in high school, the first time it broke down he told me where his tools were and that I should fix it myself. In the event I just could not figure how to do that, he would look at it and tell me what to do, but he would not do it for me, and that I should not even ask him to look at it until I had spent at least three full days trying to fix it myself. This taught me that there is nothing you

can't figure out for yourself if you really try and not to be afraid to tackle anything. This was especially beneficial to me when I started doing failure analysis and had to determine why airplanes crashed, crane booms failed, canes overturned, buildings collapsed, pipelines exploded, and other types of incidents.

Daddy had not finished high school, and I think that because of this he tried to impress upon me the need for higher education, although he never stated it in those terms. Every time we would pass Texas A&M on the way to visit grandpa Alva, he would tell me that I should go there and study engineering. By the time I graduated from high school it seemed the natural thing to do. He had gotten his point across without saying it outright. He was really very intelligent, and it is a shame that he never went to college. He pretty well taught himself about sewing machines by figuring for himself how they functioned and then reading the repair manuals, if available, as a last resort. This was another thing he taught without coming out and saying it -- if you study it carefully or can read enough about any device, you can determine how it works and how to fix it. He frequently designed and fabricated special tools to make his work easier.

Daddy could not stand to "do nothing." He had to be busy doing something constructive all of the time. Even at his beloved beach house he had installed a workbench so that he could repair and/or build things. Mama used to say that daddy was very tight with the money, but I personally would say he was more cautious than tight. Whenever somebody needed help, he was right there. True, he never threw money away, but then, that was the reason he had money to help his friends and family who got into financial trouble because they were not cautious with theirs. Most of his income-producing investment were aimed at protection of the principal, which may have resulted in slightly lower returns, but he never lost his principal like so many did in the stock market. People, both family and friends, frequently came to him for help and, while he might make a lot of noise about it, he never refused to give what he had to those in need.

I did not get to spend as much time with my grandfather Alva Whipple and grandmother Louise Justine Elstner Whipple as I would have liked because we lived in different cities. I do remember him telling me about operating a steam boiler in a power plant and how the operators would carry a coffee can containing a few rocks at all times while working at night. This was done so that, in the event they should fall asleep, the can would probably be dropped and cause enough noise to wake them up. He told me about the morning he arrived at the plant to relieve the night operator and, just before the reached the door, the boiler exploded knocking him to the ground. He ran inside and was able to pull the injured operator to safely.

Grandpa is the person who taught me how to shoot a rifle and made sure that I understood that you did not shoot any living thing unless you intended to eat it. He pointed out to me that even the lizards in his garden had their

place in the scheme of life became they ate insects, had been placed there by God, and should not be harmed unless needed for food. I remember how we would pull turnips from the ground, wash them at the pump and then eat them raw with salt. Tomatoes were eaten the same way.

Grannie had two kitchen ranges in the kitchen. One was wood fueled and the other was a 1920s or older gas fueled unit. No matter how hot the weather, she always cooked on the wood fired one, which caused the kitchen to become extremely hot. When I asked her in the 1940s why she did not use the gas fueled one since it would be so much cooler, she replied that she just never could get used to that "new-fangled thing" and always burned the food on it.[470]

Ollie Mae Whipple Underwood

Ollie Mae[8] Whipple (William[7], Jabez[6], Jesse[5], Eleazer[4], William[3], William[2], John[1]) was born in Decatur County, Indiana 16 April 1872, and came west with her parents at the age of 10. There she met and married John Underwood at Keller, Texas 23 December 1888. They had five children:

i. Edna, born 1891
ii. Lenie, born, 1897
iii. Robert, born 1904
iv. Claude, born 1909; died 1976
v. Juanita, born 1914

Ollie Mae, pictured below, and her husband lived on the farm that had been homesteaded by his uncle James Underwood. James B. Underwood and Loucena Whipple Underwood moved to Tarrant County, Texas shortly after the William Whipple family. Claude "Tony" Underwood stated, "It has always been known that there was a double marriage connection between the Underwoods and the Whipples."

Ollie Underwood

The Underwood farm was only a short distance north of the Whipple place. It straddled the Denton-Tarrant county line on the Old Denton Road. John and Ollie bought the farm after his uncle's death, and in 1917, built the farmhouse that is still standing. James and Loucena are buried about one-half mile to the west of the farm on Old Denton Road. Charles M. Whipple Senior, Ollie's nephew, stated "That is the same house Aunt Ollie was living in when my dad took me for a visit sometime in the late 1920s. As I recall, she had a compulsive need for cleanliness." Ollie sold the property in 1939, shortly after her husband's death. She died in March of 1942, and was buried next to her husband at the Bourland Cemetery in Keller, Texas.

Mary Elizabeth Whipple Taylor

Mary Elizabeth[8] Whipple (William[7], Jabez[6], Jesse[5], Eleazer[4], William[3], William [2], John[1]) the youngest child in the family, was born 25 November 1875, her mother dying seven days later. John, a twin brother, died at the age of 11 months. She married Henry Taylor in 1901. Two children were born to this union:

i. Amy, born 11 October 1905; died 4 February 1977; married John Evans
ii. Curtis, born 13 April 1909; died 23 July 1982; married Lillian Evans

Amy Evans Fidler, Mary's daughter, wrote the following narrative about her mother:

My mother weighed less than two pounds at birth. Her twin died of membranous croup. The amazing thing is that my father first saw mother when she was five days old. Dad was 14 at the time and on the way to school stopped by to see the twins, who grandma Eliza Dales said weren't any bigger than skinned squirrels. Mother was left with her aunt Eliza, when her father took the rest of the family and moved to Texas.

At the age of 17 mother married Eldo Underwood, who died when she was 24. Two years later she married Henry Joseph Countz Taylor. My first memory of her was when she was about 34 years old and an old woman; her long hair getting gray, long dresses sweeping to the floor, all dark and drab looking. I remember mother when she stopped our buggy one day, got out, and killed a snake with the buggy whip. I don't know if it was mother or the snake that makes it stick in my mind.

Mother never missed anything in the newspaper and on radio or television. In her 40s she made lampshades for some of the finest homes. She loved to cook, and really made a huge success out of the restaurant where she worked for over 20 years. The man she worked for went south every winter leaving her in charge of the whole business. Mother was interested in everything that went on and never lost out until about two weeks before she died. Mother eventually went to live with Cora Underwood, her cousin, who was alone. They had their television, and mother raised chickens and a wonderful garden. One family reunion Aunt Ollie Underwood, Uncle Alva, and Ollie's son, Claude, came, and how we enjoyed them. Ollie, Alva, and mother had their photo taken together and no one could ever doubt that they were brother and sisters. They really looked alike.

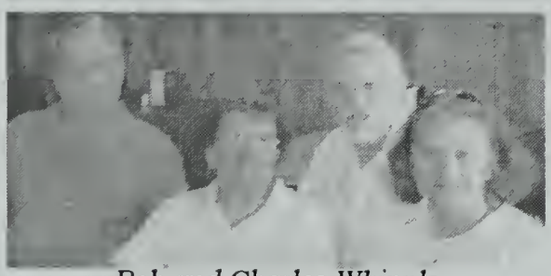
Mary Whipple Taylor

Mother had been sure that she had cancer for some time but watched television, wrote letters, read the paper--she never let down for one minute.

The day her first grandchild was born she was furious. She didn't want to be that old. She died June 2, 1965 and would have been 90 years old in November. She truly enjoyed her life. I was married at age 18 to John Evans of December 29 1925. My brother Curtis married Lillian Evans in February of 1934, and because of his health, moved to Bedford, Texas, which was only about ten miles from the old Whipple place at Keller. They have two sons and a daughter. I have four children: Glenda McCampbell, born 15 May 1926; Paul Evans, Born 14 January 1932, died 1964; Marle Evans, born 15 February 1935; and, Martha Dempsey, born 15 February 1935. Glenda is a group leader at a bank. She has one daughter who lives down the street and one that lives in Boston. They both have a son and a daughter. My oldest son lived in California, had two daughters, and has been dead for 12 years. Marle has three children, and Martha has five. [471]

Janice Farringer of Indianapolis, Indiana, daughter of Glenda McCampbell of that city, wrote the following about her life.

Mimi, (Amy) was my most favorite grandmother. I was very happy that both of my children had the privilege of knowing her before she passed away. Grandmama, (Mary Elizabeth) also was a very special person. I was in junior in high school when she passed away. I have many fond memories of her, both when she lived on the farm in Westport, Indiana, and later in her life when she lived with us in Beach Grove. I recently was shown a book about the history of Decatur County in Indiana. I don't know if you know about Carvel and Cora Underwood, but Grandmama lived on their farm in Westport. They are mentioned in this book.



Bob and Charles Whipple
Glenda McCampbell and Janice Farringer

My son Jimi has one child, Megan Case. My daughter Crystal has four children: Todd, Heather, Bethany and Brittney. My sister Irene's daughter Dawn, has one child, Lindsey. And her son Kevin has one daughter, Megan.[472]

The above photograph of four descendants of Charles and Mary, the youngest children of William and Emily Whipple, was taken in June of 2004 in Westport, Indiana.

Martha Evans Dempsey, youngest daughter of Amy Taylor Evans, of Austin, Texas wrote the following concerning her family and her uncle Curtis Taylor.

I have lived here in Austin since 1968, and in the same house. I will be 71 years old the 15th of this month, yet still hold down a full time job at the Texas Department of Criminal Justice. My family loves it here, but I do get homesick so often fly home to see my sister Glenda and family. We always make a side trip to Greensburg where my daughter Martha was

born. We usually stop at the Letts Corner Cemetery where my grandmother Mary Whipple Taylor is buried. We usually go on down to Westport to see Cora and Carvel Underwood's old house where I spent many happy days when we were children. Back then, there was no electricity, just oil lamps, and Cora's old pump organ that we always played. My twin brother, Marle, and I looked forward to summers at the farm. There was always more food than we ever saw or could ever eat. It was so sad the first time we visited there many years later and saw how the house, barn, and fields had all deteriorated. Your last book on the family was published before Marle died in 1988 so it just leaves my sister Glenda and me left. My husband Henry passed away June the 24th 1998.

My son Bill Dempsey lives and works in Indianapolis. He has a daughter named Brittany, drives an eighteen-wheeler and loves his job. Martha Hilliker, my oldest daughter, has been very ill the last three years with cervical cancer. She has had dermatology lupus since she was eighteen. She is 48 years old and Bill is 49. Tracy Dempsey Gould is 44 years old, lives in Canada, and just received her master's degree. She is the director for the University of Phoenix in Canada. Jacqueline Lea Decker, our youngest daughter, is working at PPD on creating new drugs. She just got a promotion to senior pharmacy technician. Catherine Dempsey Kelly lives in Mesquite, Texas and is working on her master's degree in business. She is 46 and has three children: Tracy Lovelace, Ashley Loveless, and Christopher Lovelace. I am so proud of all my children.

My uncle Curtis Taylor moved to Bedford, Texas from Indiana in the 1930s because of health problems and died 23 July 1982. "Something interesting I have been told about my grandfather is that he was a trapeze artist with the Ringling Brothers Circus in his younger years. He is buried at the Bluebonnet Cemetery in Colleyville, Texas."[473] Curtis married Lillian Evans, who died 1 March 2006, and they have three children: Juanita, Countz, and Teddy. Juanita was born 31 July 1936, married Jimmy Pruitt, who died 1 February 1990. Their children are Jimmy, Danny, and Linda. Jimmy married Shelly Timmerman, has two children, Rachel and Sarah, and lives in Bedford, Texas. Danny married Cynthia Crabtree, has two children, Danielle and Jennifer, and lives in Bedford, Texas. Linda married Billy Bryan, has two children, Blake and Billy, and lives in Alvord, Texas. The youngest child of Curtis and Lillian is Teddy, born 1 June 1951, married Brenda Atcheson, and their son is Curtis. They also live in Bedford, Texas. The second child of Curtis and Lillian is Countz Curtis Taylor, born 29 August 1941, who married Karlanita Smith, lives in Euless, Texas, and has two children, Mindy and Bryan, who live in Haltom City, Texas. Mindy married Tony Phillip Tiner and has two preschool children, Austin, and Matthew. Bryan married Naomi Greer and they have

Alexander, Alyssa, Abigail, and Tristian. The descendants of Curtis and Lillian Taylor all live in and around the Dallas, Texas metroplex.[474]

Emma Susan Whipple Reed

Emma Susan[8] Whipple (William[7], Jabez[6], Jess[5], Eleazer[4], William[3], William[2], John[1]) born 28 March 1879 at Westport, Decatur County, Indiana, and died18 March 1906 at Calumet, Oklahoma Territory. The only child born to William and Amelia, she was three years old when her parents took her to Texas to live.

Emma, pictured below, was 16 years old when she married William Reed 12 September 1895, in her hometown of Keller, Texas. She and her husband had two children:

i. Laura, born 3 July 1896, died 1967; married Ellis Hyde
ii. Alva, born 5 July 1898, died 15 March 1972; married Cecelia Ember

Laura was born at Ft. Worth, Texas, and Alva was born in the basement bedroom of her parent's farmhouse at Calumet, Oklahoma.

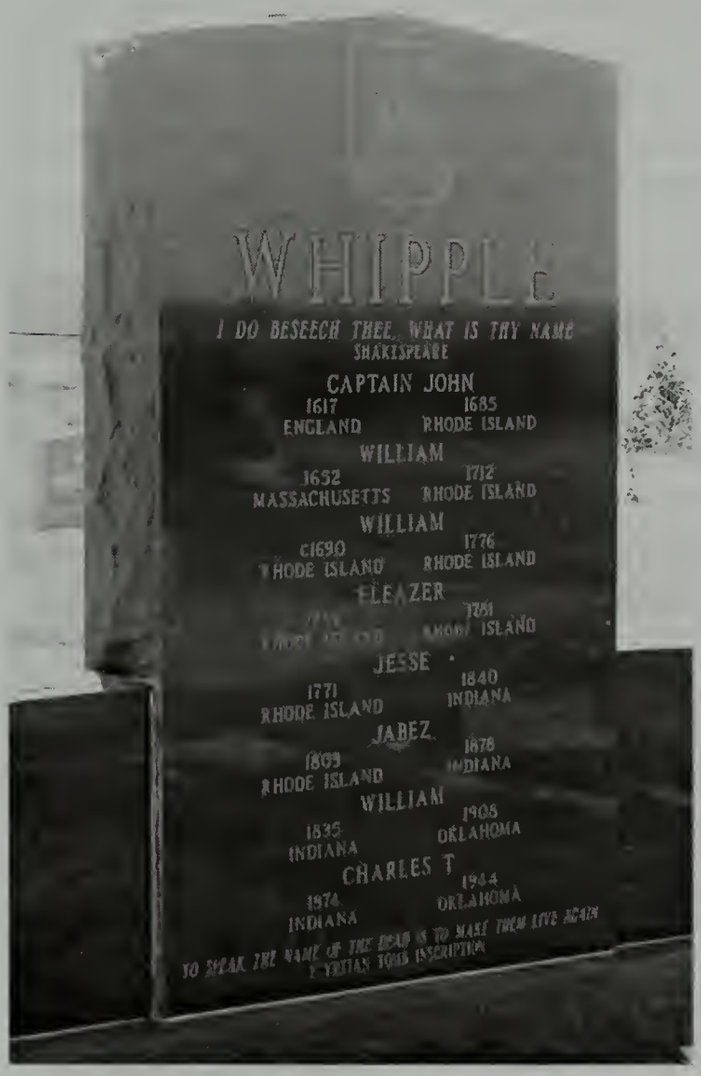
Emma Whipple

In 1905 or 1906, Will Reed left one day to go over to his newly purchased property. He hitched up the team of horses, kissed his wife and children goodbye, left, and was never heard from again. His team and wagon were subsequently found alongside the flood-swollen South Canadian River, and it was supposed that he had drowned. Gladys Miller recounts the story of Emma's death:

> Aunt Emma and grandma Whipple had gone to El Reno on Saturday and had spent almost all day. It was wondered why they didn't stop by the Pavy place that evening while going back home. Emma thought that she had merely caught a cold in her ears. She died two days later, her children being raised by grandma and Mr. Whipple. After grandma Whipple's death, Laura Reed kept most of her personal effects including pictures and written documents. In turn, Laura's daughter, Edna, had possession of them until they were destroyed in a flood at Ponca City, Oklahoma in the 1930s.[475]

Alice Mae Reed, granddaughter of Amelia, stated that her father, Alva Reed, always said that his mother "died of a broken heart from the loss of her husband. Grandma Whipple was a marvelous lady who worked hard to raise us. She died of complications following a fractured hip."

William spent the first 47 years of his life in Indiana, 14 in Texas, and the final 12 in Oklahoma Territory. Like his brothers, he was a farmer. Oscar and Alfred died in Kansas; John in Iowa; and George in Oklahoma; Levi, Irvin, and Murray died in Indiana. Their sisters Eliza, Louise, and Mary died in Indiana; and Loucena died in Texas. Their descendants are spread from coast to coast. The monument for William, pictured below, erected over his grave at Red Rock Methodist Cemetery, serves as a record of his ancestral history. In this area of eight graves, his son Charles and grandson Charles are buried next to him. His great grandsons, Charles and Bobby Whipple, as well as his great great grandson, Christian, will likewise be buried there. An additional 18 lots have been purchased by the family to provide burial spaces for many more of his descendants.



Whipple Monument, 2003

This monument, etched from black marble, is seven feet high and eleven feet wide at its base, reads:

This monument is erected to commemorate the life of William T. Whipple, pioneer, and first Whipple to settle the Cheyenne-Arapaho lands of western Oklahoma Territory in 1896. His homestead was two miles north and two miles west of Red Rock Cemetery. He was a farmer-rancher and one of the founders and minister of Bethany Church, one mile west of his home. His ancestors, likewise, were primarily Northern Baptist and Congregational. This narrative is taken from the book, Sons and Daughters of Jesse by Dr. Charles Whipple.

William was the 3great grandson of Captain John Whipple, the first Whipple in America, who arrived in the Massachusetts Bay Colony from Bocking, England in 1632. Captain John's daughter, Abigail Whipple Hopkins, was the grandmother of Stephen Hopkins, a signer of the Declaration of Independence in 1776. William's 5great grandfather was Richard Warren, a signatory to the Mayflower Compact in 1620. Other such notables among his extended family were Abraham Whipple, the first Commodore of the American Navy, Esek Hopkins the first Commander-in-Chief of the Continental Navy, and John and Quincy Adams, presidents of the United States. His grandfather Eleazer Whipple served in Captain Weatherhead's command of

the Rhode Island Militia during the Revolutionary War. William served in the Union Army during the Civil War in Company H 123rd Regiment of the Indiana Volunteers.

William and Emily O'Donnell's children were: William, Alva, Ollie Underwood, Mary Taylor, and Charles T. After Emily's death he married Amelia Pavy. Their daughter was Emma Reed. Emma and Charles accompanied their parents to Oklahoma. Charles T. and Marcella Raidt had four children: John, Mildred Wegner, Theresa Thornberg Wahrenberger, and Charles M. Sr. The grandchildren, great grandchildren, and great great grandchildren of Charles T. dedicate this monument, July 5, 2003. The verso of the monument lists his ancestry back to Captain John Whipple.

Charles T. Whipple

The youngest son of William and Emily was Charles, who is the subject of the next chapter.

.

Chapter 9

Charles T. Whipple
From Texas to Oklahoma

Charles Theodore[8] Whipple (William[7], Jabez[6], Jesse[5], Eleazer[4], William[3], William[2], John[1]) was born 12 February 1874 in Decatur County, Indiana and died 1 May 1944 in Oklahoma City, Oklahoma.[476] He was almost two years old when his mother died in December of 1875. His widowed father had considerable help from relatives in rearing the children, particularly from his sister Eliza Dales. When Charles was three years old, his father remarried. His grandmother Whipple died when he was nine.[477] It is not likely that he attended her funeral in that by then he was living in north central Texas.

Charles T. Whipple, 1911

In late 1881 or early 1882, Charles left the family farm in a covered wagon, and, along with his father, stepmother, brothers and sisters, settled on the Texas plains just north of Fort Worth, Tarrant County, a distance of some 1000 miles to the southwest of his boyhood home. John Whipple, Charles' second son, stated that his father was promised that if he was a good boy on the trip, he would be given a "six gun and hat, and could become a Texas cowboy with his own pony to ride."[478] As far as is known, he returned to his birthplace only once or twice during the ensuing 60 years.

Charles lived in Tarrant County for the next nine years. Life at his new home on the western frontier was apparently quite an adventure. Charles M. Whipple, his youngest son, recalled his dad saying that he had a great deal of freedom, played hooky from school, hunted wild game, and was the family's practical joker. For instance, it is reported by a reliable source that one Halloween night, Charles and a few neighborhood friends pushed over the family "out house," which happened to have been occupied at the time.

Marcella R. Whipple, 1911

According to the United States Army "Register of Enlistments," Charles entered the military on 29 October 1891 at Fort Worth, Texas. At that time, he was 18 years and 9 months old (he exaggerated his age by one year); had hazel eyes; light brown hair and a fair complexion; and was 5 feet, 6 inches tall. He was assigned to the 23rd

Infantry Division, Company B, at Fort Clark, Texas, serving until 27 July 1894.[479] Charles was fond of saying that he finally got his wish to do a lot of horseback riding, shooting pistols, and tobacco chewing. He was injured in the leg, and for years walked with a decided limp. He did not particularly like military life and was not dissatisfied to complete his enlistment.

The Donaldson Family

Subsequent to his release from the army, his brother Alva got Charles a job driving horse-drawn streetcars in Waco, Texas, about one hundred miles south of Fort Worth. He continued at this for the next seven years. During this time, he met and married Alice Donaldson 30 January 1898. Alice gave birth to their son, Roy, on 13 January 1899 in Waco.

i. Roy, born 13 January 1899; died 16 October 1972

According to the 1900 Waco census, Roy and Alice, age 23, were living with her parents James and Lizzy Donaldson, and seven siblings. Mr. Donaldson's occupation was "keeping a boarding house."[480] In 1920, Roy was married to Mittie Lilledrith and living with her parents in Waco. His occupation was listed as an automobile mechanic.[481] Charles M. Whipple, his half-brother, recalled his stepmother saying that Roy visited them around the year1920. Roy's half-brothers or half-sisters did not remember ever meeting him. His father and Charles carried on written correspondence with him over many years. During those years, he was living in Texas and Arizona. Grace Whipple, wife of his first cousin, Floyd, of Phoenix, Arizona wrote:

Elder Whipple, 1905

Roy and his wife Viola had lived in Arizona since the Second World War. My husband and I visited them in 1943. They were well and happy at that time. Roy was working in one of the war plants near Phoenix. He had been married previous to his marriage to Viola, and had two daughters, whereabouts unknown. He had no children by this second marriage. Roy's gravestone shows that he had served in World War I from 1917 until 1919. He was a painter by occupation and had lived in Phoenix since 1943. The gravestone stated that he died 16 October 1972. He and his wife are buried at the Greenwood Memorial Park Cemetery, Phoenix Arizona. From the mortuary, I learned that Roy was survived by a son, Harold Whipple, of Prescott, Arizona. Harold died a year after Roy at the Fort Whipple Veterans Hospital.[482]

The Raidt Family

In 1901, because of the traumatic divorce from Alice, a distraught Charles moved in with his father at Calumet, Oklahoma Territory, where he farmed with him and helped charter and build the Bethany Church, located about a mile down the road from their property. Both were so-called "Preaching Elders" in the church. The photo above is of Charles taken at the Bethany Church.[483]

Anton Raidt Family, 1878

While living there, he met and married Marcella Mary Raidt, a friend of his half sister Susan. At the time of their marriage, she was 16 years of age and Charles was 33. They were married in Oklahoma City, Oklahoma on 10 November 1907, with J.B. Harper officiating.[484] They were the parents of five children:

i. John, born 23 May 1908; died 18 November 1978; married Ola Cathay
ii. Katherine, born 1910; died 1931
iii. Mildred, born 29 January 1912; died 9 May 2001; married Carl Wegner
iv. Theresa, born 26 June 1916; died 27 June 2002; married Sam Wahrenberger
v. Charles, born 28 January 1919; died 13 December 1979; married Julia Ledford

Charles and Marcella are listed in the 1920 and 1930 federal census.[485] Marcella was the daughter of John and Anna Hirner Raidt, both of whom had immigrated to America in the 1870s. John and Anna had at least 17 children of which Marcella was the fifth in ordinal position.[486]

i. Anton, born 6 April 1885; died 5 January 1969; married Mary Donham
ii. Margaret, born 7 July 1886; died 4 July 1887
iii. Charles, born 29 August 1887; died 1 April 1956; married Tillie Fink
iv. Theresa, born 25 May 1889; married Leopold Warnke
v. Marcella, born 29 September 1891; died 10 February 1920; married C. Whipple
vi. Sophia, born 22 July 1893; married Joseph Kolar
vii. Simon, born 16 December 1894; died 10 September 1977; married Erna Hopkin
viii. George, born 19 December 1895; married Zeta Davis
ix. Gertrude, born 22 October 1897; died 3 September 1964; married Charles Phifer
x. Frank, born 16 February 1899; died 1 July 1918
xi. Edward, born 28 April 1900; died 9 October 1918
xii. Annie, born 9 August 1901; died 19 September 1901
xiii. Agnes, born 10 December 1902; died 18 September 1962; married Harvey Haley
xiv. Marie, born 21 May 1904; died 26 February 1923; married Robert Collins
xv. John, born 13 July 1905; died 21 August 1905
xvi. Theodore, born 5 July 1907; died 24 September 1907
xvii. Albert, born 2 April 1910; died 12 March 1969; married Georgia Patterson

Some of these children were discussed in an unknown 1918 source concerning the death of Frank in the First World War. He died at Vaux, France on 1 July 1918, within 100 miles of his father's former home in Germany. He is buried in a military cemetery in France.

> ...Although of German birth Mr. and Mrs. Raidt are intensely patriotic. Three other sons are now in the service of the United States. Simon J. Raidt ...George J. Raidt...and Edward....
>
> Corporal Frank Raidt was born in Palmyra, Mo., Feb. 16, 1899. When he was 6 years old he came to Oklahoma City with his parents and five years ago accompanied them to their present home in Wellston.
>
> The dead boy was one of thirteen children. There are three brothers not in the service, Anton F. Raidt of 1520 West Eighth Street, Oklahoma City, Charles J. Raidt of St. Louis, Mo., and Albert E. Raidt, the youngest member of the family. His sisters are: Mrs. L.G. Warnke, 1209 West Main Street, Oklahoma City, Sophia Raidt of Wellston, Mrs. Charles Whipple, Wellston, Mrs. Charles Phieffer, 1702 West Second Street, Oklahoma City, Mrs. Marie Raidt, Wellston.[487]

Of the nine Raidt boys only Simon, the seventh child, produced sons. Simon Raidt Junior, or S.J. as he is known, married Lila Walker 23 April 1954. They wrote the following concerning their branch of the family tree:

> "We have three sons and two daughters. Michael Jay married Donna Moody, their son is Colby Allen Raidt, age 20. Mark Joseph married Leslie Boyd. Marlon Jeffrey married Ruth Hassler, and they have one son, Ryan Joseph Raidt age 14. Our daughters are Michelle Jean, who married Denny Packard. Their children are, Dennis who married Keri Yeager, and have a daughter Kaitlyn age three. Their other son is Clark Allen, age 18. Our fifth child, Monet Janelle Raidt, died at birth. Simon Raidt Junior's younger brother was Leo Raidt, who was killed in an automobile accident at the age of 24. His wife remarried and changed their two boys', Larry and David, surname to Wright. The boys were not told of the Raidt family connection until they were grown. We have had no contact with them as to this day. As far as is known, John and Anna Raidt and the Hirners were Catholic. Almost all of their children are Protestant however, including us and our children. "[488]

Raidt Burial Grounds
Marcella's Gravestone

John Raidt came to the United States on the ship "Donau" 21 December 1879.[489] Their parents were Anton Raidt, born 21 December 1828, and Theresia, born 19 October 1832. In the above Anton Raidt family photograph of 1878, those standing from left to right are: Anton Junior, Maria, John, Josephine, and Frank. Seated are: mother Theresia, Theresia, Anton

Senior, and Margaret. Other children not shown were Anna, Pius, and Elisabeth.[490]

John married Anna Hirner, 2 October 1883, in Palmyra, Marion County, Missouri. Anna was the daughter of Anton Hirner and Louisa Wenz. Anton, who was a brewer and shopkeeper, was born in 1844 in Wurttemberg, Germany and died 25 March 1895 near Palmyra, Missouri. His parents were M. Hirner and Veronica Stegmeyer. "His father was M. Hirner of Wurttemberg, born about the year 1798. He was in the service of the government in the road department throughout all of his life and died in Germany in the spring of 1880. The mother of this subject was Veronica (Stegmeyer) Hirner, born 1800, died in Germany in 1858."[491]

With the exception of Marcella, John and Anna's children where born in Marion County, Missouri or Oklahoma City, Oklahoma.[492] John Raidt was born 13 May 1858, in Rotenberg, Germany, died 29 June 1929, and was buried in the Rose Hill Cemetery in Oklahoma City. He made his living as a brewer of fine German beers, and as a farmer. Anna, born 6 September 1867 in Germany, died 3 September 1928, and is buried beside her husband.

Charles T. Whipple

Marcella Raidt Whipple was born 29 September 1891 in Quincy, Illinois, and died 10 February 1920 from complications of the Swine Flu, and was buried in her parents' burial plot in Section 8 of the Rosehill Cemetery in Oklahoma City.[493] The brief notice of her death appeared in the local newspaper: "Funeral of Mrs. Marcella Whipple 27 years old, who died at a hospital here yesterday, will be held from the Hahn Funeral Home tomorrow afternoon at 2 o'clock. Burial will be at Rosehill Cemetery.[494] The photo above is that of the Raidt burial grounds. The flat gravestone in the background marks the place of Marcella's burial. The gravestone carving reads "Marcella Raidt Whipple, 1892-1920, wife of Charles."

On Losing a Farm

John Whipple, Charles and Marcella's oldest child, stated that his parents moved to Chicago, and lived there about six months immediately following his birth in order to obtain specialized medical treatment for his congenital neurological spinal problem. While they were in Chicago, his father unexpectedly died. Charles had been promised that he would inherit the farm after his father's death, but by the time they had returned home to Calumet William's widow and her son by a previous marriage had taken control of the farm and would not allow him to move back. A second "deathbed" will had been hastily drawn up giving them sole control. There was legally nothing Charles could do about it, so he was forced to move to Oklahoma City to work for his father-in-law. He never

again had anything to do with Calumet or the Pavys. This, and the death of his beloved wife at a young age adversely affected his mind. Although he allowed his children to attend worship services, he never again entered the door of a church.

Subsequent to Marcella's death, Charles married Adda Nimmo, a long-time family friend. Unfortunately, it turned out that she was mentally unstable and mistreated the children, particularly the daughters, so the daughters were placed in temporary foster care and eventually adopted out. Charles sought to locate them on numerous occasions. For some unknown reason, perhaps because of his and his wife's mental status, the court would not allow him to know where his daughters were located. Finally, the Raidts told John the whereabouts of his sisters, at which time he told his father. By then, Katherine had been killed in an automobile accident, and Mildred and Theresa were teenagers.

Charles truly loved farming and was never satisfied with doing anything else. He worked at various jobs around central Oklahoma: salesman, cistern cleaner, truck driver, and automobile mechanic. Most of his later years were spent as a mechanic. By the late 1920s, he had saved enough money to buy another farm, but then the Great Depression and the dust bowl occurred. This was another undeserved blow to his fragile mental state. Charles spent most of the 1930s as an itinerant worker in the oil fields of Oklahoma, and then worked at the Oklahoma City airport during World War II.[495] The hat and airport identification badge that Charles is seen wearing in the photograph above are held in 2005 by the author. Other of his memorabilia shown in the photograph opposite is in the possession of the author and will be passed down to his children and grandchildren. They include a storage box made in 1941, reading glasses, razor, coin purse, and war rationing stamps.

Charles T. Whipple, Memorability

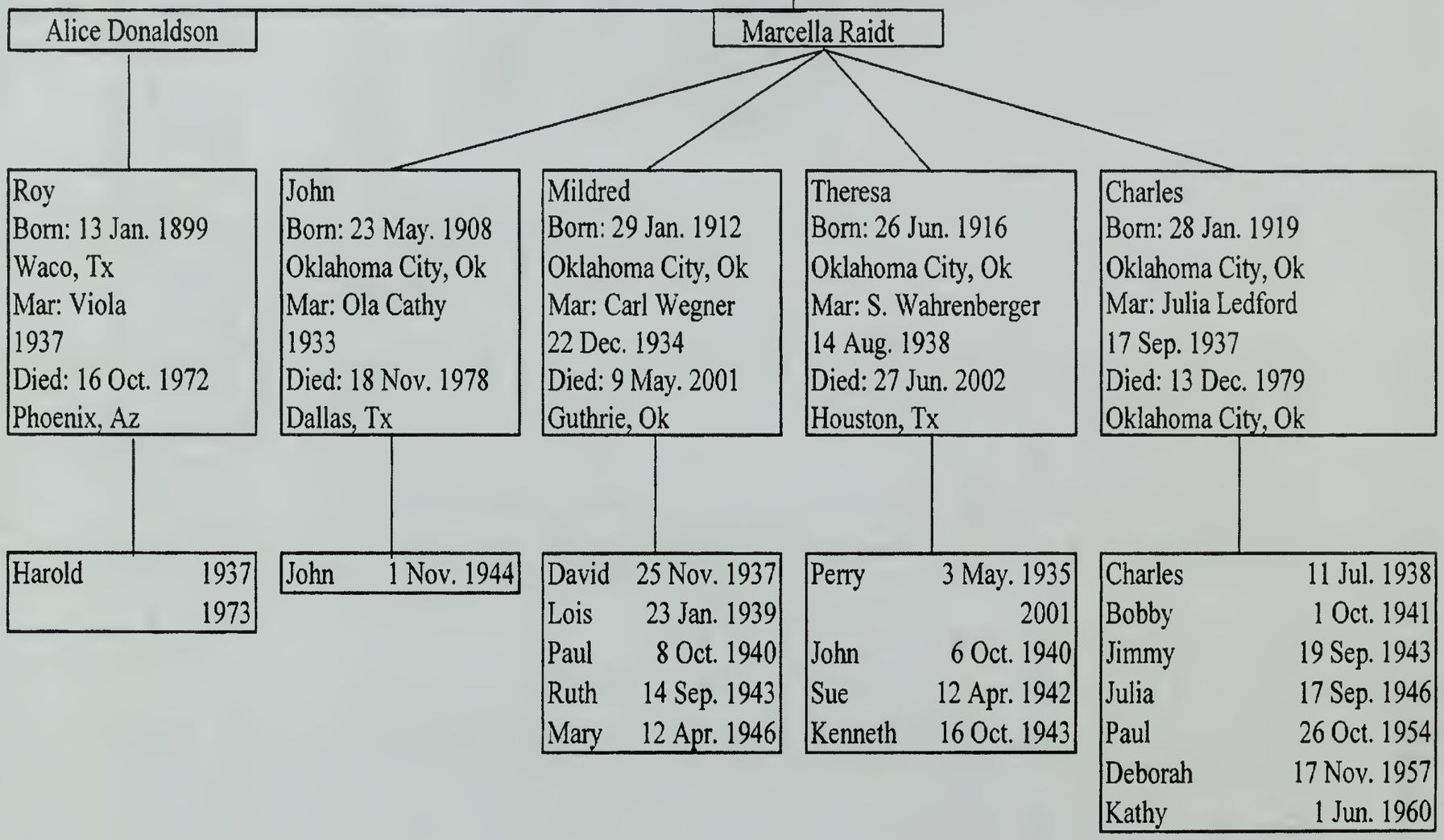
Death and Burial

Charles Theodore Whipple died at St. Anthony Hospital, 1 May 1944, from complications following a hernia operation. He was buried in the Red Rock Methodist Cemetery, Calumet, Oklahoma near his father, stepmother, and half-sister Emma Reed. His brief death announcement in the *Daily Oklahoman* newspaper stated:

> Whipple---Charles, age 70, of 948 SE 5. Survived by 2 sons, J.W. of Los Angeles, and C.M. of city; 2 daughters, Mrs. Carl Wegner, Ponca City, Mrs. Sam Strongberg [should beWahrenberger], Houston. Services announced later by the Perrine's.[496]

Further information concerning his later years is recorded in the sketches of his children.

CHILDREN AND GRANDCHILDREN OF CHARLES THEODORE WHIPPLE



John William Whipple

John W.[9] Whipple (Charles[8], William[7], Jabez[6], Jesse[5], Eleazer[4], William[3], William[2], John[1]) was born 23 May 1908 in Oklahoma City, Oklahoma. He weighed only three pounds at birth, suffering from an exposed and crooked spine, and spent the first year of life in a body cast. He stated, "My parents moved to Chicago immediately after I was born and stayed there a few months. We moved back to Oklahoma City where dad worked at several jobs in and around Oklahoma County. Even though not well educated he always made a good living in those years. Dad could do almost anything with his hands." John's mother died when he was 11 years old, and shortly thereafter, he went to work on the farm of his uncle, Harvey Haley, in Maysville, Oklahoma for 25 cents per day. He then worked for Wilson and Company Meat Plant in Oklahoma City, and while there, took up professional boxing.

Charles T., John, Charles M., 1941

In 1931, after the death of his wife and child at birth, John moved to Dallas, Texas, where he worked as an automobile mechanic. He married Ola Cathey in 1933, and they had one child: John Nicholas.

i. John Nicholas, born 1 November 1944; married Virginia "Ginger" Buchanan

John and Ola moved to Los Angeles, California in 1937 "with only $90 in my pocket and a prayer." He worked in the shipyards during the War, and then for the Golden State Dairy and Kay-Bruner Steel Company as plant engineer. During this time, his wife died, and he subsequently married Hallie Sue Capps, 17 March 1963. John and Sue moved back to Dallas in 1967, where they lived in retirement. John died18 November 1978 and was buried in Mesquite, Texas. John Nicholas Whipple writes:

> I live with my wife Ginger and our daughter Sarah in Palm Desert, California. Ginger and I were married in 1988, and Sarah was born two years later. My other daughter Catherine Sue (1972) lives in Las Vegas, and has a son William Daniel who was born this past February. My son Daniel John (1969) has been out of touch for some years. I retired a little over five years ago, and am just now beginning to give some serious thoughts about rejoining the workforce to do some management consulting or teaching. I got my bachelor's degree in electrical engineering at the University of Colorado in 1969, my MBA at UCLA in 1992, and my Ph.D. at the Graduate School of Management Claremont Graduate University in 2001. The most wonderful thing I remember about my father is how he never let a day go by without saying that he loved me. Times were a little difficult for both of us after my mother Ola died. Dad worked all day, I walked back and forth to school. I wasn't a perfect child, and

sometimes I'd get into some mischief. I rarely got spanking, but I do remember one particular day when I didn't go straight home from school. The poor baby sitter was scared to death. That evening, dad reminded me of my error when I was in the bathtub. A few hard swats on my wet, naked behind and I never made that misstake again. Nonetheless, later that evening, when I had just gotten into bed, he came into my room, put his arms around me, and told me how much he loved me-- just like I knew he would. It made me feel so good. [497]

Mildred Elizabeth Whipple Wegner

Mildred Whipple Wegner was born 29 January 1912 in Oklahoma City, Oklahoma and died 9 May 2001 at Guthrie, Oklahoma. She was buried beside her husband Carl Wegner, whom she married 22 December 1934, in the Coyle, Oklahoma Cemetery. Mildred and Carl have five children:

i. David, born 25 November 1937; married Eileen Hilbern
ii. Lois, born 23 January 1939; married Steve Koppelmann
iii. Paul, born 8 October 1940; married K. Myers and Charlene Wilhelm
iv. Ruth, born 14 September 1943; married Roy Starks and Earl Boyer
v. Mary, born 12 April 1946; married Otis Judkins

Mildred and Carl rented the Oak's farm right after they were married until Fritz was born. Then lived with Carl's parents until Ruth was born. They settled on to a farm of about 20 acres on the banks of the Arkansas River near Ponca City, Oklahoma. From this home, the children were bused many miles to school at Burbank, Oklahoma until 1951. At this time, the family moved to the ancestral farm at Coyle, Oklahoma. Carl bought the interest his brothers and sisters had in the farm. About 1955, they were divorced and Carl remained on the farm until 1958, when it was sold. He died in Enid, Oklahoma 11 October 1975.

David Wegner was born 25 November 1937 at Coyle, Oklahoma. He lived there until entering the military in 1955. Since returning in 1958, he has worked in an automobile body shop in Guthrie, Oklahoma. He married Eileen Hilbern and they have two children: Jennifer, age 32, and Sally age 30.

What I remember most about mom was that she was a great cook. I remember too that she could run fast. When I agitated her she would go get a limb from a green tree and use it on me. I learned rather quickly to run just fast enough to let her get in one lick then I would speed up. At Christmas time, especially, we kids would start looking at the gift catalogs. She would always buy us something. Mom and dad did not have much money. But I really miss mom in her later years. We would talk and she would fix me an egg sandwich and a small glass of milk. But I really miss not being able to take her to church with me anymore. Later I found out that mom and a neighbor had prayer and Bible study every day. I'm thankful that she was

baptized toward the end. I learned later that if she forgotten to pray for something or someone, she would say, P.S. and include it. I miss her so much. As for myself, I was in the U.S. Marines from 1956 until 1958. After that I was married for 10 years. We had two daughters. I have lived by myself since 1982.[498]

Lois Wegner Koppelmann was born 23 January 1939 in Coyle, Oklahoma. She received a bachelor's degree in microbiology from the University of Oklahoma in 1961 and her Ph.D. in experimental pathology from the University of California at Los Angeles. She was married to Dr. Steven Koppelman in 1961, after which they resided in Santa Monica, California. After working for a few years during which Kim (1962) and Russell (1966) were born, Lois began her graduate work at UCLA after both children were in school in 1971. Lois worked in cancer research until she and her husband moved to Seattle, Washington, where he is a Baptist minister.

When I was two years old my mother's father made a set of doll furniture for me for Christmas. What a thrill for such a young child to open that box and find such a beautiful gift. I have no memory of grandpa Whipple, but have permanent evidence of his love and his pride in having his first granddaughter. Each piece was crafted with skill, beauty and style. Originally the dresser had a real mirror which was broken over the years. The drawers actually work. One of the chairs had a leg broken later on, but it is still a treasure. I received the furniture in 1941 at a time when I was his first as well as his only granddaughter. He had other granddaughters later on but he passed away before he could make them similar gifts. He died from the effects of hernia surgery six months before my next younger sister was born. I am confident that he loved his entire family greatly. I have already passed the furniture set down to our own daughter. My mother's mother died at age 28 from the effects of influenza from the 1918 epidemic when my mother was about eight years old. My mother lived with the Tyler family and later with the Schlemmer family on farms east of Guthrie, Ok."[499]

Furniture Made by Charles Whipple

Paul F. Wegner was born 8 October 1940 at Guthrie, Oklahoma. Immediately upon graduating from high school, Paul moved to Wichita, Kansas, where he has operated a highly successful mobil home sales and moving company for over 40 years. He married Jimmie Myers 27 May 1960. They have three children, Gary, Paula and Lynet, who lived to adulthood: Gary, was born 22 August 1962, and died 31 October 1994. He married Jeanette Maltby in 1967, and their son is Joshua. Paula married Mark Jimenez, and their children are Mathew and Jacob. Lynet married Nicholas Roberts, and their children are

Desiree and Searria. Paul's second wife is Charlene Wilhelm, whom he married 18 October 1980.

My mother never graduated from high school but she did graduate with honors from "The University of Life." I was, and still am, in awe at the knowledge she acquired from this "school." Her experiences were sometimes hard and painful but also fun, educational, and beautiful, as she faced separation from her parents, then living in an orphanage, then living with a family in Guthrie, Oklahoma, where she learned many skills that shaped and molded my life, and finally, meeting and marrying my father, Carl Henry Wegner. She rose above her difficult "classes" with dignity and courage.

At one time, we lived on a farm in Coyle, Oklahoma when mom butchered a cow. She never threw anything away but the hooves and bones. Everything else she made into food for our family. She canned chicken, beef, pig, pears, apples, peaches and wild berries. We had a vineyard from which she made grape jellies. From our two-acre vegetable garden, she canned peas, tomatoes, potatoes and beets. Back then, flour came in 25-lb sacks and she used the sacks to make our clothes. During the winter, the cellar was packed with jars of food from which she prepared meals that surpassed those of any city restaurant. She got up before the sun rose and went to bed long after the sun set in order to take care of her family, sacrificing many of her own needs to do so.

Eventually we moved to Guthrie, Oklahoma where I played the baritone and tuba in the high school band. Our house was right behind the court house/jail. One day the county sheriff called mom and told her that the prisoners were complaining about the loud playing. Laughing, mom told me about his call but she never told me to stop practicing. I played 'softer' but kept on practicing. She was unselfish, self-sacrificing, and concerned about our well being.

Mom graduated from the "University of Life" on 9 May 2001. Her presence is greatly missed but her memories will hug my heart forever. In sharing my mother with you, the hope is that you will face your 'classes' at your own "University of Life" with the same dignity and love that she did. If anyone could describe a Superwoman, that would be my mom!![500]

Ruth E. Wegner Starks Boyer was born 14 September 1943 in Guthrie, Oklahoma. She married Roy Starks 14 July 1962. Ruth and Roy have two children: (1) Samuel, born 14 September 1963, who married Sabrina Carver 28-12-91, and have two children Steven and Daniel. (2) John, born 30 June 1964, who has one child, Kayla. John was killed in an automobile accident in 2004. Ruth's second marriage was to Earl Boyer. Ruth, who resides in El Reno, Oklahoma, was a long-time employee of the telephone company, and is presently a college student.

When we lived on the farm at Coyle, Oklahoma, I remember my mother made the absolute best apple pies and homemade rolls in the world. She

planted a garden every year, from which we picked vegetables and fruit that she then canned and stored in the cellar. I will always remember going to the cellar to get a jar of beans for dinner and seeing "wall to wall--ceiling to floor" full of canned food. I believe, at least until we reached menopause, that my siblings and I enjoy good health today because of her home cooking yesterday. Mom bought only sugar, flour, and salt at the store.

After their divorce, we moved to Guthrie. Mom did not go on welfare; instead she got a job as a waitress to support us kids. She always paid her bills, and not one time did I ever hear her say anything derogatory about anyone. She always came to my school programs, sometimes staying past midnight. Then she would get up at 3 a.m. to go to work at 5 a.m. but never complained about the lack of sleep. When my high school band would march down Main Street, I could always count on her to stand on the corner shouting and cheering as we marched by. I remember when mom became a Christian, it changed her life. I learned how she used her many skills to help others from people who came to a garage sale we held to dispose of her things. It seems that she fixed food for her sick neighbors. When one family lost everything in a fire, she gathered up sheets, towels, and food to take to them.

Paul, David, Lois, Mary, Mildred, Ruth, The Wegners 1995

When she could still sew, she would create one-of-a-kind matching outfits for herself and her best friend-a dog named Snoopy, and later on one named Fefe. Together they visited residents of the local rest homes. Every Saturday I would take mom and her "fashionable Fido" to these places. It brought tears to my eyes as I watched her make people feel important by listening to them tell of their dog stories of long ago and letting them hold Snoopy or Fefe. Also, together they won every single dog parade they entered. She had a ball in her senior years. One time during the late 50s, she was working at a restaurant when an African American came to the back door to order food. She told him to go around to the front door, enter, and sit down. After which she took his order. She told me that there was no difference between him and anyone else. It took real courage to take that stand during that volatile time in our history as this was before the sit-in era. Mildred Whipple Wegner was full of character, courage, conscience, and fun. May you glean something from her life for your life.[501]

The youngest child of Carl and Mildred, Mary J. Wegner Judkins was born 12 April 1946 in Ponca City, Oklahoma. She married Otis Judkins 11 September 1965. He died in 1994. The children of Mary and Otis are Dana Lee (born 23 July1964) in Santa Monica, California, and Darrin Leslie (born 11 May 1966) in Cocoa Beach, Florida. Dana married Kevin Lee on 30 August 1963, and they have two children: Austin (born 21 May 1990) and Tyler (born 11 February 1992).

Darrin married Sonya Haro 31 August 2002. They are currently expecting the birth of their first child later this year.

Our mother was a very attractive woman and took very good care of herself. She used to tell us children that as a child she would hang her heels from the rails of a bridge overlooking the Cotton Wood Creek. I can still picture this in my mind. The two things I miss the most about mom was her smothered liver and onions and persimmon pudding. She use to mail me a big batch of pudding and sent it regular mail. It was so hardy that it was perfectly good when it arrived in Florida, Kansas, California, or wherever I lived. When Darrin was born in Florida, she mailed several diapers that she made herself. It had a very colorful outer cloth using scraps of leftover material with a little boy's faux fly front. She was creative and although she had no more than an eighth grad education, was the best speller I ever knew. I also remember a drawing she created of a horse when she was much much younger, it was old the first time I saw it. It was the most beautiful horse I ever saw. I hope one of my siblings came across it and has kept it. My sister Lois inherited that talent as did Lois's son Russell, and Ruth's son John, and my own daughter, Dana. Seems it runs in the family.[502]

Theresa Whipple Thornburg Wahrenberger

Theresa Whipple Wahrenberger was born 26 June 1916 in Oklahoma City, Oklahoma and died 27 June 2002 in Houston, Texas. In the photograph below Theresa, age 3, is seated in the back seat of her parent's convertible automobile with her six-month-old brother Charles on his mother's lap. Not seen in the back seat, except for a foot, are the other children. Their mother's hat is resting on the proverbial emergency toolbox. The car appears to be British, with the steering wheel on the right side. Within six months, the children's lives would be turned up side down by their mother's death.

Theresa stated: "I don't remember much about my mother because she died and I was adopted out when I was only four years old. I lived with a family named Leonard in Henryetta, Oklahoma until I was 15. During this time I had not seen any of my relatives. Finally, I moved to Dallas, Texas to stay with my brother, Johnny, where I married Perry Thornburg in 1932. Perry Junior was our only child."

i. Perry, born 3 June 1933; died 14 May 1996; married Nancy Burleson

Perry "Pat" married Nancy Burleson 4 September 1954, and they have two children: Alex and Julia. Perry Alexander III, "Alex," who was born 13 December 1960, married Teresa Bear and their children are: Noah and Emma. Alex, a Presbyterian clergyman, is working on a PhD degree at Oklahoma State University, and his wife is a professor at Oklahoma State University. Julia, who was born 2 November 1962, married Bob Dane.

Theresa married Theophilus "Sam" Wahrenberger, 14 August 1938 in Houston, Texas. She died 27 June 2002 and was buried beside her husband in the Houston National Cemetery. Theresa and Sam, who was an Air Force sergeant, have three children:

i. John, born 6 October 1940; married Susan Christmas and Teri Hogenhaus
ii. Sue, born 12 April 1942; married John Lotz
iii. Kenneth, born 16 October 1943; married Angelia Lively

The oldest of the Wahrenberger children is John. He was born in Houston, Texas, and spent over four decades living there. He and his wife, Teri, now live in Arlington, Texas. He has a son and daughter: Paul and Rebecca.

My mother and father were hard working, self-sufficient people. Mom had the guts of two tomcats. When dad came home from the Korean War he landed at Treasure Island in San Francisco Bay. Mom loaded three kids into a car with no air conditioning, and headed to California, a cross-country trip before interstate highways. There were few motels, few restaurants, few gas stations, and no rest stops.

My parents were two of the most determined people I ever met. When we needed a home they built it. When they wanted a home in the country they built it after they were in their 60s. They built these homes with their hands, and with little if any help.

Dad was a frustrated farmer and when they moved to the country he put in a huge garden in which mom, of course, did most of the weeding, watering, and harvesting. No matter where he was, dad had a subscription to Farm and Ranch magazine delivered.

Charles T. and Marcella Charles, Theresa, 1919

to be served up. I liked it sometimes. Her latest recipe was me else looked at it and said "eeewww."

I lived in Houston, Texas for the first 45 years of my life. The Spring Branch Independent School District and the Fox Hill VA Schools provided my early education. Later education was at the University of Houston. I worked in the wholesale food industry, retail, and as a general contractor. In 1985, I was employed as an engineering field officer by AAFES. I was stationed in Japan, Philippine Islands, Europe, Micronesia, the Balkans, and CONUS. I have had the opportunity to travel in the Middle East, China, Indonesia, western and eastern Europe, in addition to my many duty stations. I was forced to retire in 2002 due to Myasthenia Gravis.

My son John Paul, who was born 6 March 1970, has been a Houston police officer since 1992. He has competed in full contact karate and has

several championships. He presently competes in Brazilian style Jui Jitsu. He and his wife Shannon are active in the Woodforest Baptist Church, Little League Baseball, and Peewee Football. Paul has just recently completed a master's degree in theology at Concordia Presbyterian Seminary, and plans to pursue a PhD in theology. Shannon worked in architecture until she suspended her career to rear their three sons: Mathew, Jonathan, and Andrew.

My daughter Rebecca, who was born 10 September 1972, taught hearing impaired children in the Sugarland Independent School District, until she suspended her career to rear two daughters: Anna and Olivia. She was deeply involved in student government in both secondary school and at the university. She and her husband, Mark Asbury, who is manager of a Houston IT firm, are also active in the Woodforest Baptist Church.[503]

The second child of Sam and Theresa was Sue. She married Jon Lotz in 1961 and they have two daughters: Kimberly and Kathleen. Sue wrote the following narrative concerning her family and memories of her parents:

Our mother had many challenges in her life, but she always came through. As a child and teenager, she lived with many different families, some not so nice. The last family she lived with was the Leonards, which seemed to have been the happiest time of her childhood, as she and Agnes their daughter became best friends. As an adult she was faced with similar adversity and she would conquer the challenges as best she could.

Our father was in the military so we were camp followers. Mom always tried to make all the places in which we lived as comfortable as possible, which was quite a chore at times. She told of not letting me learn to walk because she didn't want me crawling on the floor, too many roaches. She would keep us outside as much as possible until we moved.

After World War II, dad joined the Texas National Guard as an airplane maintenance supervisor at Ellington Air Force Base in Houston, Texas. This gave us the opportunity to put down roots, so our mother and father built our house on the ancestral Wahrenberger family farm in the memorial area of Spring Branch, Texas. They worked tirelessly clearing, building, painting, and all the things necessary to build a home.

Mom raised chickens, so we always had a chicken in the pot and eggs for breakfast. I remember once when I was about six or seven years old when she asked me to get some eggs. I went to the hen house then came running back screaming that the chickens had laid a million eggs. Mom told me to quit playing around but I insisted, so whe came to look. To her surprise, there were eggs everywhere, maybe there wasn't a million but to a small child it was close. I guess if this had happened today we would have said, "chickens gone wild."

After I contracted Polio in 1955, and was in the hospital for six months, mom missed coming to see me every day only once. That meant so much knowing that I could count on her love and support.

In the early 1970s, mom and dad bought property in the Conroe area and once again built a home. This time they had the help of their sons and son and daughter-in-law. If you can imagine having a fun filled family gathering digging a deep hole for a septic tank. Ken sitting on the edge telling my Jon "get to work let me see the dirt fly" then Jon getting out and Ken jumping in, then Jon telling Ken "get to work the dirt's not flying high enough." Great family fun! Our parents built a wonderful country home with a big front porch. Everyone loved to come to their great BBQ's. Dad made the best BBQ and sauce and mom was a great cook from tasty vegetable dishes to fork tender roasts. You could always count on good country cooking with mouth-watering pies, etc, etc.

Some of the most enjoyable and memorable times for our mother were visiting her brother Charles and her sister Mildred and their families. Whenever we were able to travel to Oklahoma it would bring such a big smile to her face. We had such good times seeing all of our cousins and aunts and uncles, especially uncle Charles and aunt Julia.

Our mother worked very hard all of her life. When she was quite young she took care of new mothers and their babies until the mothers were strong enough to be on their own. Probably her most enjoyable and fulfilling work was as a cosmetologist. She attended schools and seminars to learn all the latest techniques and products. She really enjoyed helping her customers find the correct cosmetics and other preparations to look their best. What Ken, John, and I can say we learned from our mother is that whatever life brings, if you are willing to bend, to learn, and to work hard you can conquer the many challenges that are sure to come.

The Wahrenbergers, 1961

Jon A. Lotz and I were married 2 November 1961. Kimberly Linette (Kim) was born 14 June 1966, and Diana Kathleen (Kat) was born 30 May 1970. Kim Married in 1988 and her son Jon Martin was born 23 September 1989. She is a single working mom, so it has been a blessing to help her care for our grandson. Kat married Darin Clark 18 July 1991 and they have no children.

After graduating from business school I worked in the bookkeeping department of the Southern Drug Company, then in bookkeeping for the Bank of Texas. I also had an enjoyable full time job being the homeroom,

PTA, Brownie, car-pooling, cupcake, and cookie baking mom for our daughters.

Jon was employed by NASA, JSC in Houston for 18 years and was maintenance manager of the fire and security systems. He was employed by Compaq Computer Corporation for 15 years designing networking systems. Jon is currently retired and working part time at Sam Houston Race Park. We visit my brother Kenneth and his wife, who live nearby in Houston. He makes his living in computers and Angelia is a nurse. They have no children.

Toshiba International has employed Kim for 16 years. Her position at the present time is in customer service as an inside sales representative. Jon, Kim's son plays the tuba in his Jersey Village High School marching band. He is in K level history and English, his favorite subjects.

Kat and Darin owned their own tattoo studio for six years. Darin is an award winning tattoo artist. Kat writes and hopefully by the time you read this she will be published. Patti Phong came to live with us in 1984 at age 18. She lived with us for four years. She married David Borzak 10 July 1993. They live in Gilbert, Arizona with their daughters Samantha and Sabrina.[504]

Charles M. Whipple, Senior

The youngest child of Charles and Marcella was Charles, who is the subject of the next chapter.

Chapter 10

Charles M. Whipple Senior
The Whipples of Central Oklahoma

Charles Melvin[9] Whipple (Charles[8], William[7], Jabez[6], Jesse[5], Eleazer[4], William[3], William[2], John[1]), the youngest child of Marcella and Charles, was born 28 January 1919 in Oklahoma City, Oklahoma and died 13 December 1979 in Oklahoma City.[505] He married Julia Mae Ledford 19 September 1937 in Oklahoma City.[506] They had seven children who lived to adulthood:

i. Charles, born 11 July 1938; married Gweneth Brown
ii. Bobby, born 1 October 1941; married Mary Screws
iii. Jimmy, born 19 September 1943; married Connie Rawlins
iv. Julia, born 17 September 1946; married Gary Webster and Phil Suhre
v. Paul, born 26 October 1954; married Margaret Kukuk and E. Meeker
vi. Deborah, born 17 November 1957, married Keith Miller
vii. Kathleen, born 1 June 1960; married Mike Caliman

Recollections of Charles M. Whipple, Senior
As Told In His Own Words

My mother died when I was one year old, 10 February 1920, when we were living at 25 E. Ash (now SE 15th). Dad got married in June 1920 to a woman named Adda Nimmo. My three sisters were adopted out when I was still a pre-schooler. My brother Johnny went to live with our uncle Harvey Haley for a while and then lived with grandpa Raidt. I believe that because of a conflict between dad and the Raidts, the girls were taken away. We then moved to Tulsa, Oklahoma where I remember going to school at "Loyal School," I think. When we left Tulsa in a few months, we moved to Shawnee, Oklahoma, where dad worked for another oil company. We lived in a "camp" in a canvas tent with a cook stove outside.

Charles Whipple, 1955

In the meantime, my brother Johnny married a woman named Ruby Williams about 1929. My oldest sister, Catharine, came to live with us, and we moved to Northeast 4th, just off of Walnut Street. We then moved to Kleghern between Reno and California, where I remember busting my kneecap. Dad was working for the Oklahoma Railway

Company at the time as a mechanic. Adda and dad didn't get along most of the time and continually separated. In the latter part of 1931, we moved to Western and Grand, where Hollies Drive Inn is now located, and where they finally divorced.

Also, in the meantime, in the summer of 1931, my sister, Catharine, was killed in a car wreck on Highway 66 just north of the State Capitol Building. I remember attending the funeral at Perrine Funeral Home on 10th and North Robinson Street. This funeral home also had dad's funeral. Also, about this same time, Johnny's wife died in childbirth. She and the baby are buried at Sunnylane Cemetery.

Dad and I then moved into a rooming house beside Franklin School on Reno Street. He got laid off at the Railway Company in 1932 when we lived at 309 W. Nobel, which is now 3rd Street. We then moved to Dallas, Texas, where Johnny had rented us a place. Johnny had moved down there about six months before. It was at that time that Adda sent dad a telegram saying that my long lost sister, Theresa, was there trying to find him. Dad went to the City, picked her up, and brought her to Dallas. Dad couldn't find steady work, so we all moved back to Oklahoma City in our 1928 four-cylinder Chevrolet. I recall living in several places around the City. With the exception of oil field work, dad had few jobs to speak of all during the Depression. But I do remember going down to Dallas to visit Johnny and his new wife, Ola, where Theresa was also living. This was around 1933 or '34. I also remember our making the harvest, coming through El Reno and visiting with dad's stepbrother, Charles Pavy, in about 1933. I particularly remember Mr. Pavy's long white mustache.

Julia L. Whipple, 1955

The first time I remember my sister Mildred was in 1935. Johnny was in Dallas and came to visit us in his 1934 Ford. Uncle Sam Raidt told him where she was. Johnny wanted to surprise dad, so the four of us went to Coyle, Oklahoma to visit her and her family.

I don't remember exactly, but it seems that Adda and dad got together again, and we lived in an old Chevrolet car and cooked out on the ground while dad worked in the oil fields. About 1936, we moved to 623 SE 6th Street in Walnut Grove. We lived there until 1939, when I bought four lots at 948 SE 5th, across the alley from uncle Toy Ledford.

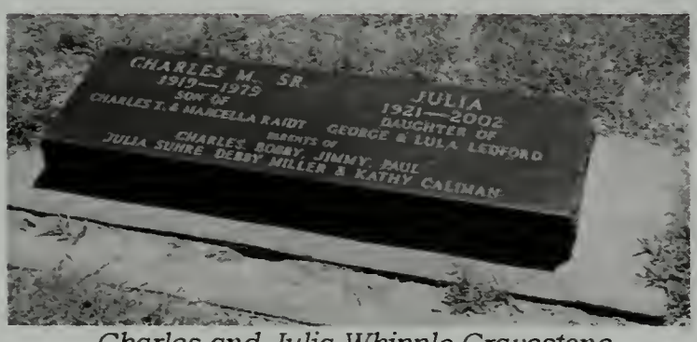
I first met my wife Julia in 1933, the year of the big flood. We kids were all at the river playing. I remember almost drowning her on an inner tube. The next time I saw her was at a church about a year later, and then about another year later when I was loading up a cow for Mr. Ledford. In 1937, all us neighborhood teenagers went to a picnic at Springlake Park. She was with

someone else, but I took her home. She lived at 919 SE 6th. We starting dating, but it was difficult to get away from her many brothers and sisters, who called her "mama." Without the knowledge of our parents, we were married. We were afraid to tell anyone. But finally I told dad and he went to the Ledford's and told them. I think that if Mr. Ledford had had the money, he would have had it annulled right then and there. I worked at odd jobs to support us during this time, such as, brick laying ant truck driving. Johnny came to visit and talked dad into going to California when Charles Junior was two of three months old. Dad stayed there until just before Johnny Marvin, our second son, was born. During this time I bought lots on 5th Street for $100 per lot.

One day I came home from work and dad told me that Julia and the children were at the hospital. I jumped in to the truck and got there as soon as possible. Johnny died 21 days later of spinal meningitis and polio. Charles Junior also had the same diseases, but he recovered. During this time, in the summer of 1940, Beulah Ledford, uncle Toy's daughter, and Charles Junior were playing together when he stuck his hand into boiling hot fudge candy. We still have a photo of him with his hand all bandaged up.

Sons of Charles Whipple, 2001
Charles, Paul, Jim, Bob

I left for California in the spring of 1941, just before Easter. My wife, who was expecting our third child, came about two or three months later. We lived in a large apartment house owned by Mr. and Mrs. Holland, while I worked at a furniture store. Dad lived with Johnny because we didn't have enough room in our small apartment. He would come to stay with us during the day, and one day Charles Junior followed him home for several blocks to where Johnny worked. Johnny worked at the Tannehill Trucking and Garage and had been living there since 1937 or so. In the summer of 1941, we moved into a very nice home next door to Johnny in Gardena. Our third child, Bobby Eugene, was born 1 October 1941. Then in December, the war started. We did not want to live that close to the coast, so we moved back to Oklahoma. We just walked off and left the house; we didn't even try to sell it.



Charles and Julia Whipple Gravestone

Back in Oklahoma City, I tried to get into the Army but was turned down because of an enlarged heart. So, I went to work for the WPA driving a truck for a construction firm that did work at Tinker Field Air Force Base. During the war, dad worked at Will Rogers Airport where he became ill with a hernia. The operation was a success, but his mind became deranged. I called

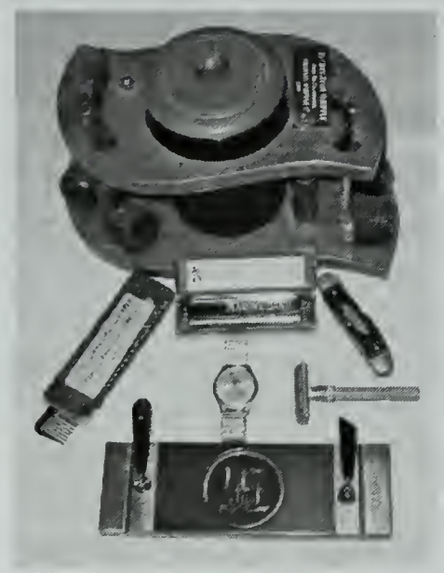
Johnny, who came to see us, but he couldn't help. Dad stayed in the hospital for two months, went into a coma, and finally died on 1 May 1944. Also, during the Second World War, our fourth child, Jimmy Leroy, was born.

After dad's death, we moved back to California so I could work in the shipyards. During that year, we lived at Redondo Beach and then Hawthorne. After the war ended, we moved back to Oklahoma, during which time I worked at several garages as a mechanic. Then George Ledford and I had a garage of our own out on Highway 62 at the Tuttle exit. Our first daughter, Judy Laverne, was born in September of 1946 while we were living in the 800 block of SE 5th.

I left for Stockton, California just before my 28th birthday in January 1947. Bill and Harvey Nimmo [stepbrothers] said that I could get a good job there, so I drove to Stockton with them. My wife joined me in May of 1947. While there, I worked for the Empire Advertising Company and was on the road a lot. At first we lived in a tent, later moving to south Lincoln Street on property that I bought from my employer.

We moved back to Oklahoma City in 1949. My former stepmother, Adda, died in the fall of 1949, so I know the move must have been in the spring. I worked for the City in the water department, and we lived in the 800 block of SE 29th street for about three months. Later we moved to 700 block of SE 7th, next to the North Canadian River, until April of 1950. While we were there, I borrowed $800 to buy a truck. Several people co-signed for me, including George Ledford and Gordon Johnson. However, I couldn't find work, became sick with pneumonia, and lost the truck. In the fall of 1949, we went to Clarendon, Texas and picked cotton.

In January of 1950, I went to work for Harold Akers at the American Auto Parts Company. It was a good job, and I eventually became manager. I recall that for my birthday that month, Charles Junior bought me a shaving razor with the 50 cents I had given him for making all "A's" on his report card. I worked there until Mr. Akers died in 1953. We lived in the 100 block of SE 12th. I recall Theresa and her family coming to visit us in the summer of 1950. I also recall that Johnny came to visit us in 1951. Later his son, John, came to visit and stayed about one month.



Charles Whipple, Memorabilia

In the spring of 1953, we moved to the 600 block of SE 59th, where I worked for Wilson Auto Salvage and drove an old 1946 Plymouth. A year later we moved to 641 SE 35th where I worked for Ted Farris Tank Company. At this time Paul David, our youngest son, was born in 1954. Then we moved to the 800 block of SE 28 in 1955. I went to California briefly in the summer of 1956 to work while my family stayed in Oklahoma. After returning, I went to work for the Stephens Milk Company as a mechanic. In the spring of 1957, we

moved into our present home at 310 SW 38th Street. I later went to work for 7-Up Bottling Company as head mechanic. My last two daughters, Debbie and Kathy, were born while living there. I had my first major heart attack in 1964. I tried to work, but was not physically able. I had another attack in 1967 and a stomach operation in 1971, and received complete disability in 1972.

Charles M. Whipple died 13 December 1979 from a heart attack. He was buried at the Red Rock Methodist Cemetery, Calumet, Oklahoma near to his father and grandfather Whipple. His obituary appeared in the local newspaper:[507]

> Charles M. Whipple Sr., 60, 310 S.W. 38. Passed away Thursday at South Community Hospital. Services, 10am Monday, Chapel of the Chimes, Capitol Hill Funeral Home. Interment at Calumet in Redrock Cemetery. Born in Okla. City & life long resident, he was a mechanic and had worked for 7-up bottling Co. for 10 years prior to his retirement in 1965. Survivors include his wife, Julia of the home; 4 sons, Jim & Paul of Okla. City, Dr. C.M. Whipple of Edmond & Bobby of Tennille, Georgia; also 3 daughters of Okla. City, Julia Suhre, Deborah Miller, & Linda Whipple; 2 sisters, Mrs. Theresa Wahrenberger of Houston, Mildred Wegner of Guthrie & 20 grandchildren. The family suggests memorial donations to the Oklahoma Medical Research Foundation-Heart Fund.

The memorabilia of Charles M. Whipple, Senior, shown above is in possession of the author and will be passed down to his children and grandchildren.

Recollections of
Julia Mae Ledford Whipple
As Told In Her Own Words

My father, George H. Ledford, Sr. (born 2 November 1897, a native of McKinney, Texas), met and married my mother, Lula Mae Heard, at Ardmore, Oklahoma in August 1920. I was born 19 May 1921, at Ada, Oklahoma in a one-room log cabin. I recall the story my aunt Helen Diaz and mom told down through the years, of their traveling from Ada in a covered wagon with my baby bed, a large shoebox hanging from the top of the wagon. I weighed only three pounds at birth, and was a delicate baby who cried all the time. My parents put me on a formula of half milk and half coffee because I could not survive on breast milk. I traveled in the covered wagon with my parents for about two years, stopping now and then to sharecrop. They stayed in Rolf, Oklahoma for a while, waiting the birth of my brother George.

After leaving Rolf, I remember a funeral I went to. One of my aunt's twin babies was killed when her car ran off a narrow bridge. This must have been about 1925 because mom was expecting my second brother Harold, who was born in October of that year in Tuttle, Oklahoma. Perhaps we traveled awhile

after that. I do recall we were making a trip in 1925, or perhaps later, in an old Model-T truck. The truck gave out on us, and dad had to leave it in a farmer's yard. Relatives were following us in a second truck, so dad put a lot of our personal belongings on it and we came on to Oklahoma City, to the home of my grandparents, the Lemuel Ledfords who lived somewhere on NE 36th street. Dad never did get to go back after his truck.

We lived with my grandparents for a long time, finally moving to Packing Town in late 1927. My oldest sister, Edna, was born in 1928, and then we went to Lindsey, Oklahoma to sharecrop. Edna was only a few days old at the time, and mom worked in the fields with dad from sunup until sundown, so I took care of the three children, kept house, and stood on a wooden box to wash dishes and help prepare the meals. My brother, Buddy, and I walked about a mile late every night to get our milk from a neighbor. The coyotes just about scared us to death. We swung on grape vines a lot, and lit a few vines to smoke, but dad beat the "daylights" out of us when he caught us.

We came back to Oklahoma City in the last part of 1929 or early 1930, moving to NE 36th street, directly north of the state capitol building. We had a tent to cook in, a house trailer for a living and sleeping room, and a large cement cellar with a big fireplace. Our Christmas there I'll never forget: my first real doll and stocking hung from the fireplace. Dad didn't know it, but we kids were watching him play Santa Claus. My sister, Betty, was born in that cellar in 1931. We lived for a while on Eastern Street, in a tent right in front of the Old Soldier's Home. It was later taken over by the County.

Daughters of Charles Whipple, 2001
Kathie, Julia, and Debbie

We moved on down to Eastern and Reno streets to a blue house. Right across the street from us was a large building called the "cotton compress." Many bales of cotton were kept in it and on the dock. That was where all our personal things and furniture were washed away in a big flood. We were all asleep when some man knocked on our door to awaken us. Dad put his feet down on the floor and the water was already up to his ankles. We all were rushed out to higher ground so fast that no one had time to dress, having just nightclothes and a few things picked up in a hurry. We got our car out, but many little boats were being used. Dad and a friend took a boat afterwards and went back. They said the water was just above the tops of our windows outside of the house; tables and chairs were floating around in the water.

Sometime between 1928 and 1931, we lived on NW 49th street where my sister, Edna, came near dying from choking with whooping cough. I remember because mom sent me to get dad, who was working at Fairlawn Cemetery. I ran all the way there. Dad and I jumped into his old car and sped back, but someone had already revived her and had called a doctor to make sure she was all right.

During that time, we also lived camped out somewhere else near a large lake. We cooked out and slept in tents. When winter came dad was away in the cotton harvest, so mom, Buddy, and myself bought big 50-gallon drums from a bridge project nearby and built a barrelhouse around our cook stove and table. It was sometimes very warm, but cold to sleep in. While living on NW 49th, we kids went to Belle Isle Lake to skate on the ice: sometimes we worked in a neighbor's green house for maybe a dime or quarter between us. There on 49th street, Buddy and I attended our first school.

In 1934, we lived for a short time somewhere southeast of the City. Dad was ill a lot, so we moved east of the Byers River Bridge on 6th or 7th streets. While living there, we were evacuated to Red Cross tents. After the water went down, we moved back and began the biggest mud cleanup I've seen. I went to stay with my grandparents about the time to help in sickness, being on my own for the first time. Also while living there, I met my future husband for the first time. We kids were playing in the river with some neighbor girls, floating in the water on inner tubes filled with air. Charlie and some other boys came along the bank and were trying to make friends with us. The boys began thrashing water at us and trying to turn us over. We got mad and they left. I didn't see him again for a long time after that.

We then moved up to 919 SE 6th street. My dad had bought a large tin house with a large garage on some lots. My grandparents lived with us a long time, as did aunts, uncles, cousins and so on. Uncle Johnny Heard, mother's brother, and his family came up from Hinton, Oklahoma a lot, as did aunt Florence and her children, Loretta and Bob Towlian. They lived at Union City, Oklahoma at the time. Grandpa and dad built another house beside us on a lot for the grandparents. My family lived there from 1934 or 1935 until the state bought all their land to widen the river in the mid 1950s.

I attended Walnut Grove Grade School and later Franklin Junior High. Dad worked for the WPA with his truck. Mom, dad, and we kids attended church a lot. We went to many Baptist camp meetings. Also, sometimes we all went in grandpa's wagon to ball games, taking large lunch baskets and watermelons and spending the day.

The second time I met my future husband was at a brush-arbor meeting that I and my brothers and sisters attended. When we finally got there, being late as usual, I saw Charlie leading the testimony service. He was trying to quit smoking, and so he took his pack of tobacco out of his shirt pocket and threw it into the weeds. Some of the kids standing around dived in looking for it. After the meeting, he came out to where I was trying to gather the kids together to go home and began talking to us. He asked if we had not met somewhere before. I didn't realize right away that he was the same redhead who had almost drowned me in the river some months before. He finally asked if he might walk me home. He asked to see me again; I said no, as my dad was very strict on us.

But a long time, maybe a year later, I met him the third time at one of my friends' homes-- not that he cared, because he was dating her off and on and had known them for many years. Then, my friend began dating another boy, whom she later married, so Charlie began talking to me now and then. Finally, he worked up the nerve to approach my folks to get acquainted with them. He came over occasionally and finally asked my dad if I could go to the movies with him. I believe the first two tries were a no. Eventually, my cousins, Loretta and Bob, came for the weekend, so dad gave in to the movies as long as Bob and Loretta kept it a foursome. After that, he began letting me date as long as we took the kids or were with someone. All our friends began to plan on getting married- they were all older than we were. Charlie asked me to marry him almost every time we met. My folks felt I should finish school, and I didn't care to get married because we were so young. I tried to discourage him, but finally gave in.

Knowing that my dad would never approve, we ran off and got married. Charlie had planned it all with a preacher and had a license before even telling me. I guess he was pretty sure of himself. He came over and took the kids and me to a movie on a Sunday afternoon. He said, "Let's put the kids in the show and go for a ride." We went just a few blocks to his stepmother's home. I had promised to marry him, and so he said that was it. He told his stepmother what we were planning; she said "nothing doing" as she knew my dad, and that what we were doing was premature. But finally Charlie won, and she asked some friend next door if we could have the preacher marry us there with the friend as witness. We were married on September 19, 1937. The first preacher asked didn't show up, so Charles set out to find another. Afterward, Charlie took me straight home and took off. Later he returned, after telling his dad what we had done. Mr. Whipple took my dad behind the garage and told him. Well, we caught the "third degree," with Charlie producing the license, and a promise from us that I would finish school.

We lived with his dad, and they worked their Model-T truck for a living as roofers, bricklayers, and so on. Sometime after, Charlie bought a bigger truck and went to work on the WPA. I went a few blocks every day to my mother's house to see my little brother, Johnny, whom I missed very much. He was just learning to walk. From 1937 to 1940, we stayed as close to the folks and his dad as we could. We always felt we had let them down. With our two young sons, Charles Junior and Johnny, and still so young, we were a little afraid to strike out on our own, I guess. After the death of our youngest son, who was born 3 March 1940 and died 8 November 1940, and the near death of Charles Junior, we were so upset and unhappy that we just wanted to get away to forget. We traveled to Los Angeles to visit Charlie's brother, Johnny, and decided to stay awhile because Charlie had found work. I had only been there a week when my mom wired us that my dad was near death from pneumonia. She was so frightened without us. However, I was not able to go back, as I was expecting our 3rd child.

Charlie had become an ordained Baptist minister shortly after we were married, and so we knew what it was like to trust, hope, and pray, having come through so much in our lives so far. We lived in Los Angeles, Charlie working at a furniture store. Later we moved out to Gardena, a suburb. His brother Johnny lived next door when our third child was born, 1 October 1941 at Doctor's Hospital. After bringing Bobby home from the hospital, our family seemed complete and happier than it had been for a long time. But before Bobby came, Charlie and I took little Charles as often as we could and went to the beach and on sightseeing trips. I'll never forget Charles' first trip to the beach. He was gathering and piling up small seashells when all at once he began to cry. We rushed to him and he was pointing at the little shells that were crawling away. He wasn't much for gathering shells for a while.

Grandpa Whipple had joined us by that time. He was so lonely away from Charlie, so he rented our house in Oklahoma City and flew to join us. He worshipped his grandsons, as he did his own son, and spoiled them, as most grandparents do. My mom and dad had seven children younger than I, so they had so much to do they didn't miss us as much as Mr. Whipple did. But dad did write us often, as mom couldn't write. When I came home from the hospital with Bobby, that very night there was a big earthquake near us in a town called Torrance. It did a lot of damage, tearing down brick buildings, smashing cars, etc. It made a large crack in our house across the ceiling and broke some windows. We went to Torrance, and it was, indeed, a disaster area. Believe me, we would have taken off for Oklahoma right then if we could have afforded it. When Bobby was only three or four weeks, we took the children and grandpa Whipple, my cousin Weldon Ledford who was living with us, a neighbor, Nadine Parr, and her daughter, Leatris, who was the same age as Charles Junior, to Tijuana, Old Mexico. Before crossing the border, we visited the old San Juan Mission. That is where Charles Junior's picture was taken standing among all those large cactus plants.

Back home, all went as usual: work, take occasional trips, and bills. On December 7th, I recall we were going into Los Angeles for some reason when we noticed a lot of police patrols leading official cars and trucks toward the beach. When we returned home, we found out that Pearl Harbor had been bombed. Every one had to keep their blinds down if there were any lights on at all in the home. The next day, war was declared: December 8, 1941. The War Department began to talk of sending the wives and children away from the coastline and keeping all the men for war use. We were very scared, and so decided to pack up and come back to Oklahoma, leaving our beautiful home, furniture, and everything else behind. We reached Oklahoma and my parents' home on December 23 or 24 of 1941. Charlie, me, our two sons, dad Whipple, and Skeeter the rat terrier dog, moved back to our old home at 948 SE 5th street. We lived and worked around the City for a while, and then Charlie took a job near Durant, Oklahoma helping to build the Dennison Dam. Charlie brought me

back home to await the birth of our fourth child, Jimmy Leroy. He started back to Durant that night and the baby was born before morning, 19 September 1943. I had written a letter to Charlie after he left that morning telling him that I wasn't feeling very well and wanted him to come back. However, I didn't get to mail it. Next morning dad Whipple mailed it for me. He just wrote on the back of the sealed letter, "Baby boy born this morning." Did his fellow workers on the job ever kid Charlie about the occasion! Charlie got leave and was home in 24 hours. Then, within a few weeks, grandpa Whipple got sick and died 1 May 1944. After his death, we decided to go back to California. We lived in Lawndale, Charlie working for a garage and later we moved to Hawthorne. During most of this time, Charlie was working in the shipyards.

We moved back to Oklahoma after the war was over in 1945, leaving Bobby with Johnny for a while. We had to go back to get Bobby because he had fallen and broken his arm. The doctors would not let his uncle have it set, as they had to have the parent's permission. Anyway, I got home again, and the first week back Bobby fell off a pony and broke his elbow on the same arm. Shortly thereafter, our first daughter, Judy Laverne, was born, 17 September 1946.

During the 1950s and 1960s, we had three more children, Paul, Debbie, and Kathy. Charles Junior graduated from high school and college, and Jimmy from high school. Jimmy was an All State football player for Capitol Hill High School, and received a scholarship to play football at the University of Oklahoma. Bobby left for the army, and after getting out decided to stay in Georgia where he had been stationed and where he had gotten married. The three youngest children got married all about the same time, so Charlie and I didn't see much of them for a while. We lived in the same house on Southwest 38th Street during all those years, I established by own childcare center, and Charlie continued to work as a mechanic until he became too ill to work. After that, we had more time to spend with our grandchildren who visited very often.

After Charlie died, it was decided that I should not live alone. It was emotionally difficult to move away from the house we had lived in for so long; the house that our youngest three children had grown up in. During the 1980s and '90s, I lived in turn with most of my children. I lived with Bobby in Moore until he moved back to Georgia. A while later I visited him for a month. It was in the middle of a political campaign in which he was trying to get elected to the office of county sheriff. He did not win that time, but it was an educational experience for me, and I got to know a lot of people very quickly. Then I lived with Kathy for a couple of years until she moved to Missouri, because her husband found a job up there. She has been gone for

The Ledford Children

years now and I really miss her and the children. The longest I lived anywhere was in Edmond with Charles Junior and his son and family. During these over 20 years living with my children, I mostly helped around the house and took care of the grandchildren when asked. I find it hard to believe that I have almost 50 grandchildren and great grandchildren. While living in Edmond in 1990, I got a wonderful Christmas present. It was a tiny puppy that they had hidden in the clothes dryer. Brandy and I have grown old together. She has become deaf and almost blind, but then so have I. During the last four years, I have lived with Paul David in south Oklahoma City. It makes it more convenient for the grandchildren and great grandchildren to visit me.

Most of the rest of my remembrances are the same as my husband's, so I'll just mention a few other things to fill in. Grandpa Lemuel Ledford (born 1870) died while we lived on SE 35th. Grandma Ledford, Edna (born 1867) died in 1957, a year later. Both were born in Whitfield County, Georgia. My dad, who was born in McKinney, Texas, died on 24 June 1957, and my mother died 14 October 1976. The children of George and Lula Ledford are shown in the photograph above in the order of birth, left to right, except Linda who is not shown:

i. Julia, born 19 May 1921; died 5 June 2002; married Charles Whipple
ii. George, born 17 May 1924; died 22 March 1997; married Zella Walker
iii. Harold, born 21 October 1925; died 17 November 2003; married Wilma Bingham
iv. Edna, born 26 September 1928; married Gordon Johnson
v. Betty; born 1931; died 1980; married Rodney Richardson
vi. Donald, born 16 January 1934; married Joyce Brewer
vii. Johnny, born 8 June 1936; married Charlene Hopkins
viii. Patsy, born 24 August 1938; died 20 February 1978; married Ross Clark
ix. Ruth, born 26 December 1940; married Walter Fields
x. Marion, born 19 January 1942
xi. Linda, born 6 November 1944; died January 2003; married M. Williams
xii. Earlene, born 26 February 1948; married Ron Smith

It is said that my grandpa and grandma Ledford (maiden name Thompson) were born in Whitfield County, Georgia and came west in a covered wagon, eventually settling in north Texas in the late 1880s. They lived as farmers in and around Cook and Collin Counties, Texas. It is not known when they first came to Oklahoma. My maternal grandma and grandpa Heard lived in southern Oklahoma. She died in 1910 when my mother was a young girl. I think her maiden name was Duckworth. Grandpa Heard died in 1920, I think. He was killed in the wreck of his wagon, and is buried at Thackerville, Oklahoma.

Julia Mae Ledford Whipple died of heart failure 5 June 2002 in Oklahoma City, and was buried next to her husband in the Red Rock Methodist Cemetery, Calumet, Oklahoma. Her obituary appeared in the local newspaper [508]

Julia Ledford Whipple, 81, died peacefully Jun 5, 2002, at home in Oklahoma City. She was born May 19, 1921, in Ada, Oklahoma, to George and Lula Heard Ledford. She married Charles M. Whipple, September 19, 1937. He preceded her in death on December 13, 1979. To them, 8 children were born, 5 sons, Charles of Edmond, Jim and Paul of Oklahoma City, and Bob of Sandersville, Georgia, and John who is deceased; 3 daughters, Julia Suhre of Oklahoma City, Debbie Miller of Newalla and Kathy Caliman of Waynesville, Mo. She was blessed with 23 grandchildren and 28 great grandchildren, to all whom she was a vital part of life. She leaves behind 8 brother and sisters, Harold, Don, and Marion of Oklahoma City, and John of Ft. Worth, Texas, and Edna Devail of Sapulpa, Ruth Field, Linda Williams, and Earlene Smith of Oklahoma City. A brother, George, and sisters, Betty and Patsy Clark preceded her in death, Julia was a homemaker all of her life, faithful wife, and loving mother whose later years centered around her many grandchildren and great grandchildren. She also leaves behind many nieces, nephews and friends with whom she shared so much love and joy. Her presence will be greatly missed by all who knew and loved her. Service will be Monday, June 10, 2002, at 10 am, at the Capitol Hill Funeral Home. Interment will be in the Whipple burial grounds at Red Rock Methodist Cemetery in Calumet, Ok under the direction of Capitol Hill Funeral Home.

Bobby Eugene Whipple

Bobby Eugene Whipple was born 1 October 1941 in Los Angeles, California. He married Mary Screws. Their children are:

i. Christopher, born 8 September 1963; married Terri Crews. They have two ildren, Christopher, born 9 December 1981. Christopher has a daughter, Allison, and a stepdaughter, Carson Hayes
Juli, born 11 September 1988

ii. Toni, born 6 December 1965; married Coleman Ellis. Their son is Ricky. Toni was also married to Lee Hodges. Her step children are: Stacey Williford and Hartwell Williford.

iii. Debra, born 18 October 1967; married Daryl Green
Debra and Daryl have three children: Dana, born 9 April 1987, Daryl, born 22 November 1989, and Deanna, born 21 January 1991

I was born at Doctor's Hospital in Los Angeles, California at 8:47 in the evening during one of my parent's stays there. As a young couple in their teens and early 20s, they traveled a lot between there and Oklahoma City. In Oklahoma, we often lived with mom's parents, the Ledfords, in a part of town called Walnut Grove, which no longer exists. In the 1940s and early 50s, I spent much time playing in and around grandpa Ledford's barn with mom's younger siblings. On one occasion, he caught Marion and me smoking our first ever cigarettes. He always stated that all he saw was smoke coming from the back

and thought that the barn was on fire. I received my first broken bone behind that barn when I fell off of a pony. To this day I still have the pen in my left elbow that was inserted to hold it together.

Dad did most of the grocery shopping. Every Saturday he got his check and to the store he would go, saying that mom usually spent too much money. While living on southeast 59th Street during the mid 1950s, we would sit around the old radio that sat in our living room listening to "gun smoke" while eating sandwiches, potato chips, and drinking soft drinks. And on one episode, the bad guys cut Chester's mule's ear off, and dad had tears in his eyes. I guess all of us had tears that night. Dad loved to attend "donkey ball games" at Wiley Post Park on south Robinson Street just south of the river. He also enjoyed racecar driving at Taft Stadium.

Toni, Bob, Christopher, Debra, 2006

Mom was a quiet person, always going to church. I guess you could say that we were a financially poor family, but our parents loved each and every one of us kids. They did the very best they could with what they had. I only hope that my children will remember me that same way. My brothers and sisters have always been true and faithful to each other, not like some families who are torn apart and unforgiving. The Whipple family tree has come along way since the time of Captain John Whipple.

I ran away from home when I was about 13 years old and wound up in a small town in the state of Georgia-- Swainsboro. While there, I married a young lady by the name of Mary Screws and we have three children: Christopher, Tonie, and Debra. At that time, I started a career in law enforcement. After awhile, I needed to get away from the stress of that profession, so we moved to Oklahoma City in 1981 where I opened an auto repair business on south Portland Street with my son and brother, Paul. In 1999, I sold the business and went back into law enforcement for the Washington County, Georgia sheriff's department, and at present I work for that county's school system as a police officer. Hopefully, I will be retired next year.

My son is district general manager for the Canteen Vending Company out of Augusta, Georgia. His geographic area covers Augusta to Savanna to Macon then back to Augusta. His wife works for a construction company as their bookkeeper. Tonie and Debra are veterinarian assistants. Tonie's husband is an engineer, and Debra's works as a heavy equipment operator. They all live in nearby towns.[509]

Jimmy Leroy Whipple

Jimmy Leroy Whipple, was born 19 September 1943 in Oklahoma City Oklahoma. He married Connie Rawlins. They have four children:

i. Pamala, born 24 August 1963; married Ricky Miller
Pamala's son is Riley, born 5 May 2001
ii. Jimmy, born 15 September 1966; married Teresa Coffey
Jimmy's son is Joshua, born 16 November 1990
iii. Ronny, born 21 January 1968
iv. Jerry, born 24 April 1971; married Janita Kennedy
Jerry has two children: Kylee and Anna

For as long as I can remember, dad did the weekly grocery shopping at Honest John's Market. The old building is still there at Third Street and South Harvey, though now used for something else. Among the items he always bought was a large bag of cookies. As we five kids helped carry in the grocery bags the cookies would inevitably be eaten by the time everything was in the house. By the time dinner was ready we weren't hungry.

Jimmy, Jim, Jerry, 1994

Recently seeing a sign advertising gasoline for three dollars a gallon reminded me of an experience with dad. After we were first married, my wife and I lived in a mobile home that needed repairing. I asked dad to take me to buy skirting for it because he had a big enough pickup truck in which to haul the materials. As we drove down the road at an increasing speed he would then turn the engine off and coast for a while--then start the process all over again. After several minutes of this, I finally asked what he was doing to which he replied, "I am trying to save gas so it won't cost so much." At the time gasoline was around 25 cents a gallon. Although I assured him that I had plenty of money to buy all the gas we would need, he continued this all the way to the lumberyard and then back. I thought we would never get home!

Mom was a stay at home mother. As far as I know, she never worked outside of the home. And she was deeply religious. She would often sit my sister Judy and me down in the living room and teach the Bible to us. To a rambunctious young boy her lessons seemed to go on forever. I pretended to be too busy when lesson times arrived, but she caught on and told me to show up or go get a "switch." So it was back to the living room and the Bible. I have to admit that it kept us out of trouble. We learned right from wrong, and to this day it has made all of us better people.

I graduated from Capitol Hill High School in 1962, and married that next September. We have four children: Pam, Jimmy Mark, Ronnie, and Jerry. I drove for Leeway Motor Freight Lines for many years. I was divorced in 1984. In 1992, I met Debbie Raven, whom I married 27 August 1993. She died of cancer on 5 January 2006. Currently I own my own remodeling business, Whipple Incorporated. We do residential and commercial remodeling. My daughter is married to Rick Miller, an automobile mechanic, and they have

one son named Riley Jo. Jimmy Mark, who works with me, is married to Teresa and they have a son, Joshua. Ronnie has never married. My youngest son, Jerry, who sells home siding, is married to Janita and they have two daughters: Kylee and Anna. [510]

Julia Whipple Suhre

Julia Lavern Whipple Suhre was born 17 September 1946 in Oklahoma City, Oklahoma. She married Phillip Suhre 18 June 1976, and they have a daughter:

i. Kelly, born 17 December 1981; married Julius Pruitt.
Kelly has three children: Leilani, Julius, and Alaura.

Julia has two children by previous marriages:

ii. Gary Webster II, born 25 September 1965; married Tonya
Gary's children are: Casey, born 30 March 1988, Gary III, born 4 July 1990, and Cori, born 10 May 1997

iii. Justina, born 24 April 1968; married Phillip Church
Justina and Phillip have three children: Rachel, born 1 May 1992, Laurel born 13 April 1996, and Gavin, born 12 May 1999

I am Julia Whipple Suhre. To all my friends and family I am Jojo, Judy, or "Sissy," as my big brother Charles calls me. I was the first-born daughter of Charles and Julia Whipple. They had three children before me, and three after me.

I have been married three times, with one child born in each. My first marriage was to Gary Webster on my 18th birthday. My parents made me wait until I was that old. Daddy ended up being in the hospital recovering from a heart attack, so we held the wedding ceremony in his room at the hospital. Later on, we had another ceremony at my father-in-law's church in Lindsey, Oklahoma. He was minister of that church. My second marriage was to James Lowry. Daddy walked me down the isle in my third marriage. This was to my late husband Philip Suhre. Phil worked as an elementary school teacher up until his death on February 11, 2000.

Julia Whipple Suhre Family, 2003

Phil and I lived in a house right across the street from my parents. We were always helping and borrowing from each other, from anything like cars to bathrooms! One of the greatest things they did for me was to help raise my two oldest children while I was at work.

My oldest child, Gary, traveled a lot. He met his first wife, in Kansas. They had two children: Casey and Gary. His second wife is Tonya, by whom he had Cori, and a stepchild, Logan. While growing up, Gary would always tinker on cars with his grandpa Whipple, and he ended up making a career out of it by becoming a mechanic. He worked for his uncle Bobby at Whipple's automotive.

Gary also worked as a chef for different places, but now currently works for TCI, which is a wholesale tire distributor. He has been there for eight years and is doing very well. He loves watching football games, and is a big OU fan. Tonya, his wife, has worked for Sears for the last seven years.

My second born, Justina, married in 1990. They have three children: Rachel, Laurel, and Gavin. During Justina's high school years she took cosmetology and earned her license to practice. She worked at several salons while also helping her husband in his business. Their children are active in school and church sports.

My youngest daughter, Kelly, is married to Julius Pruitt, and they both work in the cosmetology industry. They have three children: Leilani, Julius, and Alaura. I help take care of their children while they work just as my mother did for me. Julius and Kelly both love horses and bought a thoroughbred horse named Jimmy Red. She got her love for animals from me I guess.

I still live in the house that Phil and I bought. I currently care for other children along with my grandbabies. Spring is my favorite season because I can be outside in my yard where I enjoy gardening.[511]

Paul David Whipple

Paul David Whipple was born 26 October 1954 in Oklahoma City, Oklahoma. He married Margaret Kukuk. Their children are:

i. Paul Junior, born 5 July 1973; married Leslie Doshier
Paul's son is Korum, born 25 August 1997
ii. Buffi, born 24 August 1977; married Steve Arnold and David Doblemont
Buffi's children are: Erin Arnold, born 2 August 1993 and Sydney Doblemont, born 29 February 2004.

Paul was also married to Elizabeth Meeks, who died 29 July 1986. Their children are:

i. Charles B. Whipple, born 12 August 1983.
ii. Alexis, born 12 August 1983
Alexis's child is Aliyahs

The earliest years, spent at home with my two younger sisters, were lived like most kids I guess. We loved music, and in our teens a couple of friends and I started a rock band, and in time became pretty good at it. I don't even remember the band's name now, but it was probably something goofy anyway. For several years after that I played the drums for a band that my brother-in-law, Keith Miller, led.

I got married when I was 17, played in a rock band and worked as a pipe fitter. After that I worked for "Whipple's Automotive" as a parts manager for my brother, Bob. When he left for Georgia to return to his career as a police officer, I began a long-term career in the property management field. I enjoy this type of work and have met a great many friends.

I was blessed that my mother lived the last few years of her life in my home. One of the first things she said when she first moved in was: "Paul, I want you to know that I'm going to pull my weight around here," and she did. Although she was old and physically unable to handle many tasks, one thing she did very well was to wash clothes. Even if there was but one pair of dirty socks lying around she would wash them. Needless to say, my children Alexis and Charles and grandchild Aliyah, always, I mean always, had more than enough clean clothes to wear. Mom wore out more than one washer and dryer. There were times in the morning when she came to my bedroom door to tell me I was almost late for work or whatever. As I lay there hearing this, it sent me back to the days of my childhood.

Charles, Paul, Paul Jr., Alexis

However, the one thing I cherish most was the quieter moments we shared when talking about more spiritual matters. Things she wanted to tell me when I was younger but would only listen to half the time. My parents were religious people, particularly mom. I finally listened as she told me about things that changed my spiritual life. I became a Christian and joined the church. I thank the good Lord for sending her to my home to share her last years. I came home from work one day to find her dead in her bedroom with her little dog Brandy still by her side. Although she is gone, she now knows without a doubt that we will see each other again.

I have four children. The twins are still students: Charles who is studying computers in his third year at the University of Oklahoma, and Alexis who is studying to become a secretary. My oldest daughter lives near her mother in Illinois, and is raising two children. Paul Junior works for a blood bank in Oklahoma City. His son, Korum, has just started elementary school.[512]

Deborah Whipple Miller

Deborah Whipple Miller was born 17 November 1957 in Oklahoma City, Ok. She married Keith Miller 15 March1973. They have three children:

i. Jennifer, born 14 September 1973; married Grant Dotson
Jennifer was married 16 April 2005. Her daughter is Gracie, born 28 June 2005
ii. Amy, born 15 July 1974; married Robert Sarmiento
Amy was married 11 October 2002, and has two sons, Tyler and Robert
iii. Bucky Keith, born 20 February 1978; married Robin Nye
Bucky was married 4 January 2002. His son is Quentin, born 29 January 2003

My parents and older siblings moved to 310 Southwest 38th Street in Oklahoma City in the spring of 1957, where I was born the following winter. Whereas my older siblings relocated several times with mom and dad,

it was the only home I ever knew, living there until I married in 1973. Even then, for years afterward I visited them almost daily. Our home was always full of children, my brother Paul, myself, younger sister Kathy, and our many nephews and nieces--and any other kids my mother happened to be babysitting. My older sister Judy lived with us a lot during those years and we always thought her son Gary Lee was our baby brother, whom we called "Gordo." She worked at drive-in restaurants during that time and would sometimes wake Paul and me when she got home late at night to give us the hamburgers and French fries that people did not pick up. Boy was that a treat!

Debbie Whipple Miller Family, 2003

Dad had a major heart attack when I was only six years old. I recall mom taking Paul, Kathy, and me to the old Capitol Hill Hospital to visit him. They would bring him down in a wheel chair to visit us. While I was growing up dad worked for the 7-Up Bottling Company as head mechanic. I can still see him in his green khaki uniform. Every night when he came home from work Kathy and I would hide and jump out and scare him, and of course, he always yelled and looked scared. We sat down every night as a family and ate dinner together, with dad always at the head of the table and mom to his left. After dad said grace, we all dug in. Coming from such a large family we had to share everything. This was a wonderful thing because even now as adults we've never been selfish or materialistic. Mom and dad were very protective, never letting us ventured far from 38th Street much except to attend school.

I loved it when our older brothers and sister and their children would come to visit. We would have big dinners and play outside until after dark. I recall my brothers, Jimmy and Bobby, finding tarantula spider holes and digging a tunnel across the yard until they found one. Then they would scare their wives and us with them. Dad's brother Johnny and his wife Sue, who lived in Dallas, Texas would visit sometimes. When they would get ready to leave, he would shake hands with us kids and place a one-dollar bill in our fists. Boy we thought we were rich!

I remember going to Granite, Oklahoma to visit my brother Charles and his family. His son Chris, who was about our age, told us that a mountain near their house was called, "Chris' Mountain." There was a drainage pipe that descended from the top of mountain that he called a snake. So we all naively called it that, and truly believed him.

While visiting Jimmy and his family one July night in 1969, dad came outside and told all of us kids to hurry and get in the house. We sat on the floor in front of their black and white TV set and watched the first man walk on the moon. Dad told us to always remember it because we were watching history being made.

My brother Bobby lived in Georgia during the 1960s and 1970s. I loved it when he came to visit because he always brought excitement and fun into our lives. He was always bigger than life to me, the movie star of the family who was handsome and funny, drove a cool car, and always had a pocket full of money. To this day, he is still my hero who brightens my life.

I vividly remember our last Christmas day with dad. He asked each of us, kids and grandkids, as each came into the house that day: "What did Santa Claus bring you this year? He would patiently listen while the little ones told him and he oohed and aahed over everything they said. He sat at the head of the table, as usual, that Christmas day in 1978 with mom to his left and said grace, thanking God for each one of his children-- saying he was truly blessed because his loving wife, children, and grandchildren surrounded him. He died soon afterward. I was 22 years old. I recall sitting on his bed that day and my brother Charles coming in and putting his arms around me as I started to cry. The only thing I could say was " I already miss him." "So do I" Charles replied.

Our mother moved away from 38th Street in 1980, dividing her time between her children. We were her whole life, and she didn't want to be anywhere but with us. She aged gracefully and became wiser, kinder, and more loving with each passing year. Instead of becoming weak in spirit, her strength gave her the wisdom and understanding that only God gives to the ones who truly know him. Mom and dad, and brothers and sisters all made me who I am today because each taught me something different about life. And I was blessed to have learned from the best.

The house on 38th Street was my haven, a place where I felt loved, safe, and protected. I never heard my parents argue, never raise a voice in anger; just the opposite, they were mutually affectionate. They hugged and kissed. Dad would tease mom and she called him her "old bird." We knew nothing of violence or abuse, fear, or meanness. We might have been what others considered financially poor, but in truth we were the richest kids in the world.

I married Keith Miller 15 March 1973, and we have three children: Jennifer, Amy and Bucky Keith. Jennifer earned a marketing degree from Oklahoma City Community College. She and her family live in Parachute, Colorado, where her husband is a foreman for an oil drilling company. Amy now lives in Oklahoma City with her husband and two sons, and works at for a communications company. Bucky has worked at Tinker Air Force Base in Oklahoma City for six years, where he started in the maintenance department and has worked up to a high position in the planning and development department.

We lived in Oklahoma City until 1984 when we moved to Santa Rosa, California. We lived there until 1991 then moved back to Oklahoma City. My husband and I now reside in Newalla, Oklahoma and spend as much

time as we can with our much loved grandchildren. I worked for the department of corrections from 1980 until 1984. In California, I worked for a construction business. Since moving back to Oklahoma, I have worked in the automotive industry, most of those years at Fred Jones Lincoln Mercury in downtown Oklahoma City. I presently work for Diffee Motor Company, and my husband is an electrical contractor.[513]

Kathy Whipple Caliman

Linda Kathleen Whipple Caliman was born 1 June 1960 in Oklahoma City, Oklahoma. She married Michael Caliman 22 August 1982. They have three children:

i. Michael, born 9 October 1982
ii. Derek, born 13 January 1984
iii. Cassandra, born 7 April 1985

Kathy previously had a daughter:

i. Amanda, born 4 November 1977; married Jason Canary
Their son is Joseph Canary

Dad and mom would take Paul, Debbie, and me on vacations to Dallas, Texas to visit our uncle Johnny and Aunt Sue Whipple. He was always a joy to see, playing and joking around with us kids. He would take a silver dollar and make it disappear and then reappear, either from behind our ears or in our pockets. Back home mom usually gave us a small jar to keep the dollar bills he usually gave each one of us. I gave my jar to mom for safekeeping. By the time Christmas arrived I had saved up enough money, usually about two dollars, to buy something. Dad would sometimes take us to downtown Capitol Hill, or mom and I would take the bus there to shop at the old Kress Department Store. I always bought mom and dad a present. One year I remember buying dad a pair of socks and another buying him a tie. I bought mom a bottle of perfume and another year bought a pitcher and drinking glasses. As always they loved and appreciated the gifts.

We moved to Waynesville, Missouri in 1994 because my husband was given a job with the Copeland Corporation, and we were looking for a small town atmosphere, and a good place to raise our children. In 1997, mom spent about three months with us. She loved spending time with her grandkids, and needless to say, spoiled them with gifts and junk food. One day while at the grocery store, I turned to mom and asked her why she had bought all that junk food, and of course it was for the kids. The woman who was checking her out told me to let her be, because she was enjoying it.

On one of our sightseeing trips, we ran across an old log cabin, which mom wanted to get out and look at. We just walked around the outside of it and tried to look in. Then she made the statement that she had been born in a cabin just like it. I took her photograph standing in front of it.

Mike and I were so grateful for this time with mom. We were able to celebrate her birthday and mother's day with her.

For mother's day, we took her to the "Caveman Bar-B-Q," a restaurant that is actually inside of a cave. I got the biggest kick out of watching her go through the routine required to get to the restaurant. First we parked the car in the woods and had to wait for a shuttle bus to take us part of the way there. The way there was a narrow dirt road with the forest on one side and the wall of the mountain on the other, with large holes in the roadway. As we were bouncing all over the place, mom started to giggle and by the time we arrived at our destination she was laughing loudly and was light on her feet-probably because of the elevation of the mountain. She looked at me and said she had never gone through so much to get a meal before. After eating we went out on the balcony and looked at the breathtaking view, a forest and the Big Piney River.

Our daughter Amanda moved back to Oklahoma City in 1997 where she met and married Jason Canary 20 April 2001. Their son Joseph was born13 August 2001. Before her divorce, she moved back to Missouri where she works as a bartender, and she and Joe live down the block from us. Shortly after graduating from high school Michael Junior was in a car accident that left him with physical problems. He now delivers for Pizza Hut, and lives down the street from us. Our second son, Derek, is currently working for Classic Homes as a builder in the Waynesville area, and lives with us. Cassandra graduated on the honor roll from high school in 2003, is now working for a veterinarian, and also lives with us.[514]

Charles M. Whipple, Junior

The oldest child of Charles and Julia Whipple is Charles, who is the subject of the next chapter.

Chapter 11

Charles M. Whipple Junior
The Present

Charles Melvin[10] Whipple (Charles[9], Charles[8], William[7], Jabez[6], Jesse[5], Eleazer[4], William[3], William[2], John[1]) oldest child of Charles and Julia Ledford Whipple, was born 11 July 1938 in Oklahoma City, Oklahoma.[515] He married Gwenneth Brown at Oklahoma City, 19 August 1960.[516] Two children were born to them:

i. Christian Von, born 24 March 1961; married Janet Cunningham
ii. Michelle Dyanne, born 26 October 1967, married Bill Deck

Gwenneth, who was born 12 February 1941 in Enid, Oklahoma, is the daughter of Paul Brown (1919- 1997) and Birchie Manning Brown (1921-1997). They were buried side by side in the Memorial Cemetery in Enid. Paul was the long-time owner of Brown's Optical Company in Oklahoma City and Enid, Oklahoma. His parents were Jacob Brown of Inman, Kansas, and Cora Lett Brown of Washington, Indiana. Both died in the 1950s and were buried in the Britton Cemetery in Oklahoma City. Paul's maternal grandparents were John Lett and Susan Sanders. Birchie's parents were Homer Manning of Sunflower County, Mississippi, and Myrtle Cunningham Manning of Bestwater, Arkansas. Both were buried in the Bethany Cemetery in Oklahoma City. Her grandmothers were Mary Cisco and Mary Streety. Gwenneth's brothers are Richard of Goodland, Kansas, and Ray of Tulsa, Oklahoma.

The Recollections of Charles M. Whipple Junior
As Told in His Own Words

Writing an autobiography, I have discovered, is a challenge. Collecting, compiling, writing, and editing this multi chapter 300-year history of one branch of the Whipple family tree has been a similar challenge, yet being required to express oneself in the first person necessitates more of a soul-searching, emotive perspective. Admittedly, most individuals enjoy talking about themselves; however, distilling the essence of one's life to the confines of pen and paper can be a daunting, angst-ridden task. Though I have sought to avoid such, should the reader be averse to the occasional soft brush of sentimentality, perhaps skipping to chapters on other generations should be considered.

In this chapter on the tenth generation, open and frank communication has been attempted, yet under the aegis of continued objectivity and accuracy. The issue addressed is: What would distant descendants want to know about Dr.

Charles Whipple Junior and those who impacted his life, considering the limited amount of space available for such a discourse? Even then, perhaps my experience was not unlike all the rest in the second half of the twentieth century, and the beginning of the next. In the distant future, subsequent to reading this book, someone will exclaim, "That's my ancestor, he/she was a good person," or perhaps mutter the opposite. But be it said that we of this generation inherited an honorable name from our ancestors, and will ultimately be judged as to whether we in turn pass the same on to those who are to come.

Charles Whipple, Jr., 2003

I know my grandmother Marcella Raidt Whipple, who died in 1920 at the age of 27, only through a few photographs and the occasional comments her children, siblings, and nieces and nephews have shared over the years. Grandfather Charles T. Whipple died just before my sixth birthday. My parents told me that he and I had a close, loving relationship. To a preschool child, a grandparent can be larger than life, and more so in distant memory. Through the years, mother always said that my brother's death in1940 was most difficult for him, and led to an even closer relationship between him and my two brothers and me. I know that much of the time dad was working out of town someplace, so grandpa was the only close male figure I had. We spent a great deal of time together during the Second World War.

Grandpa left for California to stay with uncle John Whipple shortly after I was born. We joined him there early in 1941, living for about 10 months at 15229 South Arctures Street, in Gardena. It was while in California that he made a large wooden box, on top of which he inserted his photograph under glass and a photograph of my parents. After dad's death, the box came into my possession. Other of his memorabilia, which were shown in chapter nine, that are now mine are his winter hat and gloves, reading glasses, razor, repair tools, and a book of war rationing stamps. These will be passed on to my son and grandsons.

My memories of grandfather Whipple begin after we moved back to Oklahoma City immediately following the onset of the war. While living at 948 Southeast 5th Street, he and I spent a great deal of time working in our "victory" garden and fishing on the North Canadian River, which was about a block from our house. Although he was too frail to work, the government asked him to help out part-time at the local airport---a job that ultimately caused his death. Without doubt, the most vivid memory I have of him is sitting on the side of the road in front of our house waiting for him to come home from work. When we saw him coming at a distance, my brother Bob and I would run to greet him. Most of the time he had a present for us. I recall little things, such as that in the spring of 1943 grandpa, dad, and I were standing under an ivy-draped front

porch looking up into the night sky as a tornado passed over the house. I don't know why we weren't in the cellar. And then, there was his concoction of raw oatmeal and "Milnot" cream, our nightly bedtime snack. On occasion he couldn't find his reading glasses, which often as not were firmly lodged on his forehead. He would dress me in my winter bunny suit and walk with me through the snow to school at Walnut Grove Elementary. And lastly, I recall my personal distress at his funeral service. I have wondered how differently my life could have unfolded had he lived longer.

The government was asking for workers in California shipyards, so after grandpa's death in May of 1944, we moved back to Los Angeles. We lived there at 209 West 141st Street in Hawthorne for about 18 months until the close of the war. Families were often allowed to tour the ships that were under construction. After a tour or two, right then and there I decided to become a sailor. In the fall of 1945 the shipyard laid dad off, so we returned to Oklahoma City for about one year. (He suffered from an enlarged heart that kept him from military service, precluded him from maintaining a strenuous occupation, and led to his premature death). He was an extraordinary automobile technician. I marveled many times at how he could seemingly effortlessly take an automobile apart and then put it back together again. Though not formally well educated, he had a sharp mind, and would give anyone the very clothes from off of his back. He earned extra money as a Baptist preacher during the 1940s and '50s, and although I don't remember the sermon contents, I vividly remember seeing him in the pulpit. Dad also suffered from Oklahoma allergies, so we had to move back to California, this time to Stockton, which is about 50 miles east of San Francisco. From the spring of 1947 until the spring of 1949, he worked for an advertising agency and we lived at 2734 South Lincoln Street. My brother Bob and I visited there in 1995. The address was still there, but a new house was standing in its stead. It was a singular experience to once more walk the halls of our old school, McKinley Elementary.

During the early 1950s, it was my good fortune to spend time with my great grandmother and great grandfather Lemuel and Edna Ledford. They delighted in describing their earliest years in Whitfield County, Georgia and their covered wagon trip as newlyweds to north Texas in the mid 1880s. I vividly recall both of them, as well as grandfather and grandmother George and Lula Ledford. While living on-and-off in the Walnut Grove area of near southeast Oklahoma City, visiting with them and my mother's younger siblings was an almost daily occurrence. Don and John were my age. We three boys were inseparable for several years. We played by the hour down on the old North Canadian River. It is now called the "Oklahoma River," with expanded banks that required that most of the neighborhood where we lived be stripped of houses. Now a freeway, I-40, runs through the middle of the property we owned at 623 Southeast 6th Street, where I was born. Shortly after I was born, my parents planted a tree in our yard that is still visible. I don't know how much longer it will

live, but as one turns south on to I-35 from I-40, it is the large oak nearest to the freeway, and just north of the river. I make it a point to remind my grandsons each time we happen to pass it by.

My first after-school job, in 1950, was working for my dad. He was manager of the American Auto Supply and Service Company on South Robinson and Twelfth Street. I worked about 20 hours per week at 20 cents per hour. I next worked at Jones Boys Grocery on Southeast 44th and Shields Boulevard as a stock boy and cashier. By working from mid afternoon to nine o'clock during the week and all day on the weekends, I made enough money to buy a car immediately after receiving a driving license in 1954. Such a work schedule left little time for school or family. Surprisingly, I was able to stay on the high school academic honor roll most semesters.

Church activities were an additional priority. Although dad had been reared as a Congregationalist, the same denomination that our emigrant ancestor Captain John Whipple brought from England, through mother's influence he became a minister in the Baptist Church. And they had every intention that I follow the same vocational path. So, subsequent to graduating from Southeast High School in 1956, I entered Southwestern Bible College at 4700 Northwest 10th Street. After two years there, I transferred to Bethany Nazarene College (Southern Nazarene University), and graduated in 1960. Although difficult, those college years were the most significant of all, for they literally changed my life. Throughout college, I held down two or three part-time jobs simultaneously, yet was most fortunate to maintain a "B" average. A relative later told me that I was the first-ever college graduate from my branch of the Whipple family tree. Out of 16 first cousins, only Lois Wegner Koppellmann, John Whipple, and I graduated. We three ultimately received doctorates, as well.

During those years, I was assigned a college internship under The Reverend Dr. Harold Paul. While an assistant in his church, I met and eventually married a fellow congregant, Gwenneth Brown. In order to pay off accumulated college debts, we moved to Houston, Texas, where I had been offered a high school teaching job. During a two-year stay there, I studied psychology at the University of Houston, and Gwenneth completed her training as a nurse. Although it likely cannot be classed as a divine epiphany, that training and teaching experience influenced me to change the direction of my academic pursuits, from natural science, to understand the functioning of the human mind. So to that end, we moved to Enid, Oklahoma in 1962 so I could attend Phillips University and Seminary.

But during our sojourn in Houston, our son Christian was born at Hermann Hospital. As I recall, the total doctor and hospital bill was about $500. He was named after the world famous surgeon Christian Bernard, who had just performed the first-ever heart transplant, and was teaching at a medical school there at the time. For the record, we lived at 2628 Riverside Drive and at 2620 Michaux Street during those years. My dad's sister, Theresa Wahrenberger, and

her family lived close by, allowing us to partake of their hospitality, particularly uncle Sam's wonderful beef barbeques. Chris enjoyed staying with them, and our occasional trips to Galveston Beach. When I was his age, my parents often took me to the beach in Los Angeles, and Chris, like me, seemed fascinated with rocks that possessed the power of locomotion. In the summer, we took him to Hermann Park to hear the famous conductor Leopold Stokowski and the Houston Symphony Orchestra. He was quite distressed when a hurricane blew over our banana trees in the back yard; consequently, he appeared relieved when learning that we were moving to someplace called "Oklahoma," where his grandparents lived.

Subsequent to completing a master's degree at Phillips University, I received the opportunity to conduct research for an advanced degree through the State Department of Corrections. For the next two years, I maintained a paid staff position as a research assistant at the state reformatory at Granite, where I concluded a research project on psychotherapy with juvenile recidivists. The intellectual challenges and accomplishments were rewarding, but outside of church activities, opportunities for cultural or social life were limited. Despite this, the family seemed to enjoy our brief stay there. Although the area is desert-like, a redeeming quality was that it is mountainous with a large nearby lake where Chris caught his first fish, a "queen fish," as he christened it. On one occasion, he was able to squirm through a hole in a fence into the prison yard, where an inmate found him in the process of chasing down birds while attempting to feed them a large worm firmly clutched in his hand. So he became the youngest "jail bird" ever to be in that penitentiary! Blowing sand was incessant; one day it was so bad that even the house next door couldn't be seen.

The three of us were relieved to be able to move back to the big city in 1965. For the next four years, I worked as an instructor and academic dean for Southwestern College and Seminary in Oklahoma City, and completed class work for the doctorate at the University of Oklahoma in 1968. The title of my dissertation was "The Effect of Bibliotherapy on the Personality and Academic Performance of Reformatory Inmates."

The demands on my time and energy were severe, leaving little time for my family or anything else. During those years, my wife worked full time as a nurse to help meet our financial obligations. We lived at 4625 West Park Place, and Chris rode his bicycle about two blocks to my office in the mid afternoons, even attending classes with me. He was, indeed, a hit with students and faculty alike. For about two years, he and a daughter of another faculty member were the mascots for the college basketball team. About this time, our daughter, Michelle, was born and promptly became the princess of the house. She enjoyed playing with our cat, Musette, and helping out in the garden. She would lie awake at night in her crib and kick, a fact that prompted us to give her the nickname "Thumper."

After securing the doctorate, I received several offers to teach at the senior college level, eventually accepting the University of Central Oklahoma position in 1969. We moved to 327 Sundance Lane in Edmond, and have lived here since. The house was close enough to the university that I could walk to work. As is typical at that academic level, the requirement to publish research papers and/or write books were paramount for academic advancement. Just thinking about the 1970s makes me fatigued. I wish I still had all that energy. Not only was I editor of *The Oklahoma Psychologist*, I wrote and published six books. I finished two more doctorates in the 1970s, in pastoral psychology and in literature. I had promised my parents that I would finish ministerial training, so subsequent to the doctorate in psychology, I completed seminary class work and wrote a dissertation on marriage counseling. Throughout this time, I was an associate minister at Pilgrim Congregational Church, and served on the board of directors of the Oklahoma City Council of Churches, serving as its president in 1976. I was also the Church Council's representative to the Oklahoma City Mayor's Council for a number of years.

I was finally able to find enough time, in 1977, to study for and pass the State Department of Mental Health certification examination to become licensed to practice psychology in the state of Oklahoma. Moreover, I was certified by the state health department as a licensed professional counselor in 1986. I worked part-time throughout the 1980s and 1990s as an industrial and counseling psychologist. Part of my load at the university was to teach organizational and industrial psychology, so working in the field helped me to maintain my skills and knowledge in that area.

Not to be overlooked was a first attempt to write a genealogy. In response to President Richard Nixon's admonition to do something creative for the celebration of the nation's bicentennial, I decided to write a short history of my Whipple ancestors. The finished product was called *Sons and Daughters of Jesse: a 360 Year History of the Whipple Family*. Admittedly, it was amateurish, but it did stimulate a desire to eventually complete a more thorough examination of the subject. A beneficial side effect was that the exercise stimulated my relatives to band together and found The Jabez Whipple Family Association, and to hold periodic family reunions, mostly in the social hall of the Red Rock Methodist Church and cemetery, about 35 miles west of downtown Oklahoma City, where our family burial grounds are located. At present, the Whipple family owns about two dozen burial plots there. Five of my six siblings also plan to be buried there, as well as some of their children. My son and grandsons plan to be buried there, as well. I am vice president of the Red Rock Cemetery Association, and although it is about an hour's drive from my home, attend that small country

Charles, Collyn, Skylar, Chris Whipple, 2003

church as often as I can. After church, several of us eat at Calumet's only diner, which has been there since my great grandfather's days. It is a most rewarding thought that perhaps he ate at that same restaurant back in the 1890s. It was particularly rewarding for me to be able to finance the building of a monument at the cemetery honoring great grandfather, grandfather, and father. In the centuries to come, it will be possible for our descendants to visit the gravestones of at least six generations of Whipples in that one cemetery. Also, to honor my family, I sought and received membership in the General Society of Mayflower Descendants, certificate #75,238. My 5great grandfather, William Whipple Junior, married Elizabeth Sprague in c1713, whose great grandfather was Richard Warren, a signer of the Mayflower Compact in 1620. My 4great grandfather, Eleazer Whipple, served in the Revolutionary War, so my descendants are eligible to join the DAR or the SAR.

The 1980s started out with a rush! My colleagues from around the state elected me to the office of president of the Oklahoma Psychological Association, an organization of some 1000 clinical and experimental psychologists. Consequently, that decade was given over to state, regional, and national psychological association work. For instance, I was the founder and first president of the American Association of Christians in the Behavioral Sciences, which is now called the Christian Association for Psychological Studies, now headquartered in Grand Rapids, Michigan. The number of meetings locally and nationally was seemingly endless. Nonetheless, however intrusive to one's life, in my judgment, a responsible professional must devote gratis time and effort to the benefit of others. Among a dozen or so awards, the Oklahoma Psychological Association awarded me its Distinguished Psychologist Citation for the year 2003. In 1996, I received the Distinguished Contribution to the Profession of Psychology Citation from the Southwestern Psychological Association (for the states of New Mexico, Texas, Louisiana, and Oklahoma).

Chris, Charles, Bill
Janet, Collyn, Michelle, Skylar

All the while, I maintained an active participation in local and national religious associations. In the mid 1980s, I served as interim senior minister of Mayflower Congregational Church in Oklahoma City. This was a church of approximately 300 members. I conducted an average of one funeral and one wedding per week, as well as trying to present an acceptable once a week sermon. In the 1980s and 1990s, I served on the ecclesiastical board of the National Association of Congregational Churches, and was moderator of the Mid-America Congregational Fellowship for several years.

In addition to this, my job as full professor at the university remained demanding, yet I was still able to publish a number of articles in juried publications, as well as write a half dozen more books. The following are some of the books and monographs I've written: *A Psychometric Approach to Compatibility*, Kendal-Hunt Publishing Company, 1973; *The Subconscious*, Vintage Press, 1974, *The Compatibility Test*, Prentice-Hall Publishing Company 1975; *Contemporary Psychological and Educational Assessment*, Kendall-Hunt Publishing Company, 1977; *Psychology Applied to Business*, Southwestern Press, 1978; *Leadership in the Modern Organization*, Modular Education Publishing, 1980; *The Exceptional Individual*: A *Diagnostic Case Approach*, Ginn and Company, 1983; *The Love Market*, Brunswick Publishing Company, 1988; *The Psychology of Myth*, Harcourt Brace Publishing Company, 1994; *Matching People With People*, Harcourt Brace Publishing Company, 1995; *The Marriage Compatibility Inventory*, Prentice-Hall Publishing Company, 1997; *The Alter Ego*, Arizona Digital Corporation 1999; *Match Up: Technology for Human Compatibility,* Interactive Digital Company, 2001. In 1997, I began the writing and editing of a 900-page book entitled *Psychology in Oklahoma*. It took five years to complete and to be published by the state psychological association. In addition to these, there were over thirty presentations and publications in refereed journals and conferences.

As far as avocational and hobby interests are concerned, I served as a member of the Conductor's Circle of the Oklahoma City Symphony Orchestra. I was also a founding member of the Oklahoma Chapter of the International Gourmet Wine and Food Society. In 1981, I founded The Registry of Oklahoma City, and was its president for over 20 years. This is an organization that still meets for dinner and dancing once a month at the Oklahoma City Golf and Country Club. It also raises money for various arts organization, at present about $200,000. For several years I served as an officer in the Central Oklahoma Opera League, and am presently its president. I have been a 32nd degree Mason since December of 1975 when I went through the Consistory at Guthrie. Just for fun, I attend art and estate auctions to buy and then sell paintings. Every wall and closet in my house is full, as I have found it too difficult to break up my collection. I have three cats and enjoy attending cat shows. I studied classical guitar for years, and occasionally play for my own amazement.

While this was unfolding, our children grew to adulthood and left to found their own homes. They were reared to be independent and to think for themselves, in particular about those issues related to religion and politics. One is politically quite conservative, while the other is liberal. One is evangelically Christian while the other enjoys "new age" ideas and Native American spirituality. Chris graduated with honors from Edmond High School in 1979. He played the saxophone in his junior and senior high school bands. I tried to attend as many of his band functions as I could. Both he and Michelle took piano lessons for several years. To this day I marvel at how beautifully they play. In

1984, Chris graduated from the University of Central Oklahoma with a degree in computer science and business. He worked for various Oklahoma oil companies for several years, and for the past five years has worked in the computer security department of the Hertz Corporation in Oklahoma City. While a senior student at Central, he met and married Janet Cunningham, a fellow student, and they now have two sons, Collyn, age 20, and Skylar, age 17. Collyn and Skylar have been avid fishermen since they were very young. Until they started to drive an automobile, it was my duty, and privilege, to take them fishing on a regular basis. Now we load up our bass boat and go on weekend fishing trips to various lakes in the area. Chris and his family presently live on a large acreage about 12 miles east of Edmond, in the town of Arcadia.

Michelle graduated Magna Cum Laude from Southwestern College at Waxahachie, Texas, with a degree in piano and voice, sings professionally, and has had three recordings of her songs produced. While a college student, she married Bill Deck of Vicksburg, Mississippi. Michelle's vocal/piano and songwriting talents, coupled with Bill's creative and theatrical gifts, have led her into various avenues in the music profession. She has traveled nation wide both with a music/drama group and in solo performances in sacred and secular music. In the year 2000, Michelle also became an independent consultant for a top rated Dallas-based cosmetics company. Currently, Bill is in high demand as a teacher with the Greenville, Texas school district; furthermore, being an acclaimed theatrical make-up artist himself, he additionally assists Michelle in all aspects of her busy career.

Chris V Whipple

The oldest child of Charles and Gwen is Christian, who is the subject of the next chapter.

Chapter 12

Chris V. Whipple
The Present

Chris Von[11] Whipple (Charles[10], Charles[9], Charles[8], William[7], Jabez[6], Jesse[5], Eleazer[4], William[3], William[2], John[1]) oldest child of Charles and Gwenneth Brown, was born 24 March 1961 in Houston, TX. He married Janet L. Cunningham in Edmond, Oklahoma 29 Sept 1984. Two children were born to them:

i. Collyn Vaughn, born 19 March 1986
ii. Skylar Chethlahoe, born 1 January 1989

Janet, who was born 28 May 1958 in Elk City, Oklahoma, is the daughter of Herman Joe Cunningham and Patty Jean Taber-Cunningham (1928-2005). Patty is buried in the Davenport cemetery of Davenport, Oklahoma. Joe worked in the Oil and Gas industry as a "mud engineer" for decades and was so renowned in the industry that there are two geological formations in western Oklahoma named for him. He, along with Patty, Janet and their son David formed their own drilling fluids company called "Four C's" in the mid 1980's and did moderately well for several years during one of the worst downturns in the industry. His parents were Irvin Earnest Cunningham born in Benton, AR (1889-1965) and Martha Viola Roberts-Cunningham (1893-1983). Both are buried in the Davenport Cemetery, Davenport, OK. Patty was a homemaker and worked in the real estate business for several years. Her parents were Ray Taber of rural Arkansas (1904-1940) who is buried at New Zion Cemetery of Chandler, OK and Almeta Lahoma Whitt-Taber (1907-1982) of rural Oklahoma who is buried at Davenport Cemetery. Almeta remarried Edgar Allen Moore of Davenport Ok who is also buried at Davenport Cemetery, Davenport, OK. Janet has one brother, David of Mustang, Ok.

The Recollections of Chris V. Whipple
As Told in His Own Words

I am fortunate to have several happy memories of my grandparents. I remember grandpa Whipple, the quintessential shade-tree mechanic, working on his pickup under the huge elm tree in their front yard on southwest 38th street in Oklahoma City. He could fix or rig anything. I used to love to play jokes on him, especially putting cigarette loads in cigarettes so they would "pop" when he smoked them. Grandma Whipple's life always seemed to revolve around her kids and grandkids. She loved and worried about them with every fiber of her being. She lived with us for a few years and the walls of her room were totally covered

with photographs of her family. She was a very intuitive, if not psychic, woman who knew when and often before her "babies" were in trouble. I remember the Christmas when we got her a puppy. We sent her on a "scavenger hunt" where she had to follow a series of hidden notes, each leading to the other. While she was hunting notes, we snuck a puppy into the last place she would expect it and focus of the final clue, the clothes dryer. I had never seen her more surprised or happy.

Charles M Sr and Chris Whipple, 1961

I remember hours of playing in grandma and grandpa Whipple's clover-filled back yard. One particular memory I enjoy, from when I was around five or six years old, was a day when many of us kids (aunts, uncles, cousins, neighbors, etc), all about the same age, were playing a game where each of us were super-heroes. I won't embarrass others by mentioning their hero-names but I'll reluctantly admit to being "Sandwich Man".

On my mother's side I dearly remember my grandpa Paul Brown who was always the epitome of honesty, integrity, and kindness. His example still influences me today and I tear whenever I remember him. My grandmother Birchie Manning-Brown was a loving and mischievous person. I remember many family reunions where she and her sister Sue Unruh would start water or ice fights. I have many memories of their "farm" in Enid Oklahoma; hunting for toads at night with a flashlight, shooting rabbits with a 22 while sitting on their back porch, riding my uncle Ray's horse, sitting on the home-made ice cream churn, and more.

Julia Whipple and Brandy

I'm even fortunate to remember my great-grandfather Edger Manning a little. He used to entertain the kids with what he called the "naughty crab walk" where he would walk on facing up all fours and spank himself with alternating hands with each "step": Quite a trick for a man in his eighties. I also remember one Fourth-of-July when he, grandpa Brown, my father, and I were sitting in grandpa Brown's huge front yard shooting fireworks. We were all sitting in lawn chairs lighting and throwing firecrackers, when the lit fuse of one of my father's broke off and fell into the sack of fireworks. You never saw four men scramble so fast. It was quite a show watching all the fireworks go off at once in every direction.

I also remember grandpa Whipple's brother, Johnny. He taught me to play Solitaire and Cribbage and was a practical joker. Whenever we came to visit he would say: "You better be nice to me. I took up for you the other day. Some one said you weren't fit to root for hogs, and I said you were." I never knew whether to take that as a complement or insult. His wife Sue was a lovely lady, who introduced me to drinking Dr Pepper and collecting matchbooks.

We also stayed at aunt Theresa Wahrenberger's house while on vacations. She and uncle Sam were wonderful people. I recall when they moved to a house in the pine forest north of Houston. I was envious. Now I live in the woods northeast of Oklahoma City.

While in third grade, my father gave me a book on astronomy, which I dearly loved and quickly memorized every fact and statistic it contained. I since lost the book but found another copy a few years ago at a garage sale that I still have. It, along with my father's teaching fired my love for science and knowledge. I later became interested in electronics and aspired to be a repairer of large computers. In high school I took a class called Introduction to Computers but was instantly dismayed that it was a programming class and didn't teach anything about how they work electronically. However, I soon learned that I enjoyed programming, and went on to obtain a Bachelors degree in Computer Science from Central State University. I've worked in most aspects of computers, from mainframe operator to PC technician and programmer to manager. I'm currently employed in the challenging and increasingly important world of computer security.

My life took a dramatic turn when I was 13 and saw a sign, ironically enough in a church, which stated there was no "conflict between the Bible and science, just theory masquerading as fact." Though being raised as a religious person, I had always struggled with the conflict between what seemed obvious to me from the scientific point of view and what was being taught by most church leaders. I then set myself on a quest to bridge the gap between science and religion. During this time of soul searching and investigation, I continued my usual activities singing with a group that sang at churches around the central Oklahoma area, and even attending my first semester of college at a seminary. However, to my parents' dismay, the more I learned, the more I realized that I had been raised with well-intentioned myths. The church, while attempting to provide a comfort structure against the uncertainties of life, was actually built on "borrowed" ideas from several so-called pagan religions of that era. Most educated churchmen know this; they just can't afford to let the typical naïve churchgoer know.

Chris Whipple Family, 1989

After my final break from the church I migrated to a mix of Zen and "new age" ideals. I still get a chuckle from that term considering that most of it predates Christianity by thousands of years; furthermore, 2000 years ago at the dawn of the Zodiac Age of Pisces, the fish, Christianity was the then dominant "new age" religion, and amazingly still utilizes that same Zodiac sign as its primary symbol. Hopefully the next "age" will be more kind, enlightened, and tolerant of our wonderful diversity of people and beliefs. I believe we all have

lessons to both teach and learn if we're not too egotistical and dogmatic to open our minds.

I met my wonderful wife, soul mate, and friend in college. Our first date ended up being three days long, and we've been together ever since. We are now in the twenty-second year of our honeymoon, and have two wonderful sons. Jan is an excellent "old-fashioned" cook, a skill she learned to love from her grandmother Almeta Taber.

We are very into American Indian art and ideals. Jan has some Cherokee and Apache blood, and I have some Choctaw from my grandmother Julia Ledford-Whipple's side. Jan, Skylar and I enjoy attending Pow-Wows and other events, and have had the privilege of knowing some renowned American Indian leaders and Medicine Men and Women.

Collyn, Skylar, Janet, Chris, 2006

Some believe that we "choose" our parents based on the life-lessons we need to learn in this incarnation. If this is true, I couldn't have chosen better. My mother's loving and humorous nature and my father's love of learning and his giving nature have helped me become who I am.

Collyn Vaughn Whipple

Collyn Vaughn Whipple was born 19 March 1986. His middle name is from a famous psychic writer, Allan Vaughan. His interests are fishing, motorcycles, and fishing. He and Jan's father "Papa" have participated in several local fishing tournaments. He, Skylar, Papa and my father, whom the boys call "kwamps," go fishing together whenever possible. Collyn currently lives in northwest Oklahoma City works as a junior engine mechanic at Wily Post Airport, and is engaged to be married to Stephanie Olmstead.

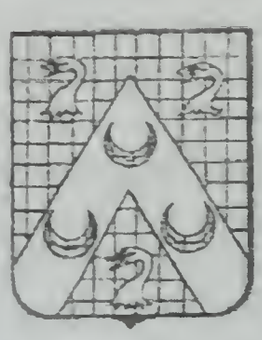
Skylar Chethlahoe Whipple

Skylar Chethlahoe Whipple was born 1 January 1989. His middle name is from a famous American Indian painter known for "channeling" another famous Russian painter, Wassily Kandinsky, who died in the 1800's. His interests include fishing, paint ball guns, and sword fighting as a member of the Society of Creative Anachronism. At his first "SCA" event, Skylar was made the youngest squire in the kingdom and touted by some as the best 16-year-old fighter they'd seen. He is presently learning to play a rare and expensive classical guitar given to him by this grandfather Whipple.

Epilogue

I have ever been less than sanguine about the empirical probability of life after life. But I am certain, at least to the .05 level of statistical confidence, that the inherited surname and the genes passed on to my children and further descendants, plus whatever adient influence my life has had on them and others, is the reciprocal eternality one can anticipate. William Faulkner wrote, "He wants to leave a scratch on the wall of oblivion--Kilroy Was Here--that someone a hundred years later will see." Of the dozen or so books I have written and had published, this family history is the one most meaningful to me. In it, I have sought to trace our Whipple ancestry for nine previous generations, extending to the three or four living generations. Cognate surname lines that extend to the early fifteenth century are included. Obviously, the present and future are infinitely determinative. However, I want our descendants to know and to remember their forbears, so as to more fully appreciate each individual's part in the unfolding drama of family history. As is taught in ancient Egyptian and Jewish ideology--- as long as one is remembered, so is eternity bestowed. "To speak the name of the dead is to make them live again," an ancient Egyptian tomb inscription, is the last line I had inscribed on the William T. Whipple monument at Calumet, Oklahoma. Our distant ancestors, and we who are alive today, humbly ask those of you in future generations who read that inscription, or who perchance read this book--- to please speak our names.

Dr. Charles M. Whipple, Jr.



WHIPPLE

I DO BESEECH THEE. WHAT IS THY NAME
SHAKESPEARE

CAPTAIN JOHN
1617 ENGLAND — 1685 RHODE ISLAND

WILLIAM
1652 MASSACHUSETTS — 1712 RHODE ISLAND

WILLIAM
C1691 RHODE ISLAND — C1776 RHODE ISLAND

ELEAZER
1733 RHODE ISLAND — 1781 RHODE ISLAND

JESSE
1771 RHODE ISLAND — 1840 INDIANA

JABEZ
1803 RHODE ISLAND — 1878 INDIANA

WILLIAM
1835 INDIANA — 1908 OKLAHOMA

CHARLES T.
1874 INDIANA — 1944 OKLAHOMA

TO SPEAK THE NAME OF THE DEAD IS TO MAKE THEM LIVE AGAIN
EGYPTIAN TOMB INSCRIPTION

Monument at Calumet, Ok

End Notes

[1] Dorchester, the first and largest of the present day metropolitan Boston area settlements, was established in the summer of 1630 by 140 colonists arriving on the Mary and John, landed at Nantasket Bay about four miles south of present day downtown Boston. This ship, part of the Winthrop fleet of 17 ships, arrived on 30 May 1630 (6 June 1630) after a trip of 70 days from Plymouth, England. Dorchester settlers in general came from the southwest of England and, as such, were not forced to leave because of religious persecution. By the late 1650s, when John left, Dorchester's population was around 750. *History of the Town of Dorchester, Massachusetts* by a Committee of the Dorchester Antiquarian Society (Boston: David Clapp, Printer, 1859) 15, 18, 19 & 24. A mistake ridden one-paragraph discussion of John Whipple and family is given on page 140, and he is presented on a list of those in a "second emigration" on page 102.

[2] James K. Hosmer, ed., *Governor Winthrop's Journal, 1630-1649* (New York: Scribner and Sons, 1908) 1:92

[3] The Whipple name is Welsh originally meaning "one who came from Whimple (white stream) in Devonshire, *Dictionary of American Family Names*, 232. Whimple originally was the name of a stream, consisting of the words appearing in Welsh, as gwyn "white." and pwll, poll, "pool or stream," 513. A second interpretation from this source points out that it could be a topographic name for someone who lived near a Whippletree. Chaucer lists Whipple tree (probably a kind of dogwood) along with maple, thorn, beach, hazel, and yew. *The Concise Oxford Dictionary of English Place Names* 4th Edition, Eclert Ekwall, Editor, 513. The earliest record of its use was in a census of 1086 when it was spelled "Winple." Subsequent census spellings were "Wimpoll" in 1218, and "Wympoll" in 1296. In *The Early Records of the Town of* Providence, *21 vols, collected and compiled by the Record Commissioners* (Providence: Snow and Farnham, city printers, 1892-1915) [hereinafter ERP] the name was spelled Whippl, Whippelle, Whippell, Whippele, Whippel, Whippe, Whiple, Whipell, Whipel and Whipple. One author claimed, Charles H. Whipple, *Genealogy of the Whipple-Wright, Wagner, Ward-Pell, Mclean-Burnet Families* (Los Angeles, Privately Published, 1917) that the surname Whipple originated with Henri De V. Hipple, a knight from Normandy in the early 15th century. Subsequent research has not corroberated this contention. An alternative interpretation of the name is derived from "another Celtic word 'gwymp' meaning fine or fair, hence 'grymppwll' meaning 'fine stream.' ...In Saxon times Whimple had a small wooden two-cell church on the current slightly elevated site..." *Archive Information*, Whimple History Society, on line at www.whimple.org/ 4/2/2004. A recently published genealogy claims [without documentation] that an aunt of the Whipple brothers of 1638, named Marion, immigrated to Plymouth in 1621. As far is known, John of 1632 was the first verified Whipple in the new world.

[4] Blaine Whipple, *History and Genealogy of "Elder" John Whipple of Ipswich, Massachusetts, His English Ancestors and American Descendants* (Victoria, British Columbia: Trafford Publishing Company, 2003) vi. Also, Blaine Whipple's presentation of the most up-to-date source of information, and easiest to access, on nearly all general Whipple questions can be found on www.whipple.org, Weldon Whipple webmaster.

[5] George F. Dow, *Every Day Life in the Massachusetts Bay Colony* (New York: Dover Publications, Inc, 1988) 101. "When the first considerable emigration ceased about the year 1640, of the 25,000 settlers then living in the Colony, probably ninety-five per cent were small farmers or workmen engaged in the manual trades, together with many indentured servants who had come over under the terms of a contract whereby they were bonded to

serve their masters for a term of years – usually five or seven. The remaining five per cent of the population was composed of those governing the colony..."

[6] John O. Austin, *Genealogical Dictionary of Rhode Island,* reprint edition (Baltimore: Genealogical Publishing Company, 1969) 221. Nathaniel B. Shurtleff, ed. *Records of the Governor and Company of the Massachusetts Bay in New England, 6 Volumes in 5* (Boston: W. White, 1853-54) 1974. This very first record of John's behavior in the new world, though not flattering is very human. John and his fellow youthful indentured servant likely had never seen so much wild life before. Their exuberance, though immature, is understandable. At the least they learned a sobering lesson concerning Puritan discipline.

[7] Ralph M. Stoughton, "The Stoughton Families of Dorchester, Mass., and Windsor, Conn.," *The American Genealogist*, Vol. 29, No.4 (New Haven, October 1953). Stoughton was an often member of the Massachusetts legislature where he undoubtedly met John Whipple of Ipswich, a fellow legislator. Perhaps they discussed Stoughton's young apprentice. Stoughton returned to England to fight with Cromwell where he was killed in 1645.

[8] Charles E. Banks, *The Planters of the Commonwealth,* reprint edition (Baltimore: Genealogical Publication Company, 1979) 99-100. The author states that John Whipple of Dorchester was from Bocking. A document entitled "The American Connection with Braintree District" published by the Braintree Council corroborates this contention, as does Winifred Ashwell who insists that both John and Matthew, from Bocking, were passengers on the Lyon. Winifred Ashwell, *Essex and the Lyon: The People Who Sailed in Her to New England in 1632 and the Land to Which They Went* (Braintree, England: 1979). The latest and most informed opinion is that Banks and others assumed incorrectly that John Whipple of Dorchester was from Bocking. A thorough discussion of this issue and a comparison of two lists of passengers supposedly on the 1632 Lyon can be viewed at www.whipple.org/docs/lyon.html. The nativity of John Whipple of Dorchester is unknown. In addition to Bocking, previous authors have given Milford, Wales as John's residence. There is but one Milford in Wales, located in the county of Pembroke at the parish of Huberston and Steynton. However, its earliest parish registers do not begin until 1637.

[9] Boyd's Marriage Index (London: Society of Genealogists, 1980)

[10] Debrett Ancestry Research Limited (Gordon Road, Winchester, SO23 7DD, England, March 1990) p. C

[11] Maude P. Kuhns, *The Mary and John* (Rutland, VT: Tuttle Publishing Company, 1943) 70. The weir was conditioned upon an agreement to sell fish at 5 shillings per thousand to the women of Dorchester, this being the first record we have of price ceilings in the United States. Perhaps as part of his indentureship, John was given the responsibility to catch and sell fish.

[12] Richard P. Bonney, ed., Dorchester Tercentenary Commission, *Dorchester Old and New in the Old Bay Colony* (Dorchester: Chapple Publishing Company Ltd, 1930) 12-13. "The original mill was erected on the Dorchester side on land later occupied by the old stone chocolate mill." 32. [This was about 50 yards downstream from the bridge].

[13]"Bridge Project Digs Up History in Lower Mills," *Dorchester Reporter,* 27 February 2003.

[14] Bonney, 31. "Ship building commenced in 1640, small vessels of thirty to forty tons being built at Gulliver's creek." Also "The maintenance of a sufficient head of water in the Neponset has been a serious problem. In 1639, a canal was dug connecting the Charles and Neponset at a point in Dedham...and water from the upper Charles was diverted for the use of Stoughton's mill." 33.

[15] Dow, 107

[16] Sharon Sargent at www.genealogyfair.com. Personal communication with the author 9 October 2004

[17] Dorchester Town Records, City Document 9, Report of the Boston Record Commissioners, No.4, 1880, p. 27. John "Whiplle" was the last of the Dorchester proprietors to sign his name to an agreement submitting to arbitration a dispute over the fencing and division of land, 79. In order to become a landowner, that is, a proprietor, John would have had to be a freeman and church member.

[18] Clarence A. Torrey, *New England Marriages Prior to 1700* (Baltimore: Genealogical Publishing Company, 1985) 803. It should not be presumed that Torrey's list is primary, accurate, or inclusive. "When a couple concluded to marry they made known their intentions to the town clerk, who posted a notice of their intended marriage in the meetinghouse. This was called being published. By law this notice had to be published three Sabbaths before the ceremony was performed...in addition to posting, the town clerk would rise in the meeting and read the intention to marry." Dow, 100. It is not known if they were married in this particular meetinghouse, which was located at the northerly end of Pleasant Street at Pond Street. This church building, one of America's oldest English churches (after Plymouth and Salem), in which the Whipples undoubtedly worshiped, was a crudely thatched small edifice with a stairway on the outside. It quickly became insufficient to meet the growing needs of the settlement.

[19] *Records of the First Church at Dorchester in New England,* 1636-1734 (Boston: George H. Ellis, 1891) 6. Eugene Aubrey Stratton, *Plymouth Colony, Its History and People* (Salt Lake: Ancestry Publishing, 1986) 213. "From yeoman on down the social scale, a man was called 'Goodman,' and a woman 'goodwife,' the latter familiarly shortened at times to 'goody'. Men above yeoman status were addressed as 'Mr.,' pronounced 'Master,' and their wives were addressed as 'Mrs.,' or 'Mistress.' A young girl coming from a higher class family would also be called 'Mrs.,' even though unmarried." Although her husband is not listed, Goodwife Whipple and eight of her nine children born in Dorchester are listed together in the name index on page 267, and on the appropriate pages, of the *Records of the 1st Church* referenced above. It is believed that the record of John's admittance to membership was taken to Connecticut in 1635/6. "There is little hope of finding these ancient records either in Windsor or in Dorchester." xi.

[20] Shurtleff, 1:397. "In the spring of 1631...the magistrates decreed 'that for time to come noe man shalbe admitted to the freedome of this body polliticke, but such as are members of some of the churches within the lymitts of the same.'" *Records of the 1st Church at Dorchester*, iv.

[21] Thomas Bicknell, *The History of Rhode Island and Providence Plantations, 3 vols* (New York: The American Historical Society, 1920) 1:106.

[22] Perry Miller, *Orthodoxy In Massachusetts, 1630-1650* (Cambridge, Ma: Harvard University Press, 1933) 200. The children of Massachusetts church members therefore received baptism, "the seal of righteousness of faith." But it was still understood to be merely an "offer of righteousness from God"; it could not in itself make the recipients "partakers of that grace offered." Davenport-Page Controversy, Massachusetts Historical Society Proceedings XLIII: 52. Shurtleff, 2:155. "In 1646 the Cambridge Platform skirted the problem gingerly, affirming the conventional theory that only children of members were entitled to baptism..."

[23] On 24 November 1684, John Whipple Junior gave a deposition in which he stated that he was at that time 45 years old---making his birth to have occurred in 1639. ERP, 17:53-4.

[24] *Records of the First Church at Dorchester*, 267, Austin, 221-23. Henry E, Whipple, A *Brief Genealogy of the Whipple Families Who Settled in Rhode Island* (Providence: A. Crawford Greene, 1873). James N. Arnold, *Vital Records of Rhode Island, 1636-1850* (Providence: Narragansett Historical Publishing Company, 1892). Vital statistics of the children and grandchildren of John and Sarah Whipple are taken from the above and numerous publications that quote from them. To view more recent information consult

www.whipple.org, Weldon Whipple, Webmaster. For John Junior's birth see Robert C. Anderson, *The Great Migration Begins, Immigrants to New England, 1620-1633* (Boston: NEHGS, 1995) 1972-73. The date of his birth was, "three days after his mother's baptism." The Providence children's nativity dates are estimates only. The birth of Abigail, in particular, likely occurred in Dorchester about 1657/58---the absence of a christening record resulting from the family's disfavor with church officials. James Blake, *Annals of the Town of Dorchester* (Boston: David Clapp, 1846) 1:20. "The records of Births & Deaths that was before this year [1658] is said to be accidentally burnt in Thomas Millet's house, and so are all lost, except a few Families that kept ye Account of their Childrens Births, entered them in ye next Book of ye Records of Births." Faulty memory may account for the problem with the births of John Junior and Abigail.

[25] Bicknell, 2:652. "When we remember that in English towns [Old England] there were no free schools and that reading and writing were accomplishments, obtained only at private expense, we can readily forgive the men and women, the founders of towns, who made their marks in their signatures to public documents and we may esteem those who gave us their autographs in almost unintelligible form, the privileged ones in English social life. It is evident from all we can gather that the first settlers were most anxious to give their children the rudiments of an education--that they should be able to read write, spell and cipher..."

[26] Breen, The *Character of the Good Ruler* (New York: W.W. Norton and Company, 1974) 420. The free school was established at Newport in 1640...was, so far as public records may be trusted, the first of its class in New England and possibly in the world. The only claimant for the honor that can support a worthy argument is Boston, [Dorchester] in the Bay Colony. So far as our studies extend, the Boston free school was not wholly free, while that at Newport required no fee of the pupils." Bicknell, 2:656

[27] *History of the Town of Dorchester Massachusetts*, 185.

[28] Dow, 102-104

[29] Bicknell, 2:660-61.

[30] Dow, 103

[31] Hosmer, Winthrop's Journal, 1:120, 152, 200

[32] http://www.dorchesteratheneum.org/page.php?id=82. It is the belief of some that John Whipple helped in the construction of the Pierce house on Oakten Street as well.

[33] Breen, 176-77

[34] Kuhns, 2-3.

[35] Breen 66-67, 72. *History of Dorchester*, 84.

[36] Henry C. Dorr, *The Proprietors of Providence, and Their Controversies With The Freeholders*, Collections of the Rhode Island Historical Society, vol. 6 (Providence: The Society, 1897). 58-59. "The earlier records (of Providence) contain allusions to brawls and disturbances...and even to outbreaks, may charitably be ascribed to inexperience. In Massachusetts, none but members of Puritan parishes were voters...The graduates of the English Cambridge and of the American Harvard exacted the deference of the uneducated men, and those who did not yield it had small opportunity of a hearing in town meetings. These were ruled by the fortunate possessors of wealth, culture and sanctity, and a man of humble station had small opportunity to acquire political experience. When some of these withdrew to Mooshassuc it is not surprising that they lacked self-control in matters where their interests or their passions were concerned. The Legislature of Massachusetts was open only to the elect, and magistrates and elders permitted little adverse debate in parrish meetings. The future rulers of Providence were left to pick up their political education in the rough school of experience. They did do but slowly in the first generation at Mooshassuc."

[37] William Orcutt, *Good Old Dorchester, 1630-1893* (Cambridge: University Press, 1893) 60-61.

[38] *New England Historical and Genealogical Society Record*, Vol. 6, 1852, p 41.
[39] James Savage, "History of Dorchester in the County of Dorset" 61-66, as quoted in *New England Historic Genealogical Society Register*, Volume 5 October 1851.
[40] Robert C. Anderson, *The Great Migration Begins, Immigrants to New England, 1620-1633.* 3 vols. (Boston: New England Historical and Genealogical Society, 1995) 3:1974
[41] Irving B. Richman, *Rhode Island, Its Making and Meaning* (New York: B.P. Putnam Sons, 1908) 292. In 1655, Providence had 42 freemen, Newport 96.
[42] Clifford Monahon, *Rhode Island: A Students' Guide to Localized History* (New York: Columbia University Press, 1965) 1. "The State of Rhode Island and Providence Plantations has a total area of 1214 square miles, of which 1058 are land and 156 inland water." Providence Plantations encompasses approximately 350 square miles most of which can be "used for small farms, dairy farms, poultry raising, and orchards, while the submarginal hilltops are suited only for the growth of timber." Six of the eight sons of Captain John Whipple subsisted on farms such as the above.
[43] Roger Williams wrote that in deference to John Smith, the miller, a resident of Dorchester (and John Whipple's oldest daughter's eventual father-in-law), he allowed another Dorchesterite a destitute boy named Francis Wickes to escape from Massachusetts with them. Perhaps Wickes, whose property Captain John eventually bought in Providence, was a fellow apprentice.
[44] Assuming the move took place in late 1658 or early 1659, the ages of the children at that time were: John 19, Sarah 17, Samuel 15, Eleazer 13, Mary 11, William 7, Benjamin 5, David 3, and Abigail 1.
[45] Edward Johnson, *Wonder-Working Providences* (London: 1654), 41
[46] Bicknell, 1:230-31.
[47] William B. Weeden, *Early Rhode Island, A Social History of the People, 1636-1790* (New York: The Grafton Press, 1910) 74. "They (Providence residents) framed the solid chests and tables, rude but strong, which stood on sanded floors." Welcome Arnold Greene, The *Providence Plantations for Two Hundred and Fifty Years,* 1886) 35.
[48] Florence Simister, *Streets of the City, An Anecdotal History of the City of Providence* (Providence: Mowbray Company Publishers, 1968) 47. "For over a century after it was founded, Providence really had only one street..." Henry C. Dorr, *The Planting and Growth of Providence. Rider's Tract #15* (Providence: Sidney S. Rider, 1882) 86. "The town street was continually flooded by currents of rain or melting snow from the abrupt hill side...At length, on the 4th of the 12th month in 1649, the town council ordered that every man shall mend and make good the highway before his house lot or lots...This is the earliest regulation of Providence streets. The duty of repairing them must have been but negligently performed...The Legislature granted a lottery in February 1761 for the first pavement of Town Street." Since John owned at least four lots on a steep incline of the street, his would have been a demanding obligation. One of John's last entries in colony records, 1682, concerned a law against galloping horses in front of his property. This was the first law in Rhode Island concerning traffic. Gertrude Kimball, *Providence in Colonial Times* (Boston: Houghton Mifflin Company, 1912) 123. "The Town Street was becoming so heavily traveled that in the same year the General Assembly enacted the first traffic regulation, forbidding riding 'a gallup on horse, gelding or mare, in the street lying against the great river...between the land of Pardon Tillinghast, and the northerly corner of John Whipple, Sen'r, where his dwelling house stands in the north end, under penalty of a fine of five shillings for each offense." John R. Bartlett, ed., *Records of the Colony of Rhode Island and Providence Plantations in New England* (Providence, 1856-1865) III:105
[49] Dorr, Rider's tract #15, 8. "Providence did not grow up around a Puritan meeting house as their center with the common graveyard, and separateness and independence showed

themselves, even in the resting places of the dead. Nearly a century went by before the first steeple [Anglican] arose above the town." Baptists and Quakers held religious services in "house churches" until the early 1700s.

[50] Dorr, Rider's Tract #15, 98.

[51] Named in honor of Captain John's oldest daughter's husband and father-in-law. Bicknell, 3:383.

[52] Dorr, Rider's Tract #15, 57, 64. "In 1658, a year of scarcity and trouble, 'all commodities were drawn from the neighboring colonies, except produce.' There was no grain save Indian corn, and the vengeful Puritans of Massachusetts threatened to combine, and to sell that at their own rates. This was the year in which Rhode Island refused the demand of the United Colonies for the expulsion of the Quakers." Actually, there were at least one physician and three ordained ministers, plus some who had studied law among the "first comers."

[53] Dorr, Rider's Tract 15, 135. Fifty-two (or 54) original proprietor families were each assigned about 125 feet of land along Towne Street. By the late 1650s only half of these families had built houses on their properties, yet were still hesitant to sell to outsiders.

[54]Dorr, vol. 9, 11.

[55] William G. Mcloughlin, *Rhode Island, A Bicentennial History* (New York: W.W. Norton & Company, 1978) 10

[56] Irving B. Richman, *Rhode Island, A Study in Separatism* (Boston: Houghton Mifflin and Company, 1905) 61.

[57] Richman, 159

[58] Genealogies of Rhode Island Families, (Baltimore: Genealogical Publishing Company, 1983) 2:414-15.

[59] Carl Holliday, *Woman's Life in Colonial Days* (New York: Frederick Ungar Publishing Company, 1922) 108.

[60] Dorr, vol. 9, 40. Providence leaders were worried that Massachusetts was trying to gain control by infiltrating their midst. "What could not be done by force might be effected by emigration."

[61] Dorr, vol. 9, 46. John's apprenticeship had ended by 1637. He sold approximately 43 acres of land in Dorchester, and bought over 200 acres in Providence, for £180, from the colony's longtime governor. This could have been partly the result of the difference in land values in the two towns. Bicknell, 1:206. "Males, married, heads of families, were the only persons eligible to membership to be elected by a majority vote of the whole body--after a name had been propounded for one month. Land could not be resold without consent of the land company (proprietors)."

[62] Dorr, Tract #15 67. The town tried to borrow a carpenter from Warwick in 1654.

[63]*ERP,* III:59. Dorr, (Tract #15) 68.

[64] Clara H. McGuigan, *The Antecedents and Descendants of Noah Whipple of the Rogerene Community at Quakertown, Connecticut* (Ithaca, New York: John N. Kingsbury, 1971) 36. The author contends that both of Samuel Whipple Junior's grandfathers, namely John Whipple and Thomas Harris, were non-conformists, and had removed to Rhode Island to escape persecution in Massachusetts. It is proven that Harris was a persecuted Quaker, however, only circumstantial evidence is available to show that John Whipple was as well.

[65] An exception being a small settlement of Quakers on the east end of Long Island, New York.

[66] Carl Bridenbaugh, *Fat Mutton and Liberty of Conscience, Society in Rhode Island, 1636-1690* (Providence: Brown University Press, 1974) 4

[67] John could have been a member of the church doctrinally in good standing, yet have rejected the high handedness of the magistrates. Had this been the case, the Whipples likely would have moved (like their Dorchester neighbors of 1635/36) to Connecticut, which would

have permitted them to maintain their Massachusetts religious beliefs yet be free from Massachusetts authorities. It was 1722 before a Congregational Church was started in Providence.

[68] McLoughlin, 23. "John Clark wrote the first tract by an American defending the Baptist persuasion and was the first Baptist to take a missionary trip into Massachusetts Bay (in 1652) to spread that persuasion (for which he narrowly escaped whipping)." Winthrop's Journal, 2:177. If John Whipple and family had been Baptist at that time they likely would have left in November of 1644 when Massachusetts ordered the banishment of all Anababtists. This 1644 law was most unpopular in England. The civil war in England, in which two-thirds of Cromwell's army were Separatists (i.e.) non Church of England or Puritan, created an unheard of tolerance for religious diversity. "Massachusetts replied to these criticisms by gathering her holy skirts closer about her heels and proceeding on her unlovely way alone. From this time forth the colony turned aside from the main currents of English opinion.... Thus did the New England orthodoxy turn its back upon the greatest single religious advance of modern times, and exert itself to avoid making innovations in its thinking." See Chapter 8 in Miller. That is, for the next 25 years it became even more determined to weed out all non-Puritan elements in its citizenry, and the Quakers, who were in the wrong place at the wrong time, were the first to feel its wrath. "The first Baptist church to start in Massachusetts was at Rehoboth near the Rhode Island border in 1663." Bicknell 2:585.

[69] Edward Field, State *of Rhode Island and Providence Plantations at the End of the Century: A History* (Boston: Mason Publishing Company, 1902) 83. "While a considerable number of earnest Christian men and women joined Mr. Williams in the formation of the first church it is evident that a very much larger number of residents at Providence held themselves entirely aloof. It must thus be explained why the general religious condition of the State was, in early times, somewhat low and why traces of that chartered irreligion, which perfect liberty of conscience to a degree encouraged in certain sections, still subsist." Bruce C. Daniels, *Dissent and Conformity on Narragansett Bay* (Middleton, Connecticut: Wesleyan University Press, 1983) 111. "After the initial four settlements founded prior to 1663, some settlers were still attracted to Rhode Island by its dissent but many more New Englanders came for economic opportunities. Several areas of Rhode Island were settled by people who did not particularly care whether they were in Massachusetts, Connecticut, or Rhode Island as long as they had clear title to their land..." Dorr, vol. 9, "The majority manifested little sympathy with Williams...No religious society was organized until the autumn of 1638. Out of nearly sixty householders only twelve united with Williams in its formation. During the whole of the seventeenth century, its members were a small minority of the townsmen and numbered so few adherents that they met in the small dwellings of those days..."

[70] Wilfred H. Munro, *Picturesque Rhode Island* (Providence: J.A. & R.A. Reid, Publishers, 1881) 146.

[71] Bicknell, 3:1017.

[72] Mcloughlin, 27

[73] McLoughlin, 36

[74] Richman, *Rhode Island Its Making and Meaning,* 216

[75] Rufus M. Jones, *The Quakers in the American Colonies* (New York: W.W. Norton & Company, 1966) 70. Also page 81. His brother, William Harris, a close friend and John Whipple Junior's tutor for the profession of law, became a Quaker after Fox's visit to Rhode Island in 1672.

[76] Richman, *Rhode Island, Its Making and Meaning*, 351. Mcloughlin, 36. Beginning in October 1656, Massachusetts passed the first of a series of laws inflicting harsh penalties on Quaker and Quaker sympathizers. Starting with imprisonment, fines, and banishment,

these laws subsequently included whipping, branding, ear cropping, and tongue boring. The final step, in 1658, was a law ordering death by hanging.

[77] Suffolk Land Records, Deeds, 14 vols. (Boston: 1880-1906) 3:204-05. Minot, a native of Safron Walden, Essex, England, was born 4 August 1594, and died in Dorchester 24 December 1671. He was a deputy 1635-36,one of the first signers of the church covenant in 1636, and a ruling elder for 30 years. He gave the Whipple property to his 32-year old son John. *History of the Town of Dorchester*, 67.

[78] www.usigs.org/libry/books/ma/braintree1879brntr-05htm

[79] *ERP,* II:11 & XV:127. "Att a Quarter Court July the 27th 1659 Mr. Ffeild moderator. This Day John Whipple Senior: is received into the Towne a purchaser." By this date, all purchasers were freemen so John automatically assumed that status. Dorr, 40. John's next-door neighbor's friend, Mary Dyer, was likewise hanged in Boston in 1660.

[80] Henry King does not mention the Whipple family in his history of the First Baptist Church. Henry M. King, *Historical Catalogue of the Members of the First Baptist Church in Providence, Rhode Island* (Providence, F.H. Townsend, Printer, 1908). "...Unfortunately, there are no minutes or records of First Baptist Church Prior to 1755. The first Whipple that appears on our membership lists (1764) was Bethiah Whipple, wife of John Whipple (the second son of Benjamin who was the fifth son of Capt. John Whipple)... Rarely did Baptist churches keep any records in the 17th century. They were small congregations and had no associations to report to." Email to the authors from J. Stanley Lemons, professor at Rhode Island College and historian for the First Baptist Church, 25 May 2004.

[81]McGuigan, 28.It must be recalled that Williams was a Baptist for only four months. His religion could be described in modern parlance as fundamentalist but "non-denominational." Later in life, he did not require that adults be rebaptized. John Callender, *The Early History of Rhode Island* (Freeport, NY: Books for Libraries Press, 1843) 31. "Not withstanding so many differences, there are fewer quarrels about religion than elsewhere, the people living peaceably with their neighbors of whatsoever persuasion. They all agree in one point, that the church of England is second best." On page 110 Callender argues rather convincingly that Williams never joined the Baptist church at Providence. For a different opinion of Williams' conversion see, Richard Knight, *History of the General or Six Principle Baptist Church* (Providence: Smith and Parmenter, 1827) 255.

[82]John Junior's second wife was a Quaker, as were the spouses of Sarah and perhaps the second spouse of Abigail. Samuel's in-laws were likewise Quakers, as were those of Joseph Junior. Thomas Senior, son of Samuel, married a sister of Governor Jenckes. Eleazer's oldest daughter, Deborah, married into the prominent Wilkinson family of Quakers.

[83]"John Whipple on the Baptist Church," Rhode Island Historical Society Manuscripts, 10:35. "I found the folder for this letter in the Historical Society Library, but nothing was in it but a Warwick deed between two parties. I had the same problem last year. The technician and I checked the cross-references. They were all for the same folder, so the reference was correct. The librarian stated that the letter is either lost or misplaced." Personal observation of Barbara Carroll, 5 March 2004. "Probably the John Whipple who wrote this letter was admitted to the church on July 11, 1790. But, he was expelled from the church on August 26, 1808 for 'quarrelling with Wheeler Martin.' Martin was the chief judge of the Court of Common pleas in Providence." Email to the authors from J. Stanley Lemons, professor at Rhode Island College and historian for the First Baptist Church, 25, May 2004. Mark S. Schantz, *Piety in Providence: Class Dimensions of Religious Experience in Antebellum Rhode Island* (Ithaca, NY: Cornell University Press, 2000) 31. Record Book, First Baptist Church, August 26, 1708, Manuscript Collection, Rhode Island Historical Society. "The church did not countenance instances of assault on gentlemen."

[84] Representative Men and Old Families of Rhode Island, 3 vols. (Chicago: J.HJ. Beers and Company, 1908) III:1639. "He was received as a preacher at Providence in 1659..."
[85]Mcloughlin, 46. The Providence Baptist fellowship operated without a formal creed. During its first 75 years services were held in member's homes and under the trees in good weather. Its first meetinghouse was constructed in 1701. Rhode Island Quakers followed the Baptist in this regard. Fox complained in 1672 that Rhode Island Quakers did not have adequate places to worship.
[86] Dorr, vol. 9, 60. The Whipples did not marry into the Williams family for at least three generations.
[87] *ERP*, 3:98-100. Charles W. Hopkins, *The Home Lots of the Early Settlers of the Providence Plantations* (Providence: Providence Press Publishers, 1886) 24.
[88] *ERP*, XX:281-284. Bicknell, 1:183.The 1663 document deeded to John Junior included the William Arnold lot with its apparent very expensive price tag. The first tax ever levied in Providence occurred in 1650 shows that Arnold was assessed a property tax of five pounds, by far the most of any lot owner. John Junior's son, John III, subsequently sold the property to his uncle Colonel Joseph Whipple, who in 1726 traded with a son-in-law, Stephen Dexter, for an additional three lots•Thomas James, John Greene Senior, and John Smith•immediately to the south of the Arnold lot. The Colonel's oldest son, Captain John Whipple, in 1738, bought from the heirs of Thomas Arnold the two house lots that had long been unoccupied on the north side of the 1661 purchase, which had originally been laid out in 1638 to Thomas Painter and Edward Manton. By this last purchase, Colonel Joseph and his son became the owners of nine consecutive house lots along Town Street that extended from about 100 feet of the top of Constitution Hill to within 150 feet or Roger Williams' fresh water spring. In addition to these, in 1728, the Whipples bought three lots toward the southerly end of the street, those of William Mann, William Burrows, and William Wickenden. By the time of Colonel Joseph Whipple's death in 1746, between 70 and 80 acres in the heart of the town were in the possession of one man and his son. Each lot granted the owner an additional six acres of farmland, thus the Whipples owned over 150 acres of highly coveted property. Hundreds of other acres were owned by them in the northern and central parts of the colony.
[89] John H. Cady, *The Civic and Architectural Development of Providence, 1636-1950* (Providence: The Book Shop, 1957) 11. The house could have been unoccupied since 1651. "Benedict Arnold paid the highest town rate and probably enlarged or rebuilt his father's house on the present Constitution Hill when he returned to Providence from Pawtuxet after his marriage. He lived there until 1651 when he moved to Newport, later becoming governor of the colony." Arnold was elected governor for the years 1657-58-59-60-62-63. It was in 1661, the year he was not governor, that he sold his land to John. Captain John Whipple was first to build a house, next door on the former Wickes property, sometime before 1663.
[90] Dorr, Rider's Tract #15, 40
[91] In June of 2004, the present author measured the inclination of that part of the hill that was enclosed by John's property lines. Given that its topography has changed in 350 years, much of the incline still climbs almost straight up; the rest varies between 45 degrees and 60 degrees extending up the hill for over a quarter of a mile where it levels off toward Hope Street. It is indeed an understatement to describe it as a "steep" hill. Then as now it is fit for logging and orchards only. It is clear why John bought the property at such a cheap price. At present, houses standing on precarious ledges, most man-made, completely cover the hillside much in the fashion of Southern California•and nowhere is an orchard or corn stalk to be seen.
[92] Bicknell, 1:183. "During the life of [Roger] Williams, two men by their executive ability and personal influence ruled the proprietary as well as the town---William Harris and Thomas

Olney, and at the death of both, the power was vested in the popular leader and town-proprietary clerk, Thomas Olney Jr." By marrying into these powerful families, the Whipples automatically became influential themselves.

[93] *ERP*, XV:127. "About ye middle of nouember, in the yeare 1660, Laid out unto John Whipple Senior, at the place Called Loquasqussuck: by William Carpenter Towne Deputye..."

[94] *Publications of the Rhode Island Historical Society, New Series* (Providence: Standard Printing Company, 1893-1900) V:127. "...to the west of Eleazer's farm on the cross road to 'Martin's Wade' was his son-in-law John Wilkinson's [husband of Deborah] farm. To the south of the Whipple and Wilkinson farms were those of William Whipple [Captain John's fourth son] and Stephen Dexter [first husband of Abigail Whipple]. Still farther south was the farm of Col. Sylvanus Scott [John Whipple Junior's stepson], which later became the home of David Whipple [Captain John's sixth son]. All these Whipples were the brothers of Col. Joseph Whipple [Captain John's seventh son], the early and most liberal of the founders of King's Church. West of Col. Scott was Eliazer Arnold [brother-in-law of Sarah Whipple Smith Arnold], while still further to the west was land of Samuel Whipple [Captain John's second son]."

[95] *ERP*, III:26

[96] *ERP*, III:72

[97] *ERP*, XV:115

[98] *ERP*, III:88

[99] *ERP*, IV:46

[100] *ERP*, IV:47

[101] *ERP*, IV:18

[102] *ERP*, III:9

[103] *ERP*, VIII:98. William and Benedict Arnold left the settlement early on and moved to the Pawtuxet. Benedict moved to Newport and served several years as governor of the colony.

[104] Samuel H. Brockunier, *The Irrepressible Democrat: Roger Williams* (New York: Ronald Press, 1940) 130.

[105] Simister, 21. "It was first changed from a path to a street in 1704, its width, 4 poles, its name to Towne Street."

[106] Whipple Hall was located about one block north of Star Street on Benefit Street. See the chapter on Joseph Whipple for details.

[107] *ERP*, I:8. Clemence's son, Richard, married Sarah Smith daughter of Sarah Whipple-Smith, Captain John's oldest daughter. Austin, *Genealogical Dictionary,* 382-83. *ERP*, XVII:25. He exchanged 20 acres of land with Joseph Whipple in 1685.

[108] *ERP*, II:144

[109] *ERP*, III:4 & III:47

[110] *ERP*, III:98-100. In a letter to the authors dated 5 August 2004, the Rhode Island Historical Society denied its permission to show John's signature on the Internet. "I regret that we are unable to grant permission to reproduce the image of John Whipple's signature from the deed in your website article." His signature can be shown in book form only.

[111] *ERP*, XV:109-10

[112] *ERP*, III:110

[113] *ERP*, III:591

[114] Bicknell, 3:887.

[115] Dorr, Rider's Tract #15, 184. Charles H. Whipple, *Genealogy of the Whipple-Wright, Wager, Ward-Pell, McLean-Burnet Families* (Privately Published, 1917) 12. McGuigan, 289. Samuel G. Arnold, *History of the State of Rhode Island and Providence Plantations* 2 vols. (New York: Appleton & Company, 1859) 1:523. "The regular session was held at Providence

at the house of John Whipple [Junior]. The smallpox had broken out with great violence upon the island. The whole affairs of the colony were deranged by the prevailing sickness, and no business of general interest was transacted by the Assembly. So virulent was this formidable plague...that a letter from Boston written during the winter, says, 'Rhode Island is almost destroyed by the smallpox'. Newport was abandoned by the legislature for nearly a year."
[116] *ERP,* III:148 & III:152.
[117] *ERP,* VII:5-6. John Junior, for unknown reasons, refused a request to establish an inn the year before. It is doubtful that he would have started his own tavern had his father disapproved or was still in the business himself.
[118]*ERP,* IV:8. Bicknell, 1:215. "In April, 1674, John Whipple, tavern-keeper was paid 'one shilen for house rent.' The Whipple tavern was central and seems to have been a favorite for town meetings."
[119] Kimball, 127. Dorr, 182."In the early days very few travelers came to Providence. During two generations, all strangers were received in private houses---the most important, or those entrusted with public business---by Williams himself, or by Thomas Olney, the town clerk. After inns were duly licensed, (in 1655) the reception of wayfarers was scarcely their chief employment."
[120] Kimball, 128. Weeden, 221. Joseph renewed his license as late as 1732.Although confirming records have yet to be evidenced, it is believed that John III sold his father's tavern to his uncle Joseph sometime in the fall of 1710.
[121] Richard M. Bayles, ed., *The History of Providence County, Rhode Island, 2 vols.* (New York: W.W. Preston and Company, 1891) 1:305.
[122] John W. Haley, Old *Stone Bank, History of Rhode Island, 4 vols* (Providence: Providence Institution for Savings, 1931) II:92-93.
[123] John H. Cady, *The Civic and Architectural Development of Providence 1636-1950* (Providence: The Book Shop, 1957) 15. A year 1700 map, on page 14, shows three taverns in Providence, those of Whipple, half way up Constitution Hill, Olney's, on the corner of Town Street and Olney Street [about two blocks northeast of Whipple's], and Turpin [about three blocks north of Olney's]. On a 1750 map in the same book, page 27, only the Olney and Turpin taverns remain. This author, like all others, seems not to differentiate between the John Senior and John Junior taverns. It appears that Joseph Whipple left the business around the year 1740.
[124] Barbara Mills, *Providence: 1630-1800, Women Are Part of Its History* (Bowie, Md: Heritage Books, 2002) 79-80.
[125] *Publications of the Rhode Island Historical Society, New Series,* III: 228. John Whipple Senior did not own a tavern in the late 1660s when the letters were written, so the dissemination argument is ill chosen. Dorr, vol. 6, 46. He was not alive in 1690.
[126] Glen W. LaFantasie, ed., *The Correspondence of Roger Williams* (Providence: Brown University Press/University Press of New England, 1988) II:603-604. Typical of the respect that early historians paid to John Whipple is seen in a lengthy paragraph from an 1897 book. It likewise does not differentiate between John Senior and Junior. Dorr, vol. 6, 81. The confusion that it, and similar earlier accounts, created is with us still.
[127] Bicknell, 1:218. Differences soon arose between Williams and his associates in the corporation as to an extension of the territorial bounds...Williams held to the four-mile limit...and opposed any further extension. Had his policy been pursued, Providence in its narrow territorial domain [four square miles] would have lost existence to Massachusetts or Connecticut."
[128] Bicknell, 1:181. "William Harris and Thomas Olney, clerk, were leaders of the landed class, while Mr. Williams was the head of the 'down-and-out' party... Mr. Williams had neither constructive, executive or diplomatic ability, while Harris and Olney had all these

qualities. Then again, Mr. Williams had withdrawn after four months...from the society called Baptists and had thereby lost his influence as a religious teacher and guide...As late as 1669, Mr. Williams appeals to the land aristocracy in behalf of those who do not and others who will not come to town meetings, but the fact remains that the men of property, the proprietors, were able and organized and retained their control of town affairs during their lives and left their heritage of wealth and power to their successors." As shown, the Whipples by marrying into these leading families shared in this largess.

[129] Williams had his own personality problems. "Historians urge that he (Roger Williams) was eccentric, pugnacious, persistent, troublesome; undoubtedly he was." Bicknell, 1:231. Dorr, vol. 6, 10-11. "The founder (Williams) and many of his associates had not much in common...His followers did not share his unselfish purposes. Their experience of the abuse of power in Massachusetts had made them impatient of all authority whatsoever...and provided homesteads only for themselves. The majority manifested little sympathy with Williams, except in his negative opinion as to what the State should not do."

[130] Harris and his allies received most of the shares supposedly at the expense of the rest of the plantation. John Junior's descendants in particular shared in this largess. A more in-depth analysis of this conflict is presented in the chapter on John Whipple Junior.

[131] *ERP,* 1670, III:150; 1674, IV:1; & 1676, VIII:11 & XV:149

[132] A list of the 27 names of such as stajd & went not away is given in the *ERP,* XV:151-52.

[133] George W. Greene, *A Short History of Rhode Island* (Providence: J. A. Reid Publishers, 1877) 75

[134] *ERP,* VIII:12. Welcome Arnold Greene, 42 & 99. "There were two houses in Providence deemed capable of serving as garrison houses. One was the fort whose erection on Stamper's Hill [across the street north from Capt. John's house]...and of this Roger Williams, who was captain of the train band, took command with a portion of the townsmen who remained. The other was that of William Field, near the present foot of Hopkins Street, where Captain Arthur Fenner with the other remaining men were posted...there appears to have been no actual attack upon either of the garrisoned houses...Exactly what was the number of houses destroyed cannot be determined. One account says all but five...At the time of King Philips War, 28 are recorded as 'men who staid and went not away,' others are known to have stayed..." Collections of the *Rhode Island Historical Society* (Providence: Knowles and Vose Printers, 1843) 103-07. During the attack on the town, the town records were thrown into the millpond--by John Smith and Sarah Whipple Smith-- to extinguish their burning. Later on John Whipple Junior was commissioned to find out how many pages were missing. The account enumerated a list several pages in length. Sixty-five leaves were missing from Book 1 and twenty from Book 2. Surely, much more would be known about the Whipples had the war not happened.

[135] *ERP*, XV:153

[136] Charles H. Whipple, 11. According to John O. Austin, 221, John was a deputy in 1676, 69, 70, 72, 74, 76, & 77. A different account lists his years of service as 1666,74, & 76. *Rhode Island Historical Society Collections*, 1918--1941, 2:645-49. John Whipple Junior's service as a deputy and assistant is usually given as the reason for the confusion. He also served as the town's treasurer in 1668 and in 1683. Bicknell, 2:642-43. "The Colonial officers were a Governor, a Deputy Governor and ten Assistants. These with sixteen deputies elected by the towns constituted the lawmaking power, styled in the charter, The General Assembly...The General Assembly met twice a year, in May and October.. .On the 6th of May, 1696, the Deputies voted to sit by themselves as a House of Deputies, choosing their own Speaker and Clerk, and the General Assembly thereafter met in two bodies, the Governor, the Deputy and Assistants constituting the Upper House, and the representatives of the towns, the House of Deputies or the Lower House. Col. Rec., p.313, Vol. III."

[137] Horatio Rogers, George Moulton Carpenter and Edward Field, Record Commissioners. *The Early Records of the Town of Providence,* Volume 6, Being Part of the Will, Book Number 1, otherwise called the First Book for Providence Towne Council Perticulior Vse. (Providence: Snow and Farnham, City printers, 1894) VI:126-128. *ERP*, VI:126-28

[138] *ERP,* VI: 128-30

[139] *ERP*, VI:130-34

[140] He had perhaps been living with his oldest son for sometime by then. Volume IV of the Early Records of the Town of Providence provides interesting reading for those desiring to know about the private property of "city people" in the time of Roger Williams. Captain John's wearing apparel was valued at £2. Bicknell, 1:152.

[141] *ERP*, VI:130-134.

[142] Dorr, 25

[143] 369 North Main Street, Providence, Rhode Island photo, circa 1912, Preston Collection, Rhode Island State Archives, 337 Westminster Street, Providence, Rhode Island 02903.

[144] Dorr, 44, 46. Jones 573.

[145] Weeden, 129.

[146] W. R. Staples, *Annals of the Town of Providence* (Providence: Knowles and Vose, 1843) 184.

[147] John E. Sterling, *North Burial Ground, Providence, Rhode Island, Old Section, 1700-1848* (Providence: Rhode Island Genealogical Society, Special Publication #5, 2000) xii.

[148] Welcome Arnold Greene, 53. "A street in the rear of the town street was advocated as early as in 1743, but such a street would run through all the ancestral burial grounds of the home-lot owners, and their souls rebelled against the proposition. After a stubborn contest, in February, 1747, a committee was appointed to 'inspect and examine the land whether it was convenient to lay the new street' to be call 'Back Street' or Benefit Street...the street was ordered in 1747, but the land-owners contested so persistently against it that it was not finished till 1756, and its extension northward to the town street at the head of Constitution Hill was not made till 1758, and then only on condition that a gate be kept up at the north end. This gate was retained for half a century..."

[149]Sterling, xii.

[150] "An Account of the Temple Family," New England Historical and Genealogical Register, Vol. 10, January 1856.

[151] Henry E. Whipple, 40

[152] Sterling, 12-13. The 27 burials are as follows: (1) In Memory of Capt. John Whipple first Son of Col. Joseph Whipple who departed this life the 18th of May died 1769 aged 84 years 5 mos & 19 days, (2) In Memory of ye Hon Col. Joseph Whipple who departed this life anno dom 1746 in ye 85th year of his age, (3) In Memory of Mrs. Alice Whipple ye wife of Col. Joseph Whipple born in Providence and died July 20th anno dom 1739 aged 75 years, (4) Jeremiah son of Capt. John Whipple & Abigail his wife died Jan 2d 1731 aged 14 mos 23 days, (5) In memory of Mary wife of Capt Charles Bardin youngest daughter of Col. Joseph Whipple died Dec 8 1733 aged 29 years & 8 mos, (6)In Memory of Capt John Whipple who was born in England & died in Providence town 16th day of May anno dom 1685 about 68 years of age, (7) In memory of Mrs Sarah Whipple wife of Capt John Whipple she was born in Dorchester in New England died in Providence anno dom 1666 aged about 42 years, (8) In memory of Capt William Whipple a Revolutionary Purist who died on the 5th of July. Suppress not your tears. This is a soldiers grave, (9) In memory of Mrs. Abigail Whipple wife of William Whipple who died Nov 16 1818 age 64 years, (10) Miss Susannah Whipple daughter of Joseph & Sarah 27 May 1797 in 23 year of her age, (11) Mrs Mary Olney wife of Capt Stephan Olney daughter of Josf Whipple died May 24 1798 age 27 years 4 mos, (12) Miss Freelove Whipple daughter of Joseph died Dec 4 1798 age 30 years 5 days, (13) Miss

Mehitable daughter of Joseph Whipple died 3 Feb 1799 aged 17 years 11 mos, (14) Miss Elizabeth daughter of Joseph Whipple Esq. & Sara his wife who expired Feb 27 1800 age 21 years 3 mos 2 days, (15) In memory of Amy Hurd Wife of Ambose Hurd & daughter of Joseph Whipple died 17 Jan 1803 42 years & 19 days, (16) In memory of Miss Hatty Whipple Hurd adopted daughter of Gen John Whipple & Naomi his wife who died May 3 1827 in her 26th year, (17) In memory of Joseph Whipple, Veteran of the Revolutionary War, died Jan 6 1816 age 82, (18) In memory of Sara Whipple wife of Joseph Whipple died Apr 20 1820 age 85 years, (19) In memory of Mrs Abigail Jastram relic of Mr. John Jastram & daughter of late Joseph and Sara Whipple of Smithfield. She died June 31 1841 in her 83^{d} year, (20) In memory of Gen John Whipple, veteran of the Revolutionary War, 21 Dec 1811, (21) In memory of Mrs Naomi Whipple relict of Gen John Whipple who died Feb 18 1837 in the 83d year of her life, (22) In memory of Pardon Whipple, Lieut, son of William, USN Veteran c1791-11 May 1827, (23) In memory of Hannah Whipple wife of Samuel, c1819-27 Jan 1892, (24) In Memory of Samuel Whipple Veteran of Revolutionary War, c1758-17 Oct 1809, (25) In memory of Deborah Whipple wife of Samuel c1757-1 Nov 1831, (26) In memory of Joanna Whipple 2d daughter of Samuel c1781-22 Oct 1784, (27) In Memory of Joanna Whipple daughter of Samuel and Deborah c1796-26 Aug 1832. Some of these headstones are no longer legible. The authors were unable to find either headstone number 23 in June 2004, nor number 23's relationship to the family. Also, headstone number 22, a box tomb, was found to be next to Sarah Whipple wife of Capt. John. At least five burial plots, scattered out among the Whipple headstones, are unused or the headstones long since have disappeared. All the headstones are in immediate need of repair.

[153] www.whipple.org/blaine/johnswife.html. "It is obvious that the information on Sarah is unreliable, and there is no way to know if the information on John is correct." There had been small, organized bands of Caucasians (primarily male fishermen) living in and around the later to-be-named Massachusetts Bay area immediately before and after the settlement of Plymouth in 1620. The numbers were so infinitesimal, however, as to obviate a significant probability that Sarah had been born there. Blake, *Annals of Dorchester*, 77-78. More likely, since the Whipples had lived in Dorchester most of her adult life, those who had her gravestone carved naively assumed it to have been her place of birth.

[154] Dorr, 222. "By the fourth generation they sought to preserve the memory of their English lineage. There was, until late in the century, but little encouragement of such workmanship in the Plantations. The earliest headstones must have been wrought in Boston or Newport. They were made here by the middle of the century. These were probably all of Braintree slate, so enduring and so plainly sculptured, which abound in the old section of the North Burial Ground. But by 1760, there were monuments which might compare with sculptured stones which an earlier generation had imported from England. So late as 1796, the earliest marble slabs of no extraordinary pretension were ordered from Attleborough." The Whipple headstones are made of Braintree slate.

[155] Photographs from Kenneth Carlson, reference archivist, to Charles Whipple 16 September 2005; held in 2005 by Dr. Charles Whipple, 327 Sundance, Edmond, Ok. Three sixty nine North Main Street, Providence, RI, photos circa 1912, Preston Collection, Rhode Island State Archives, 337 Westminster Street, Providence Rhode Island, 02903. "I walked into the State Archives today [17 August 2005] on a different case, and staring me in the face were photographs of the 300 block of North Main Street. As you know, I've been searching for 369 for the past three years. Perhaps chance does favor the prepared mind. The archives staff is putting together a new photo display--Providence about 1912. They have them all in their Preston Collection, the contents of which I was unaware since these particular photos are unindexed. Just about every building on the block is in these photographs. In 1912, all this was a Jewish neighborhood. Much of the area was torn down as part of urban renewal from

the 1930s to the '50s." Barbara Carroll, personal communication 18 August 2005. The Providence Preservation Society was chartered in the mid 1950s to preserve historic properties, however, it was too late for Captain John's home, the oldest house in Providence.

A close up look at the sign (in five lines) over the front door of 369 reads: 369 Providence 369, Remnant Store, Dry and fancy Goods, Remnants Direct From the Factory, B.F. Rosen. The windows show tablecloths, towels, headscarves, sheets, etc. with an unreadable sign on the right. The retaining wall is badly deteriorated and crumbling. It appears to be several decades old. As previously shown, in the Captain's day the house was but a story and a half. Obviously, the city dug out several feet of soil when it enlarged the street right up next to the houses. As a result, some owners apparently created basement "mom and pop" stores. This reveals that in the Captain's time, his house was several feet (yards?) from the original street, as well as several feet up an incline.

The second photograph is a panoramic looking north from Star Street [ascending on the right] where Whipple Hall had been located, and Mill Street [now James] Street to the left where John Jr. and Joseph had their Inns, and Sarah's mill was located. Captain John's house is the sixth up the right side of the street. The first five houses north from Star Street are newer additions with their doors leading directly on to the street. Captain John's house is the first one where the roof faces the camera, that is, south. Its front door, as it always had, opens to the south with the house oriented east/west, and looks like a house, whereas the others look like apartment buildings. Records show that the building next to 369 was a plumbing supply, then a grocery, a store front synagogue or Jewish reading room, bakery, barber shop, then at 327 N. Main (on the corner) was the Lee Sing laundry. Main appeared to be paved with cobblestones, with cable car tracts traversing Main and Mill streets. One can now understand why the city had to dig out the street so close to the old houses on the right (Captain John's and northward); it was to build houses on the left side of the street. There is a sheer drop off of from a few feet up to about 60 feet to the left of the left row of houses as Main ascends around the corner to the northeast to the top of the hill. The 2004 photograph shows that the left row of houses was not rebuilt. It is not likely that that row was there during Captain John's lifetime. His house would have been located where the sixth or seventh condominium is now standing. What a pronounced contrast the 2004 photograph reveals of this area. It was taken just outside the front door of the Roger Williams Tourist Information Center. The 1912 photo looks to have been taken about 25 or 30 yards to the northeast out into the intersection of Main and Star.

[156] Welcome Arnold Greene, *The Providence Plantations For Two Hundred and Fifty Years* (Providence: J.A. & R.A. Reid, publishers, 1886) 49. "To the north, west, and southwest, up the valleys of the Blackstone, the Moshassuck, the Woonasquatucket, and the Pawtuxet, venturesome pioneers had pushed their way, locating their scattered farms on the most available sites, and more than half of the inhabitants of the town lived in the country districts."

[157] Edward Field, *Tax Lists of the Town of Providence During the Administration of Sir Edmund Andros and His Council 1686-1689* (Providence: Howard W. Preston, 1895) 37-41.

[158] Eugene A. Stratton, Plymouth Colony Its History and People, 1620-1691 (Salt Lake City: Ancestry Publishing, 1986) 213. "From yeoman on down the social scale, a man was called 'goodman' and a woman 'goodwife'...Men above yeoman were addressed as 'Master'...and were considered gentlemen. Below the level of yeoman were laborers who hired themselves out for daily wages and apprentices. A few very wealthy farmers were addressed as gentleman."

[159] William G. McLoughlin, *Rhode Island, A Bicentennial History* (New York: W. W. Norton, 1978) 66.

[160] Thomas Bicknell, *The History of Rhode Island and Providence Plantations, 3 vols* (New York: The American Historical Society, 1920) 3:880.
[161] Barbara Mills, *Providence: 1630-1800, Women Are Part of Its History* (Bowie, Md: Heritage Books, 2002) 79.
[162] Wilfred H. Munro, *Picturesque Rhode Island* (Providence: J.A. & R.A. Reid, Publishers, 1881) 147.
[163] McLoughlin, 46
[164] Bicknell, 3: 906.
[165] Gertrude S. Kimball, *Pictures of Rhode Island in the Past, 1642-1833, by Travelers and Observers* (Providence: Preston and Rounds Company, 1900) 48, 54, 97-99.
[166] John G. Erhardt, *A History of Rehoboth, Seekonk, Mass. Pawtucket & East Providence, R.I. 1692-1812* (Seekonk, Mass. Privately published, 1990) 508
[167] Erhardt, 502
[168] George F. Dow, *Every Day Life in the Massachusetts Bay Colony* (New York: Dover Publications, 1988) 107. Rhode Island social classes were not quite so rigid but money, and lots of it, determined ones status in mid century Newport.
[169] Bicknell, 3:929.
[170] Personal conversation with Mr. John Cullen, whose family bought the property of Job Whipple, and has lived in the Lime Rock area for many decades.
[171] McLoughlin, 68
[172] Kimball, 82-84.
[173] Horatio Rogers, George Moulton Carpenter, and Edward Field, Records Commissioners, *The Early Records of the Town of Providence 21 Volumes*, Volume 6, Being Part of the Will, Book Number 1, otherwise called the First Book for Prouidence Towne Council Perticulior Vse, (Providence: Snow and Farnham city printers, 1894) 126-28.
[174] As of 1682, when the will was originally drafted. David took possession of his land early in 1683, Benjamin in 1681, John Junior in 1663, Samuel in 1665, Eleazer in 1670, William about 1680, and Jonathan in 1682.
[175] "Col. Joseph's headstone is in two pieces. Fortunately, the top piece with his name faces up, so I was able to get a photo of that. The other stones, except for those of his daughters, are very difficult to read. The whole cemetery is in a deplorable condition. Directional signs are torn down every thing looks like a haunted maze. Because of financial problems, the city of Providence cannot adequately take care of the property any more." Barbara R. Carroll, Exeter, Rhode Island, personal observation, 2 Nov 2003.
[176] "An Account of the Temple Family," New England Historical and Genealogical Society Register, Vol. 10, January 1856, pg. 77.
[177] Henry C. Dorr, *The Planting and Growth of Providence. Rider's Tract #15* (Providence: Sidney S. Rider, 1882) 46.
[178] John E. Sterling, designer. Rhode Island Cemetery Database. Rhode Island Cemetery Transcription Project, 1990-2001. On Computer at the Rhode Island Historical Society Library, 121 Hope Street, Providence, RI. 02906. Project Coordinator Comments.
[179] The Eleazer Whipple cemetery has been abandoned and neglected for many years. Large trees and other plant life are literally destroying it. Few inscriptions can be read, although Eleazer's name can yet be seen with difficulty on his headstone, which is lying flat on the ground. The cemetery is hidden behind a six-foot stockade fence and barn about 30 yards west of the 900 block of the Great Road, across the street from the Lincoln Central Elementary School. Personal observation of the authors in June 2004.
[180] Abstracted from www. whipple.org , Weldon Whipple, Webmaster, and the many primary and secondary sources it quotes.

[181] John O. Austin, *Genealogical Dictionary of Rhode Island* (Albany, NY: 1887, reprint edition, Baltimore: Genealogical Publication Company, 1978) 222. Henry E. Whipple, *A Brief Genealogy of the Whipple Families Who Settled in Rhode Island* (Providence: A. Crawford Greene, 1873), James N. Arnold, Vital Records of Rhode Island, 1636-1850 (Providence: Narragansett Historical Publishing Company, 1892). *Records of the First Church at Dorchester in New England 1636-1734 (Boston: George H. Ellis, 1891)* 267 and 181. Vital statistics on the children and grandchildren of Captain John Whipple and Sarah are taken from the above and numerous publications that quote from them. For more recent information, consult www.whipple.org, Weldon Whipple, Webmaster.

[182] Providence Williams was the son of The Reverend Roger Williams. He died at Newport on 22 Jul 1686. His brother, Daniel, was appointed executor of his will on 14 Sep 1686.

[183] William Whipple Senior likely was Baptist. William Junior and Mary married into a staunch Six Principle Baptist family, the Spragues. Mary's husband, Richard Sprague, helped build the Baptist Church of North Smithfield in 1738. The first Baptist church to be built in Smithfield was in 1706.

[184] Henry E. Whipple, from a corrected copy of the book found in the Rhode Island Historical Society Library, call no. CS71. W574, 1873, RIHSL, 10.

[185] Warren V. Sprague, *Sprague Families in America* (Privately published, 1913). Warren V. Sprague, A *Supplement to the Sprague Families in America,* 1941. This source includes the many Sprague genealogies published in the 1800s and early 1900s. The most complete source presently available is the Sprague Database-The Composite Sprague Database-Richard E. Weber, Project Developer, and A. Arnold Sprague, Webmaster, 2004. On line at www.sprague-database.org. Unfortunately this source has William Junior and Mary incorrectly descended from the David Whipple line.

[186] Warren V. Sprague, 139. In 1712, Mary and Richard Sprague bought land with a new house upon it from Thomas Comstock, about one mile north of Mary's childhood home, in a place called Woonsocket and shown to be near the Branch River and Woonsocket Hill in North Smithfield where they were taxpayers from 1713 until 1748. Richard Sprague is mentioned in a deed from Captain William Sprague, his uncle, as having helped to build a meetinghouse in Smithfield, in 1738. In his last will and testament, dated 14 August 1749, Richard mentioned his wife Mary, sons Obadiah, Enoch, Amos, and Daniel, and daughters Ruth Whiteman, Zerviah Comstock, Abigail, Urania Aldrich and Lydia. The two Sprague governors of Rhode Island, William 1838-39, and his nephew William, 1860-62, were descendants of the above Captain William Sprague.

[187] Warren V. Sprague, *Sprague Families in America* (Privately published, 1913). Warren V. Sprague, A *Supplement to the Sprague Families in America,* 1941. This source includes the many Sprague genealogies published in the 1800s and early 1900s. The most complete source presently available is the Sprague Database-The Composite Sprague Database-Richard E. Weber, Project Developer, and A. Arnold Sprague, Webmaster, 2004. On line at www.sprague-database.org. Unfortunately this source has William Junior and Mary incorrectly descended from the David Whipple line.

[188] Warren V. Sprague, 139. In 1712, Mary and Richard Sprague bought land with a new house upon it from Thomas Comstock, about one mile north of Mary's childhood home, in a place called Woonsocket and shown to be near the Branch River and Woonsocket Hill in North Smithfield where they were taxpayers from 1713 until 1748. Richard Sprague is mentioned in a deed from Captain William Sprague, his uncle, as having helped to build a meetinghouse in Smithfield, in 1738. In his last will and testament, dated 14 August 1749, Richard mentioned his wife Mary, sons Obadiah, Enoch, Amos, and Daniel, and daughters Ruth Whiteman, Zerviah Comstock, Abigail, Urania Aldrich and Lydia. The two Sprague governors of Rhode Island, William 1838-39, and his nephew William, 1860-62, were descendants of the above Captain William Sprague.

[189] Richard Knight, *History of the General or Six Principle Baptists, in Europe and America* (Providence: Smith and Parmenter, 1927) 267.

[190] Thomas Bicknell, *The History of Rhode Island and Providence Plantations, 3 vols* (New York: The American Historical Society, 1920) 3:1152. The first Sprague governor was his uncle William, in 1838.
[191] David Jillson, "Descendants of Capt. John Whipple of Providence, R.I.," *New England Historical and Genealogical Register* 32 (1878) 405. Henry E Whipple, from a corrected copy of the book found in the Rhode Island Historical Society Library, call No. CS71. W574, 1873, RIHSL, 3.
[192] Henry E. Whipple, from a corrected copy of the book found in the Rhode Island Historical Society Library, call number CS71.W574, 1873, RIHS, 10.
[193] Nellie M.C. Beaman, ed., " Lincoln Cemetery Inscriptions," *Rhode Island Genealogical Register* 19 (1996): 74-75. See also: Whipple Lot, Lincoln, Historical Cemetery #LN075, Gravestones in Natural Order, Providence County. *Rhode Island Historical Cemetery Database*, on computer at the Rhode Island Historical Society Library. Printout 3 Oct 2002
[194] Beaman, 74. "On the Whipple Farm, stones now taken up and removed, lot plowed down. List of names given by Mr. L. A. Sayles. (Handwritten in: 'Now in Moshassuck Cemetery')."
[195] William A Mowry, *The Descendants of Nathaniel Mowry of Rhode Island* (Providence: S. S. Rider, 1878) 74.
[196] In most states in the 18th and 19th century, the "age of legal action" required to serve as an executor for males was 14. In the states of Massachusetts, Rhode Island, and Missouri the minimal age was 17. In Rhode Island, land could not be owned until age 21. Judge Tapping Reeve, *The Law of Baron and Femme, of Parent and Child, Guardian and Ward, Master and Servant, and the Powers of the Courts of Chancery; With an Essay on the Terms Heir, Heirs, and Heirs of the Body*, 3rd ed. (1862 reprint, New York: Source Book Press, 1970).
[197] "The earliest presently listed burial at Moshassuck Cemetery is 1868, but records don't start until 1909. The cemetery caretaker referred me to the librarian at the Central Falls Library, who keeps a database of old burials at the cemetery. He told me where the earliest burials were located, so I went back to the cemetery and searched the gravestones. I came across only one common gravestone inscribed: Whipple-Sprague-Salsbury, 1766-1885. There was no other information, and no way to get an interment list since the records are filed by date of death, not by surname, and do not start until 1909." Barbara R. Carroll, Exeter, Rhode Island, personal correspondence, 26 October 2002. It must be recalled that William's wife's maiden name was Sprague, as was his sister's married name.

"Phebe Whipple, who died in 1879, was the great granddaughter of William Whipple Junior, and the granddaughter of Benjamin his son. Her grandmother, Jerusha Peck Whipple, died 21 May 1766 (probably giving birth to her mother Phebe Whipple Dexter, daughter of Jerusha and Benjamin, who was born on 20 May 1766). The first date on the common monument at Moshassuck Cemetery is 1766. Also, her husband, Arnold Whipple, son of Jabez, was the grandson of John Whipple and Bethiah Salsbury. The third name on the common monument is Salsbury." Barbara R. Carroll, Exeter, Rhode Island, personal correspondence, 5 Jan 2003. Arnold Whipple was the great grandson of Benjamin, Captain John Whipple's fifth son. See Henry E Whipple, 16-17, for the ancestry of Arnold.
[198] "Cemetery records state that Phebe Dexter was the wife of William, born 21 May 1766, died 21 June 1821. Entry for William Dexter states that he died 31 October 1795. A note on the database record states that Phebe and William were also removed from the burial ground in Smithfield. John E. Sterling, Compiler, Rhode Island Historical Cemeteries Database. On computer at the Rhode Island Historical Society Library, Providence, RI." Barbara R. Carroll, Exeter, Rhode Island, personal correspondence, February 27, 2003.
[199] Henry E. Whipple, 48. William Junior, between the years 1755-59, deeded land to six of his eight sons: Benjamin, Eleazer, John, Joseph, Moses, and William. Several of these deeds

place the original Whipple property on both sides of the Moshassuck River. Smithfield Record of Deeds, 4:74-76.
[200] Judith Ray, *Founders and Patriots of the Town of Cumberland Rhode Island* (Baltimore: Gateway Press, 1990). Personal correspondence, 24 Sep 2002.
[201] Thomas Steere, *History of the Town of Smithfield* (Providence: E. L. Freeman, 1881) 26
[202] Steere, 28.
[203] E. Richardson, *History of Woonsocket* (Woonsocket: S. Foss Printer, 1876) 33-38. Steere, 183, 194-95.
[204] Henry E. Whipple, 41.
[205] Robert S. Wakefield, compiler, *Mayflower Families Through Five Generations*, 18 vols. (Plymouth: General Society of Mayflower Descendants, 1999) 18:66-67.
[206] A summarizing of Edward Davies, "The Marriage of Richard Warren of the Mayflower," *The American Genealogist* 78 (April 2003) 81-86.
[207] Smithfield Probate Records, 1749-68, 2:68 and 2:352. City Clerks Office, Central Falls, RI.

[208] Nellie MM.C. Beaman, ed., "Abstracts of Smithfield Wills," Rhode Island Genealogical Register, (Princeton, Ma, 1991) 14: 85. In his Last Will and Testament, John mentions his niece Phebe and nephew Jeremiah, children of his brother Benjamin.
[209] Norma A. Combs, at nacombs@ntelos.net, correspondence to Whipple.Org and the authors, 11 February 2003. This is the only known record that enumerates members of the three families in the same document.
[210] Providence Record of Deeds, 9:316-17. City Hall, Division of Archives and History. Providence, RI
The Early Records of the Town of Providence, 21 vols., collected and printed by the Records Commissioners (Providence: Snow & Farnham, city printers, 1892-1915)[hereinafter *ERP*] XX:83.
[211] Charles Whipple Junior, "Captain John Whipple's Two Grandsons Named William: A Reply, online at www.whipple.org/twowilliams/charles.html 1 November 2002.
[212] Blaine Whipple, *History and Genealogy of "Elder" John Whipple of Ipswich, Massachusetts, his English Ancestors and American Descendants* (Victoria, British Columbia: Trafford Publishing Company, 2003) vi.
[213] Smithfield Record of Deeds, 8:175. Central Falls City Hall, Central Falls, RI.Inventory, Probate Records, wills, Smithfield 1769-1797, 526-27.
[214] Smithfield Record of Deeds, 4:74-76, 15 December 1756, Cental Falls City Hall, Central Falls, RI.
[215] Reiteration is noted in the William Whipple Will (1796), Smithfield Probates 13:132, City Clerk's Office, Central Falls, RI. See also: Smithfield Record of Deeds, 8:203-204.
[216] Smithfield Record of Deeds, 8:204, Central Falls City Hall, Central Falls, RI.
[217] Smithfield Record of Deeds, 8:321, Central Falls City Hall, Central Falls, RI.
[218] Jillson, 405. *ERP*, XX:11.
[219] Lincoln Rhode Island Preservation Report P-L-1: 13.
[220] Lincoln Rhode Island Preservation Report P-L-1: 9
[221] Anthony Whipple Inventory. Smithfield Probate Records, 1749-1768,.2:68-69. Central Fall City Hall, Central Falls, RI. Joseph Whipple Inventory. Smithfield Probate Records, 1749-1768. 2:361-363. Central Falls City Hall. Central Falls, RI.
[222] Mrs. Richard P.Sullins, Grants Administrator. National Register of Historical Places Nomination Form, Lime Rock Historic District, 1974. (Washington D.C.: US Department of the Interior, National Park Service): 5.
[223] Lincoln Rhode Island Preservation Report, P-L-1: 15.
[224] Lincoln Rhode Island Preservation Report P-L-1: 60.

[225] According to a typewritten 15-page 1981account researched and written by Bertha Crompton, long-time church historian, the church, which began in 1831, was relocated from the Wilbur Road to the Great Road location in 1964. The one reference to a Whipple occurs on page 6, "February 1898 quote, 'Death has gathered into the heavenly garner our oldest member, Mrs. Eliza Whipple Thornton, who like ripened grain was ready for the reaper.' She was not one of the original 24 members but joined in 1833." Some of her listed descendants were Northup, Curtis, Speight, and Watt.

[226] Sullins, 1.

[227] Smithfield Record of Deeds, 13:171. Central Falls City Hall, Central Falls, RI. Jesse and Anna sold "part of a farm or tract of land with all buildings there on in Smithfield containing about 160 acres of land formerly belonging to John Ballou." This was the last transaction of land that appears on the records that Jesse Whipple sold in Smithfield.

[228] Henry E. Whipple, 51.

[229] Robert S. Wakefield, compiler, *Mayflower Families Through Five Generations*, vol. 18, part II (Plymouth Ma: General Society of Mayflower Descendants, 1999) 66-67.

[230] James N. Arnold, Vital Records of Rhode Island, 1636-1850, Vol. 3, Smithfield Part 6 (Providence: Narragansett Historical Publishing Company, 1892) 120. Henry E. Whipple, *A Brief Genealogy of the Whipple Families Who Settled in Rhode Island* (Providence: A. Crawford Greene, 1873) 48.

[231] She appeared for the last time in the Cumberland Rhode Island Federal Census of 1800 as "Anna Whipple, Widow" listed next to her sons Eleazer and Joseph. Anna Whipple household, 1800 U.S. census, Providence County, Rhode Island, roll 45, page 429.

[232] Bertha Anthony, Roger *Williams of Providence* (Cranston, RI: B.W. Anthony and H.W. Weeden, 1949) 190.

[233] Smithfield Record of Deeds, 4: 24 to 88 and 334/5---Eleazer, 71-2, Central Falls Town Hall, Central Falls, RI. Beginning in April 1755 and ending March 1759 William deeded to his six living sons from 60 acres to William Junior down to about 14 acres to Joseph. He signed these deeds with an "x." All the sons apparently continued to enjoy profits from the family's lime manufacturing business. William Junior's Last Will and Testament has never been found.

[234] *Representative Men and Old Families of Rhode Island, 3 vols* (Chicago: J.H. Beers, 1908) 3:1677. This source erroneously states that Eleazer's grandfather was David, but is otherwise correct.

[235] Virginia A. Fitch, Historic and Architectural Resources of Cumberland, Rhode Island. Rhode Island Historical Preservation Commission, Providence, Rhode Island, 1990, page 35.

[236] Robert Simpson, *North Cumberland, A History* (Providence: Robert V. Simpson, 1975) 21.

[237] Simpson, 59.

[238] Fitch, 41.

[239] *Representative Men*, 3:1677-1678.

[240] Eleazer Whipple Entry, *National Society of the Daughters of the American Revolution, Patriot Index,* (Washington, DC: National Society of the Daughters of the American Revolution, 1966) 1:734

[241] Judith J. Ray, *Founders and Patriots of the Town of Cumberland, Rhode Island* (Baltimore: Gateway Press, 1990) 6.

[242] Fitch, 23. However, the author and Rhode Island genealogists have not been able to confirm the Fitch information or locate Eleazer Whipple Senior or Junior's burial sites. "According to the Rhode Island Cemetery Database, there are 332 burials in the Ira Peck Cemetery, and 39 without inscriptions. The only Eleazer listed in a Cumberland Township cemetery was a son of David in the Diamond Hill Cemetery. There are Eleazers in other towns, but none look like his dates, and there are no cemeteries where two Eleazers are

buried. A Joseph 1770-1847 is in the Peck Cemetery and listed as, 'Tomb is dug into side of hill. Granite blocks with a slate door make up entrance to tomb. Door has been partially broken and the date for Joseph is gone. Over door is a marble block into which is engraved: Joseph Whipple 1825.' There is much confusion here. The database states that he was the husband of Eunice, but the tomb description above says Joseph and Rhonda. Also, the death date for Joseph is 1847, and the death date on the tomb is 1825." Barbara R. Carroll, personal correspondence, 14 October 2005. Obviously, separate Josephs have been confused and fused into one database. As noted in the William Senior chapter, Moses, the brother of Eleazer Senior, had a son named Joseph who lived from 1771 until 1847, and this man has apparently been confused with his cousin. With this in mind, it is reasonable to conclude that the gravestone of Eleazer Whipple Senior was not made or was destroyed early on. His is thus the only missing Whipple monument or gravestone in the at least 12 lineal generations discussed in the history.

[243] *Representative Men,* 3:1677-78

[244] Cumberland Record of Probates, 1746-85, ?:412-13, Valley Falls City Hall, Valley Falls, RI. Although a copy from the Office of the Clerk of the Probates was obtained, it did not give the book number, just the pages.

[245] Rhode Island Genealogical Register. Volume 2, Number 3. Abstracts of Cumberland Wills, page 181.

[246] Richard M. Bayles, ed., *History of Providence County* (New York: W.W. Preston, 1891) 265.

[247] *Representative Men*, 3:1677-78.

[248] Representative Men, 3:1677-78.

[249] Photographs of the Eleazer Whipple house were taken 28 June 2004 by Charles Whipple; held in 2005 by Dr. Charles Whipple, 327 Sundance, Edmond, Ok.

[250] James N. Arnold, Vital Records of Rhode Island, 1636-1850, vol 3, Cumberland, part 5 (Providence: Narragansett Historical Publishing Company, 1892) 130. Vital Records of Attleborough, Mass. to the End of 1849 (Salem, Ma: Essex Institute, 1933) 2-5.

[251] Deed Index, Dearborn County, Indiana, Book 4: 165. Anna Whipple to George Whipple, 14 April 1851, NW.NW. 3-7-1, 40 acres. She likely died sometime after this deed but before 1860, as she is not listed in that federal census. Indiana descendant's state, without legal proof, that she died in 1856 and was buried beside her husband. George Whipple household, 1850 U.S. census, Dearborn County, Indiana, population schedule, Harrison Township, page 313, National Archives micropublication M653, roll, 141.This document shows that at that time, the 70 year old widow, Anna, was living with George, his wife Mary, and their nine year old son, Cornelius.

[252] Photograph of a painting of Jesse Whipple sent by Gladys Moffett of Indianapolis, Indiana to Charles Whipple 23 October 1962; held in 2005 by Dr. Charles Whipple, 327 Sundance, Edmond, Ok. Susan Case, an art student at the University of Central Oklahoma, subsequently created a painting of the photograph in 1976.

[253] George Streeter Entry, National Society of the Daughters of the American Revolution, Patriot Index, 3 vols. (Baltimore: Gateway Press, 2003) III:2608.

[254] Adin Ballou, *An Elaborate History and Genealogy of the Ballous in America* (Providence: Ariel & Latimer Ballou, c1888) 143.

[255] Ballou, 120. From the will of Peter Ballou, in which he acknowledged the child, "born of the body of Meribah Phillips" and named her Rhoda Ballou. The mother was his housekeeper for fifteen years, but instead of marrying her, he married Alice Mowry, a widow, but they had no children.

[256] Thomas Steere, *History of the Town of Smithfield* (Providence: E.L. Freeman Publisher, 1881) 209

[257] Steere, 60.

[258] *Milford B. Streeter, Genealogical History of the Descendants of Stephen and Ursula Streeter (Salem, Ma: E. Putnam, 1896) 126*
[259] Smithfield Record of Deeds, 8:175, Central Falls City Hall, Central Falls, RI, Inventory, Probate Records, Wills, Smithfield, 1769-1797, 526-27.
[260] Smithfield Record of Deeds, 4:74-6. Central Falls City Hall, Central Falls, RI, Inventory, Probate Records, Wills, 15 December 1756.
[261] Reiteration is noted in the William Whipple will of 1796. Smithfield Probates of wills, 13:132. Central Falls City Hall, Central Falls, RI. 27 April 1796. Abstracted in Rhode Island Genealogical Register, 8:203-04, 13:132.
[262] Smithfield Record of Deeds, 8:204, Central Falls City Hall, Central Falls, RI.
[263] Smithfield Record of Deeds, 8:321, Central Falls City Hall, Central Falls, RI.
[264] Cumberland Record of Deeds, 7:538, Valley Falls City Halls, Valley Falls, RI.
[265] Smithfield Record of Deeds, 8:442, Central Falls City Hall, Central Falls, RI.
[266] Smithfield Record of Deeds, 8:156, Central Falls City Hall, Central Falls, RI.
[267] Smithfield Record of Deeds, 11:151, Central Falls City Hall, Central Falls, RI.
[268] Smithfield Record of Deeds, 11:287, Central Falls City Hall, Central Falls, RI. The description of the property was: "Bounded beginning at the northwest corner at a stake and stones a bound of Abiah Mowry and Nathaniel Mowry's land in the easterly side of the country road. South with said highway about 56 rods to a stake and stones a bound of Jeremiah Whipple's land, then east with a heap of stones a bound of Benjamin Whipple's land, then southwest corner of an orchard then north and east with said orchard and to include all my right in said orchard then northerly with said highway till it come to the land of said Abiah and Nathaniel Mowrey then west with land of Abiah and Nathaniel Mowry to the first mentioned land. Excepting and reserving to myself, my heirs and assigns the highway leading by the great lime kiln in said premises 24 ft in width, nearly where it is now trodden. This deed is meant to convey only my part of said great limekiln house which is one third part. It is not meant by this deed to convey any privilege which belonged to my aunt Mary Whipple, and said Simon Aldrich is to send the same provision and pay the same rent that I am holden to and pay to the said Mary Whipple." The land that Jesse sold herein was held in the Whipple name for 147 years, 1660-1807. Also, Jesse is referred to as "gentleman" in this deed, a marked improvement in his social status.
[269] Smithfield Record of Deeds, 10:408, Central Falls City Hall, Central Falls, RI.
[270] Smithfield Record of Deeds, 10:358, Central Falls City Hall, Central Falls, RI.
[271] Smithfield Record of Deeds, 12:186, Central Falls City Hall, Central Falls, RI.
[272] Smithfield Record of Deeds, 12:591, Central Falls City Hall, Central Falls, RI.
[273] William Junior signed an agreement for a lease of a portion of his farm (the same property owned by his father and grandfather) for mining with John and James Alford of Boston, Massachusetts, on 10 October 1715. David Jillson, "Descendants of Capt. John Whipple of Providence, R.I." New England Historical and Genealogical Register" 32 (1878) 405. *Early Records of the Town of Providence,* 21 vols. Collected and Printed by the Records Commissioners (Providence: Snow & Farnham, city printers, 1892-1915) XX:83.
[274] Lincoln, Rhode Island Statewide Historical Preservation Report, P-L-1, Rhode Island Historical Preservation Commission, January, 1982, 9, 15
[275] Beginning in April 1755 and ending March 1759, William Junior deeded to his six living sons from 60 acres to William III down to about 14 acres to Joseph. All deeds included a right in the family's limekiln. Smithfield Land Records, Book 4, pages 24 through 88 and 334-35. William Junior signed these documents with an "x." His Last Will and Testament is yet to be located.

[276] Mrs. Richard P. Sullins, Grants Administrator. National Register of Historical Places Nomination Form, Lime Rock Historic District, 1974. (Washington DC: US Department of the Interior, National Park Service) 5.
[277] Lincoln, Rhode Island Statewide Historical Preservation Report, P-L-1, Rhode Island Historical Preservation Commission, January 1982, 15.
[278] This inspection of the house occurred in June of 2004. A young couple from Minnesota, the Browns, had recently bought the house. They graciously allowed the author into their home.
[279] Lincoln Rhode Island State Wide Preservation Report, P-L-1, Rhode Island Historical Preservation Commission, January 1982, 60.
[280] Jesse, along with his cousins Simon and Jeremiah Whipple, were founding members of the "Smithfield School Society" in 1808. Steere, 62. It is noteworthy that Jesse's children were literate to the point of being able to sign their names. The two above cousins founded the Smithfield Lime Rock Bank in 1828. Steere, 66. According to this same source, Jesse and Captain Jeremiah, grandson of William Junior through his son Benjamin, became members of the "Smithfield Grenadiers" in the year 1791. Steere 58.
[281] Bertha Crompton, *History of the Lime Rock Baptist Church,* (Smithfield, no publisher, 1981) 6. This is a typewritten 15-page history researched and written by Mrs. Bertha Crompton, long-time church historian, in which it is revealed that this church, which began in 1831, was relocated from Wilbur Road to the Great Road location in 1964. The document's only reference to a Whipple occurs on page 6: "February 1898 quote, 'Death has gathered into the heavenly garner our oldest member, Mrs. Eliza Whipple Thornton, who like ripened grain was ready for the reaper.' She was not one of the original 24 members but joined in 1833." Some of her listed descendants were Northup, Curtis, Speight, and Watt. [Note that this church was built in 1964, the year that the Eleazer Whipple house, which was next door to the church, was demolished. Some of the timbers from Eleazer's house were used in the construction of the church].
[282] Smithfield Record of Deeds, 13:171, Central Hall City Hall, Central Fall, RI. This transaction was the last to appear for Jess Whipple in Smithfield records. In it, he sold 160 acres to Jonathan Cole, 21 June 1817.
[283] Letter from Joseph Whipple, Edwardsburg, Michigan, to Charles Whipple, 5 November 1980; held in 2005 by Dr. Charles Whipple, 327 Sundance, Edmond, Ok. "My grandfather, Levi Whipple, oldest son of Jabez, was always talking about his New England Yankee grandfather and the move westward."
[284] William McLoughlin, *Rhode Island: A Bicentennial History* (New York: W. W. Norton, 1976), 118-20.
[285] "By 1818, after several other 'Indian Cessions' and the government survey, all of the lands in the county were opened for settlement. By 1820, the population was over 10,000, second only to Knox County. Brookville (the county seat) became the cultural, political and social center of the new state of Indiana." Brief History of Franklin County, Indiana. <www .franklin.cnz.com/about/about/html>, 16 January 2003.
[286] Jesse Whipple and Jabez Whipple entries, Mrs. Rosco O'Bryne, Franklin County Tax Lists, 1813-1831, 77.
[287] United States presidential election, 3 November 1828, County Court Records, 1811-1828, 1836, Franklin County, Indiana state archives, Indianapolis, Indiana. Jesse was the 39th voter out of a total of 163 in Whitewater Township.
[288] As late as the year 1870, Jesse's son, Arnold, a blacksmith, was again living on, or near, the old home place at New Trenton. Arnold Whipple household, 1870 U.S. census, Franklin County, Indiana, population schedule, Whitewater Township, page 481, dwelling 135, family 133, National Archives micropublication, M593, roll 315.

[289] The cemetery in which Jesse was buried is at Rockdale. "Whitewater Township has had many towns and villages platted, many of which are now defunct and their names unknown to many. These include New Trenton, Edinburg, Rockdale, and Old Ashby...Rockdale is an interesting little village, situated at the foot of a large hill [on which Jesse was buried], and is safe to say that no village in the country can rival it in natural scenery...its people are possessed of thrift and prosperity... It may be stated that most of the early settlers passed through this township to other townships." August Reifel, *History of Franklin County*, Indiana (Indianapolis: B.F. Bowen, 1915) 127, 130, and 133.

[290] Jesse Whipple household, 1820 U.S. census, Franklin County, Indiana, page 173, National Archives micropublication, M33, roll 13. Note that two other Whipples (of unknown relationship) were listed in that Indiana census-- Jeremiah in Dearborn County and Henry in Switzerland County. "Seeking ancestors of Jeremiah Whipple of Dearborn Co. In. He had sons William, Willard, Lawrence, Elias, and Enoch. He came about 1819 possibly from Ohio, and before that NY. My ancestor Willard and his brother Lawrence's tombstones both say 'Born in New York.' Jeremiah had a dispute with sons, and he gave them their inheritances and moved to Decatur Co In, and all sons but one moved to Posey Co In. He must have been prominent as he gave each son $5000 when a worker of that day earned about $100 a year." Gabriel Severs, www.genforum/genealogy.com/whipple/messages/547.htm, 28 July 1999. Also, "My ancestor Henry Whipple came 'from NY' and moved to Switzerland Co IN, which is just south of Dearborn Co., around the 1820s. We now believe he was a son of Captain Ezra Whipple, 1741-1829. Ezra had moved from CT to Bennington Co, VT, just a few miles from the present New Your state line. He served in the Revolutionary War with a unit from nearby Adams, Mass. Perhaps the 5 Whipples from Dearborn Co, In, were Henry's cousins from the VT/NY border area." Dale R. Lutz, www.genforum/genealogy.com/whipple/messages/15.html, 20 December 1997.

[291] Dearborn County Indiana Land Entries, Cincinnati District, Vol. 2, Document 3618, dated 1834/8/14.

[292] Dearborn County Indiana Land Entries, Book 4, page 165 and Book W, page 246. George subsequently deeded the property to his oldest son, Cornelius, in 1866--Book 23, Page 437. County Clerk's Office, Lawrenceburg, Indiana. This farm was located the equivalent of about two city blocks south of the Franklin County line on Peppertown Road.

[293] *Atlas of Franklin County, Indiana* (Chicago: J.H. Beers and Company, 1882) 8.

[294] Letter from Mary Whipple, Edwardsburg, Michigan to Charles Whipple, December 1976; held in 2005 by Dr. Charles Whipple, 327 Sundance, Edmond, Ok. Mary was the granddaughter of Levi Whipple, the son of Jabez, Jesse's oldest son.

[295] Joseph A. Bachelor, *An Economic History of the Indiana Oolitic Limestone Industry* (Bloomington: Indiana University Press, 1944) 8-13.

[296] Letter from Winifred Meyer, Whitewater Valley Community Library District, Brookville, Indiana to Charles Whipple, 24 June 2003; held in 2005 by Dr. Charles Whipple, 327 Sundance, Edmond, Ok.

[297] Letter from Lloyd Hosman, genealogist, Indianapolis, Indiana, to Charles Whipple 8 May 2004; held in 2005 by Dr. Charles Whipple, 327 Sundance, Edmond, Ok. The present author recently searched this hill, asked two local farmers where it may have been seen at one time. One of the respondents had lived there for over 50 years yet knew nothing about the location of such a cemetery anywhere in the vicinity. A longtime local resident of Rockdale insisted that headstones, headstone remains, as well as actual graves from more than one older small cemetery in the area, including the one on the old Freeman farm had been moved to the Baptist cemetery just up the road.

[298] Franklin County Cemetery Listing, S thru Z, www.rootsweb.com/~infrankl/cemetery3.html, 16 January 2005.

[299] Photo from Bette Bradway, Historian General, General Society of Mayflower Descendants, Plymouth, Massachusetts to Charles Whipple, 2 July 2005; held in 2005 by Dr. Charles Whipple, 327 Sundance, Edmond, Ok.
[300] Letter from Mrs. Gladys M. Moffett, approved member #27,832 General Society of Mayflower Descendants, to the GSMD, quoting from page 1 of a history she provided to the GSMD, and Mrs. Diane Welch approved member #39,549. Both are descendants of George W. Whipple, second son of Jesse; held in 2005 by Dr. Charles Whipple, 327 Sundance, Edmond, Ok. According to Mrs. Moffett, "Surviving grandchildren of George W. Whipple, to date of 1 February 1970, were Gladys M. Crouse Moffett, Dorothy Whipple Suttles, Mary Whipple Arnold, and Lillian Whipple Gruell." The author, Dr. Charles Whipple Junior, is likewise a member of the Society, membership certificate #75,238.
[301] George W. Whipple, *Brookville American* newspaper, Brookville, Indiana, 18 September 1879, page 2 column 3.
[302] Blaine Whipple, History and Genealogy of "Elder" John Whipple of Ipswich, Massachusetts (Victoria, BC: Trafford Publishing Company, 2003) vi. Charles Whipple, Sons and Daughters of Jesse (Oklahoma City: Southwestern Press, 1976)
[303] Membership certificates 38,549 and 27,832. The author's membership number is 75,238.
[304] www.geocitie s.com/eureka/park/4811/braysville.htm, 18 July 2003
[305] Dearborn County Indiana Land Entries, roll 4, page 165. County Clerk's Office, Lawrenceburg, Indiana.
[306] Dearborn County Indiana Land Entries, roll 0, page 29. County Clerk's Office, Lawrenceburg, Indiana.
[307] Franklin County, Indiana Marriage Records 1811-1852. Daughters of the American Revolution Report, page 106.
[308] Military service record was taken from his gravestone in the Braysville Cemetery.
[309] Franklin county Indiana Land Entries, roll and page number, land purchased--Q:402 & 403, R:244, W:484, 4:262, 7:265, 9:308. Land sold, R:7, V:123, W:55, 5:312, 6:694, 7:107 and 9:54 & 239. County Clerk's Office, Brookville, Indiana.
[310] They were married 1 December 1835. Franklin County, Indiana, Marriage Records, 1811-1852, Daughters of the American Revolution Report, page 80
[311] roll 315, page 481.
[312] Dearborn County Indiana Land Entries, roll 252, page 139. County Clerk's Office, Lawrenceburg, Indiana.
[313] Abner Whipple household, 1870 U.S. census, Dearborn County, Indiana, population schedule, Harrison Township, page 449, dwelling 173, family 171, National Archives micropublication, M593, roll 307. The 1870 Census indicates that he was still working as a blacksmith, and had added another child to the family, a son named Thomas. It is said by Jabez' descendants that it took quite a few years for him to pay off what was owed for the farm. The final payment was not made until shortly before Jabez wife's death in 1883.
[314] Dearborn County Indiana Land Entries, roll 307, page 449. City Clerk's Office, Lawrenceburg, Indiana.
[315] Twentieth century genealogists could not find his gravestone, as was the case with most of the Whipple wives, thus they are not listed in that cemetery's records. However, it was common knowledge among Indiana Whipple family members with whom the author consulted.
[316] Franklin County Marriage Records 1811-1852, Daughters of the American Revolution Report, page 66.
[317] Joel Mann household, 1850, US census, Dearborn County, Indiana, population schedule Harrison Township, page 105, National Archives micropublication M653, roll 308. 1960 household, roll 252, page 620.

[318] Letter from Mrs. Gladys M. Moffett, approved member #27832 of the General Society of Mayflower Descendants, to GSMD quoting from page 2 of a history she provided to GSMD, and Mrs. Diane Welch approved member #39549. Both are descendants of George Whipple, second son of Jesse; held in 2005 by Dr. Charles Whipple, 327 Sundance, Edmond, Ok.
[319] Unidentified general store ledgers for the years 1854-58 and 1959-61, Franklin County Collection, Indiana State Archives, Indianapolis, Indiana, 27. The only store address mentioned was Braysville in Dearborn County.
[320] Mrs. Richard P. Sullivan, Grants Administrator, Rhode Island Historical Preservation Commission, National Register of Historic Places Inventory - Nomination Form, 1974, sheet 1. The bottom floor was still used as a school after the Masons bought the building in 1804.
[321] Thomas Steere, *History of the Town of Smithfield* (Providence: E.L. Freeman and Company, 1881) 60.
Their maternal grandfather, George Streeter, was also a member of the library board.
[322] Smithfield Records of Deeds, 8:175, City Clerk's Office, Central Falls, RI, Inventory, Probates, Wills, Smithfield, 1769-1797, 526-27.
[323] Photograph sent by Amy Fidler of Indianapolis, Indiana to Charles Whipple in February 1975; held in 2005 by Dr. Charles Whipple, 327 Sundance, Edmond, Ok. Mrs. Fidler was the great granddaughter of Jabez through his son William.
[324] Steere, 53.
[325] Sullivan, sheet 4.
[326] Bernhard Knollenberg, *Pioneer Sketches of the Upper Whitewater Valley, Quaker Stronghold of the West* (Indianapolis: Indiana Historical Society, 1945) 104. "The National Road---"the Road" to all Westerners---the greatest nonmilitary undertaking of the Federal Government prior to the Civil War, was initiated by President Jefferson and Congress in 1806 by an act providing for a wide, graded, and well-surfaced road...through Pennsylvania to a point on the Ohio River..."
[327] Andrew Cayton, *Frontier Indiana* (Bloomington: Indiana University Press, 1996) 266.
[328] The property lay at the north end of badly scarred terrain that drops off precipitously to the south some two to three hundred feet to the floor of the river below. Massive north/south gullies have been carved into the hillsides. While driving northward from Interstate Highway 74 on Peppertown Road or on Johnston Fork Road through these gullies toward the old homestead, a mile or two of tree-lined mountainous terrain is encountered, with dangerous drop-offs at the sides of the road. Various types of mineral rocks are seen on the hillsides, particularly limestone. Some of the land is level and thus supports farming.
[329] George W. Whipple, *Brookville American* newspaper Brookville, Indiana, 18 September 1879, page 2, column 3.
[330] Jabez and Jesse Whipple entries, Mrs. Rosco O'Byrne, Franklin County tax lists, 1813-1831, 77.
[331] L.C. Aldrich, *History of Yates County New York, Early Settlers of the Town of Benton* (Privately Published, 1892) 353-363. In honor of Levi Benton, the town of Benton received its name. He was the first to settle in Benton, Lot 37, in 1789. [He owned a gristmill]. He married Mary Woodworth, in Canaan, Connecticut. Their children were: Polly, Olive, Levi, Luther, Calvin, Joseph, Nancy, Hannah and Ruby...the family left for Indiana in 1816. [Luther died at sea in 1803. Joseph actually came in 1814. Levi Junior and the oldest daughters stayed in New York]. According to the 1820 Indiana census, Calvin was living in Dearborn County, and Joseph and Levi in Franklin County, with Levi as Jesse's next-door neighbor. Susan was the daughter of Calvin Benton and Lois Barden. Calvin was born in 1781 and died 24 July 1856 in Franklin County, Indiana. Susan had at least two brothers: Abner and Alva].

[332] www.jmartinfamily.com/jon/geddata/fam00284.html "The Ancestry and Descendants of Jonathan J. Martin." This source traces: Susan Benton (Calvin, Levi, Isaac, Joseph, Andrew, John, Andrew, Edward).
This source takes its information from: Aldrich; History of the Town of Waitsfield, Vermont; Samuel S. Benton, His Ancestry and Descendants; World Family Tree, Vol. 6, Ed. 1; World Family Tree, Vol. 1, Ed. 1; and, Historical Collections Relating to the Town of Salisbury, Connecticut, Vol. 1.
[333] "Covington's First Mayor Was a Man of Solid Values," *The Kentucky Post*, 24 June 2002.
[334] Jabez Whipple household, 1830 U.S. census, Dearborn County, Indiana, page 213, National Archives micropublication, roll 27.
[335] Jesse Whipple and Jabez Whipple entries, Mrs. Rosco O'Bryne, Franklin County, Indiana Tax Lists 1813-1831, 77.
[336] Letter from Mrs. Bernice Whipple Thompson, Indianapolis, Indiana, to Iris (last name unknown) 17 May 1947; held in 2005 by Dr.Charles Whipple 327 Sundance Lane, Edmond, Ok.. Transferred to the holder by Mrs. Amy Taylor Fidler, 29 October 1976.
[337] Jabez Whipple household, 1850, U.S. census, Dearborn County, Indiana, population schedule, Harrison Township, page 313, National Archives micropublication, roll 141. The three Whipple brothers lived along the Peppertown Road. It, and Johnston Fork Road, about one mile to the east, were the only north-south thoroughfares through the township. Their father's original homestead was about one half mile north of them in Franklin County.
[338] Jabez Whipple household, 1860 U.S. census, Dearborn County, Indiana, population schedule, Harrison Township, page 622, dwelling 680, family 664, National Archives micropublicaton M653, roll 252.
[339] Unidentified general store ledgers for the years 1854-1858 and 1859-61, Franklin County Collection, Indiana State Archives, Indianapolis, Indiana, 4. Page numbers for the 1854 entries were 19, 202, 203, and 260. Page numbers for the 1859 entries were: 4, 15, 17, 26, 27, 31, and 72. The only store address mentioned was Braysville in Dearborn County.
[340] Dearborn County Deed Records, book 23, page 600, 29 December 1865, County Clerk's Office, Lawrenceburg, Indiana.
[341] Jabez Whipple household, 1870 U.S. census, Decatur County, Indiana, population schedule, Sandcreek Township, page105, dwelling 89, family 91, National Archives micropublication M593, roll 308.
[342] Jabez Whipple household and sons, 1870 U.S. census, Decatur County Indiana population schedules, National Archives micropublication M593: Levi, roll 308, page 152; Oscar, roll 308, page 159; William roll 308, page 160; George, roll 308, page 160. By this date Alfred and John were living in Iowa, and Irvin was living in Grant County, Indiana.
[343] Levi Whipple household, 1850 U.S. census, Decatur County, Indiana, population schedule, Sandcreek Township, page 92, National Archives micropublication, roll 142.
[344] Franklin County, Indiana, marriage index, 1850-1920, book 6, page 373. County Clerk's Office, Greenburg, Indiana
[345] Letter from Mrs. Olive Whipple, Columbus, Indiana, to Charles Whipple 7 January 1976; held in 2005 by Dr. Charles Whipple, 327 Sundance, Edmond, Ok.
[346] Decatur County Marriage Index, 1852-78, vol.1 page 51, County Clerk's Office, Greensburg, In.
[347] Decatur County Marriage Index, 1878-1905, book O, page 1, County Clerk's Office, Greensburg, In
[348] Decatur County Marriage Index, 1878-1905, book N, page 444, County Clerk's Office, Greensburg, In
[349] Decatur County Marriage Index, 1878-1905, book O, page 77, County Clerk's Office, Greensburg, In

[350] For information on the later generations of these families, see Charles Whipple, *Sons and Daughters of Jesse* (Oklahoma City: Southwestern Press, 1976) 33.
[351] Letter from Mrs. Amy Evans Fidler, Indianapolis, Indiana, to Charles Whipple in August 1975; held in 2005 by Glenda McCampbell, Indianapolis, Indiana. Mrs. McCampbell is the late Amy Fidler's daughter.
[352] Levi B. Whipple will (1901) Decatur County Wills, volume 5, pages 486-488. County Clerk's office, Greensburg, Indiana
[353] Levi B. Whipple, *Decatur New Era* newspaper, Greensburg, In., 6 April 1905, page 1, column 1.
[354]Franklin County, Indiana, marriage index 1811-1852, page 147. Daughters of the American Revolution (DAR) Genealogical Committee Report.
[355] Oscar Whipple household, 1870 U.S. census, Decatur County, Indiana, population schedule, Sandcreek Township, page 159, dwelling 154, family 154, National Archives micropublication M593, roll 308.
[356] Oscar Whipple household, 1870 U.S. census, Decatur County, Indiana, population schedule, Sandcreek Township, page 440, dwelling 154, family 154, National Archives micropublication M593, roll 308
[357] Henry Whipple household, 1900 U.S. census, Kay County, Oklahoma, population schedule, Lowe Township, page 39, dwelling 126, family 126, National Archives micropublication T623, roll 1338. This source indicates that he was born 4 October 1854 in Indiana.
[358] Henry Whipple household, 1920 U.S. census, Kay County, Oklahoma, population schedule, Lowe Township, page 161, dwelling 143, family 144, National Archives micropublication T625, roll 1466.
[359] Letter from Fay Whipple, Lawson, Missouri, to Charles Whipple 3 September 2004; held in 2005 by Dr. Charles Whipple, 327 Sundance, Edmond, Ok. The wives of Henry and John (Johnson) Whipple were sisters.
[360] Register of Deeds, Greenwood County, Kansas, Volume 25: 384.He received property from the US Government in Eureka, Kansas 19 January 1901, Volume 6:293. Greenwood County Court House, Eureka, Kansas. This and subsequent Greenwood County deeds discussed herein were researched by Larry and Pam Whipple on 16 August 1996, and sent to the author in 2004. "There are several purchases missing which belong here. One book had no entries after the letter 'T,' and the other book was missing. The years 1895-1900 are missing."
[361] John Whipple household, 1900 U.S. census, Greenwood County, Kansas, population schedule, Madison Township, page 99, dwelling 109, family 109, National Archives micropublication T623, roll 481.
[362] Email to www.whipple.org, Weldon Whipple, Webmaster, from Norma combs 10 March 2005.
[363] John Whipple household, U.S. census, Pontotoc County, Oklahoma, population schedule, Midland Township, page 223, dwelling 86, family 89, National Archives micropublication, T624, roll 1270.
[364] Letter from Max D. Whipple, Lynden, Washington to Charles Whipple 18 March 2006; held in 2006 by Dr. Charles Whipple, 327 Sundance, Edmond , Ok. "My aunt Daisy Whipple Donner lived and died in Tucson, Arizona in 1972; aunt Bertha Whipple died in Flagstaff, Arizona, and uncle Willis Whipple died during WWI and is buried in France. Aunt Vivian Whipple Cruson died in 1982. Her son James lives in Kingston, Ok; Uncle Eldo Whipple, whose daughter is Owana Chambers, died in Orange, Calif. In 1986, uncle Edwin Whipple died in Vallejo, Calif: his children are Jim, Lloyd, and Lynell. Aunt Winnie Whipple Moshier has four children: T.C., Charles, Kenneth, and Rhea all of California; she died in Reedly, Calif in 1972. Uncle Vinson Whipple died in 1966 at Ripley, Miss. His children, Joy, Dorothy, and Don, live in Mississippi. My father, The Reverend John Harrison Whipple, died in Garden Grove, Calif., 21 December 2001. My sister, Barbara Whipple Yates lives in Texas. I am a 64-year-old retired policeman. When the

family lived in Oklahoma, the property was known as "Whipple Hill" about 10 miles west of Ada, which came to be know as Oil Center. Due to poor financial advice, we lost the "hill" just before the next owner found gobs of oil on it. Even today, we all believe that advice kept us from becoming rich Okies."

[365] Register of Deeds, Greenwood County, Kansas, Volume 39:503. Greenwood County Courthouse, Eureka, Kansas.

[366] Rinaldo Whipple household, 1900 U.S. census, Kay County, Oklahoma, population schedule, Lowe Township, page 40, dwelling 140, family 140, National Archives micropublication T623, roll 1338.

[367] Register of Deeds, Greenwood County, Kansas, Volume 6:342. Greenwood County Courthouse, Eureka, Kansas. He bought additional property there 22 January 1910, Volume 75:164.

[368] Register of Deeds, Greenwood County Kansas, Volume 29:460. Greenwood County Courthouse, Eureka, Kansas.

[369] Grant Whipple household, 1900 U.S. census, Greenwood County, Kansas, population schedule, Madison Township, page 99, dwelling 110, family 110, National Archives micropublication, T623, roll 481.

[370] Grant Whipple household, 1910 U.S. census, Greenwood County, Kansas, population schedule, Madison Township, page 38, National archives micropublication, T624, roll 441.

[371] The first and last entries were: Volume 60:155 and Volume 109:58.

[372] Register of Deeds, Greenwood County Kansas, Volume 77:414. Greenwood County Courthouse, Eureka, Kansas. He bought additional property 3 January 1917.

[373] Ira Whipple household, 1910 U.S. census, Greenwood County, Kansas, population schedule, Bachelor Township, page 19, dwelling 29, family 29, National Archives micropublicatioin, T624, roll 441. The 1920 entry is found in T625, roll 553, page 3.

[374] As previously indicated, the deed records for Greenwood County from 1895 to 1900 are missing. A family history indicates that he came to Kansas with his parents in 1883.

[375] Photograph from Fay Whipple of Lawson, Missouri sent to Charles Whipple in November 2004; held in 2005 by Dr. Charles Whipple, 327 Sundance, Edmond. Ok.

[376] Register of Deeds, Greenwood County Kansas, Volume 31:397 and Volume 61:267. Greenwood County Courthouse, Eureka, Kansas. These are the first and last deeds.

[377] Irvin and Catherine Whipple tombstone information, Point Isabel Cemetery. Inscription indicates only that he was born in 1829, and died 1912. He and his wife are buried side by side. Her tombstone carving states that she was born in 1833 and died in 1911. This cemetery is located "exactly one half mile west of the intersection of state road #113 and state road #26 on north side of the street. It is in bad condition." The Methodist Church, located next door to Irvin's property, owned it, and the Whipples may have been members. The March 1829 information comes from 1900 census information, National Archives micropublication, T623, roll 373, page 81.

[378] Franklin County, Indiana, Marriage Index, book 6, page 370

[379] Irvin Whipple household, 1870 U.S. census, Grant County, Indiana, population schedule, Liberty Township, page 123, dwelling 243, family 240, National Archives micropublication, M593, roll 317. This and the 1880 census give information on the ages of the children. Catherine Whipple household, 1900 U.S. census, Grant County, Indiana, population schedule, Liberty Township, page 84, dwelling 188, family 197, National Archives micropublication, M623, roll 373. The 1900 census indicates that she had 12 children total.

[380] Combination Atlas Map of Grant County, Indiana, 1877, Kingman Brothers, Liberty Township, page 68.

[381] Roster of Union Soldiers, 1861-1865, Broadfoot Publishing Company, 2000, page 433. "Irvin A. Whipple, of Liberty Township, private, unassigned in 22nd Regiment, permanent party, Garrison Guard, Company F."

[382] Irvin Whipple household, 1900 U.S. census, Grant County, Indiana, population schedule, Liberty Township, page 81, dwelling 133, family 139, National Archives micropublication, M623, roll 373.
[383]Catherine Whipple household, 1910 U.S. census, Grant County, Indiana, population schedule, Liberty Township, page 168, dwelling 174, family 174, National Archives micropublication, M624, roll 351.
[384] Jabez Whipple household, 1960 U.S. Census, Dearborn County, Indiana, population schedule, Harrison Township, page 622, dwelling 680, family 664, National Archives micropublication, M653, roll 252.
[385] *History of Wapello County, Iowa* (Chicago: Western Historical Company, 1878) 643.
[386] Alfred Whipple household, 1870 U.S. census, Wapello County, Iowa, population schedule, Highland Township, page 143, dwelling 109, family 109, National Archives micropublication M593, roll 422.
[387] Alfred Whipple household, 1900 U.S. census, population schedule, Wapello County, Iowa, Highland Township, page 180, dwelling 300, family 305, National Archives micropublication, M 623 roll 463.
[388] Register of Deeds, Greenwood County, Kansas, Volume 63:599 and Volume 67:11. Greenwood County Courthouse, Eureka, Kansas. He bought additional land in 1906.
[389] Alfred J. Whipple, *Ottumwa Courier* newspaper, Ottumwa, Iowa, 10 February 1909, page 4, column 2.
[390] Elizabeth Whipple household, 1910 U.S. census, Wapello County, Iowa, population schedule, Highland Township, page 139, dwelling, 152, family 152, National Archives micropublication T624, roll 426.
[391] Milo Whipple household, 1920 U.S. census, Wapello County, Indiana, population schedule, Agency Township, page 15,dwelling 99, family 100, National Archives micropublication M593, roll 516.
[392] Wapello County Marriage Book B:135, 31 Oct. 1851-9 Jun 1866. County Clerk's Office, Ottumwa, Iowa.
[393] John Whipple and Alfred Whipple households, 1856 Iowa State census, Wapello County, Indiana, population schedule, page 475, dwellings 45 & 46, Iowa State Historical Society, Des Moines.
[394] John Whipple household, 1860 U.S. census, Wapello County, Iowa, population schedule, Highland Township, page 944, dwelling 1218, family 1167, National Archives micropublication, M653, roll 343.
[395] John Whipple household, 1870 U.S. census, Wapello County, Iowa, population schedule Highland Township, page 137, dwelling 15, family 15, National Archives micropublicaation, M593, roll 422.
[396] Lineage application of Bernice Whipple Spry, national no. 110160, National Society, Daughters of the American Revolution, (Eleazer Whipple) 1914, Volume 111:52. Susan Whipple Arnold, national no. 108565, Volume 109:170. Jennie Whipple Fry, national no. 129555, 1917, Volume 130:164. All three entries show that the sisters were descendants of George Streeter and Eleazer Whipple, American Revolutionary War soldiers. These entries incorrectly place John's death in 1895.
[397] John C. Whipple, *Ottumwa Courier* newspaper, Ottumwa, Iowa, 24 August 1893, page 6, column 2.
[398] Letter from T. Sincox, Ottumwa, Iowa 11 September 2005 to Charles Whipple; held in 2005 by Dr. Charles Whipple, 327 Sundance, Edmond, Ok. "I looked the entire cemetery over for John C. Whipple and realized that his headstone is missing, as there was a large area of grass nearby Alfred's stone."
[399] Page 5B, enum. 7, sheet 1B.

[400] Franklin County, Indiana, Marriage Index, 1850-1920, book 8, page 253.
[401] She was buried next to her husband's mother and father, and sister-in-law Emily Whipple, wife of William, her husband's brother. A photograph of this cemetery is presented herein.
[402] George Whipple household, 1870 U.S. census, Decatur County, Indiana, population schedule, Sandcreek Township, page 160, dwelling 166, family 166, National Archives micropublication, M593, roll. 308.
[403] Logan County, Oklahoma Territory, Deed Book 2:248. County Clerk's Office, Guthrie, Oklahoma.
[404] Written report from the Logan County Genealogical Society, Nelda Brown, researcher, 5 May 2005, to Charles Whipple; held in 2005 by Dr. Charles Whipple, 327 Sundance, Edmond, Ok.
[405] Logan County, Oklahoma Territory, Deed Book 17:398. County Clerk's Office, Guthrie, Oklahoma.
[406] Logan County, Oklahoma Territory, Deed Book 28:332. County Clerk's Office, Guthrie, Oklahoma
[407] Logan County, Oklahoma Territory, Deed Book 45:257. County Clerk's Office, Guthrie, Oklahoma.
[408] Benjamin Whipple household, U.S. Census, Sedgwick County, Kansas, population schedule, town of Wichita, page 35, dwelling 2, family 2, National Archives micropublication T624, roll 456.
[409] George Whipple, probate case 806, microfilm roll 28, Book 8:43, 9 January 1905. Settled in 7 February 1905, each brother receiving half the estate.
[410] George W. Whipple, *Guthrie Daily Leader* newspaper, Guthrie, Oklahoma, 2 December 1904, page 5, column 2.
[411] George W. Whipple, *Eureka Herald* newspaper, Eureka, Kansas, 8 December 1904, page 3, column 1.
[412] Written report from the Logan County Genealogical Society, Nelda Brown, researcher, 5 May 2005, to Charles Whipple; held in 2005 by Dr. Charles, 327 Sundance, Edmond, Ok. "The graves are in block 15, lot 6. The city records listed them as Wipple, not Whipple, and unfortunately our genealogical society repeated the error in listing them in our survey of the cemetery." George's flat gravestone states simply: G.W. Whipple, 1841- 1904.
[413] Decatur County Marriage Index, 1852-1879, book J, page 323, County Clerk's Office, Greensburg, In
[414] Jabez Whipple household, 1860 U.S. census, Dearborn County, Indiana, population schedule, Harrison Township, page 622, dwelling 680, family 664, National Archives micropublication, M653, roll 252.
[415] Jabez Whipple household, 1870 U.S. census, Decatur County, Indiana, population schedule, Marion Township, page 313, dwelling 89, family 91, National Archives micropublication, M593, roll 308.
[416] Mortimer Whipple household, 1900 U.S. census, Blackford County, population schedule, town of Hartford City, page 252, dwelling 277, family 245, National Archives micropublication, T623, roll 360.
[417] In 1880, James, John, and Benjamin Delph, ages 10, 8, and 6 respectively, were listed as laborers and boarders, but no children of their own, Mortimer Whipple household, 1880 census, Blackford County, Jackson township, page 422, dwelling 180 family 180. In this census Murray is listed as Urian Whipple.
[418] Mortimer Whipple household, 1910 U.S. census, Blackford County, Indiana, population schedule, Jackson Township, page 75, dwelling 188, family 120, National Archives micropublication, T624, roll 340.
[419] Dearborn County, Indiana, Marriage Index, 1854-1869, book 9, page 560.

[420] Robert Seeley household, 1880 census, Grant County, Indiana, population schedule, Green Township, page 440, dwelling 183, family 197, National Archives micropublication, M623, roll 169. The 1860 census for Franklin County, Whitewater Township, dwelling 1025, lists Robert and Angeline, age 23 and 22, with three-month-old twin children, Levi and Elizabeth. Their next-door neighbor was S.S. Seeley, age 50, dwelling 1024, perhaps Robert's father.
[421] *Lest We Forget, Reminiscences of the Pioneers of Grant County, Indiana* (Marion, Indiana: Marion High School, 1921) 59. "Mr. Robert Seeley, 86 years of age, now residing in Green Township, Grant County."
[422] Rolland L. Whitson, *Centennial History of Grant County, Indiana* (Chicago: Lewis Publishing, 1914) 378.
[423] Mr. and Mrs. William Whipple of Swayzee, Indiana were included in a list of participants in a Whipple family reunion held at Westport, Indiana in 1939. *Waco Texas Herald*, newspaper, 20 August 1939.
[424]Dearborn County, Indiana, marriage index, 1854-1869, book 9, page 238.
[425] Joseph Dales household, 1860 U.S. census, Dearborn County, Indiana, population schedule, Harrison Township, page 622, dwelling 682, family 666, National Archives micropublication, M653, roll 252.
[426] Joseph Dales household, 1870 U.S. census, Decatur County, Indiana, population schedule, Sandcreek Township, page 151, dwelling 22, family 22, National Archives micropublication M593, roll 308.
[427] Joseph Dales household, 1900 U.S. census, Decatur County, Indiana, population schedule, Sandcreek Township, page 131, dwelling 90, family 93, National Archives micropublication T623, roll 366.
[428] Letter from Mrs. Amy Taylor Fidler, Indianapolis, Indiana, to Charles Whipple, April 1976; held in 2005 by Dr. Charles Whipple, 327 Sundance, Edmond, Ok.
[429] John Cann household, 1910 U.S. census, Decatur County, Indiana, population schedule, Sandcreek Township, page 130, dwelling 112, family 112, National Archives micropublication T624, roll 345.
[430] Decatur County Marriage Index, 1852-1878, book J, page 122. County Clerk's Office, Greenburg, In
[431] Letter from Marvin R. Smith, Waco, Texas, 2 January 1978 to Charles Whipple; held in 2005 by Dr. Charles Whipple, 327 Sundance, Edmond, Ok.
[432] Decatur County Marriage Index, 1852-1878, book K, page 488. County Clerk's Office, Greensburg, In
[433] They lived there with two of his children from a previous marriage, John and Laura, and three of her children from a previous marriage, Zella, Charlie, and Lena Smith. Dwelling 177, family 177, page 422.
[434] John Underwood household, 1900 U.S. census, Tarrant County, Texas, population schedule, town of Keller, page 185, dwelling 478, family 480, National Archives micropublication, T623, roll 1671.
[435] This is the only reference to the religion of the Whipple family. "Among the first settlers in the Whitewater, of the religious denominations, the Regular Baptists had a large majority. There were churches on Hackelman's farm above Harrison; on Johnson's fork, Little and Big Cedar, near Fairfield and one or two on West Fork. The preachers in early times were...Moses Hornaday at Indian Creek." "The first Baptist Church of Dearborn County--- Mt. Happy--- was organized in Harrison Township on the fourth Saturday of June, 1807...Elders Hornaday and James Cloud were the ministers of this church for many years. About the old meeting-house was a burying ground, but now all traces of both are entirely obliterated." D.J. Lake and B.N. Griffing, *History of Dearborn and Ohio Counties, Indiana* (Weakley and Company, 1885) 529.

[436] Horseshoe Bend Cemetery is now the Bancourt Bend Cemetery.
[437] Letter from Olive Whipple, Columbus, Indiana, 7 January 1976, to Charles Whipple; held in 2005 by Dr. Charles Whipple, 327 Sundance, Edmond, Ok. Olive's husband, Marle, was the grandson of Levi Whipple.
[438] Jabez Whipple, *The Decatur Press*, Greensburg, Indiana, 20 December 1873, page 3, column 3.
[439] Decatur County Probate Order Book 6 pages 515-16, County Clerk's Office, Greensburg, In. Probate was entered in Book 6, page 366. Inventory was filed in Book 6, page 369. Administrator was appointed in Book 6, page373. Record of sale of property was recorded in Book 7, page 157. Final settlement was recorded in Book 7, page 403.
[440] Decatur County Records of Deeds, book 21, page 378, 9 February 1876, County Clerk's Office, Greensburg, Indiana.
[441] "Due to security concerns, the state of Oklahoma does not allow the general public (non relatives) to have access to birth and death records. Book and page numbers are for in-house use only." Sue Bordeaux, assistant to the Oklahoma state registrar of vital statistics, 9 September 2005. Marriage records are obtained through individual counties.
[442] Jabez Whipple household, 1850 U.S. census, Dearborn County, Indiana, population schedule, Harrison Township, page 313, National Archives micropublicaton, roll 141.
[443] Levi Whipple household, 1860 U.S. census, Decatur County, Indiana, population schedule, Sand Creek Township, page 960, dwelling 556, family 261, National Archives micropublication, M653, roll 253.
[444] Photograph of a portrait of William Whipple taken at a Waco, Texas family reunion in 1980 by the author; portrait held in 2005 by Gary Whipple, 4910 Dixon Circle, Mesa, Arizona, 85205.
[445] Decatur County Marriage Index, 1852-1878, book I, page 51, County Clerk's Office, Greensburg, In
[446] The O'Donnell family has its own website at <www.barneyodonnell.com> Bob Applegate, Webmaster.
[447] Letter from Mary O'Donnell, of Greensburg, Indiana to William Whipple Junior, Keller, Texas. A copy of this letter was sent by Randy Neel of Van Nuys, California to Charles Whipple; held in 2005 by Dr. Charles Whipple, 327 Sundance, Edmond, Ok. Randolph Neel is the grandson of Edith Whipple Neel.
[448] Interview with Amy Taylor Evans Fidler of Indianapolis, Indiana by Charles Whipple, June 1976. Transcript held in 2005 by Whipple, 327 Sundance, Edmond, Ok. 73034.
[449] Decatur County Marriage Index, 1852-1878, book K, page 488, County Clerk's Office, Greenburg, In
[450] Roster of Union Soldiers, 1861-1865, Broadfoot Publishing Company, 2000, page 433.
[451] U.S. Pension Bureau, List of pensioners on the roll January 1, 1883; giving the names of each pensioner, the cause for which pensioned, the post-office address, the rate of pension per month, and the date of original allowance, as called for by Senate resolution of December 8, 1882. 5 vols. (Baltimore: Genealogical Publishing Company, 1970) 5:288.
[452] Letter from John Pavy of Calumet, Oklahoma to Charles Whipple 4 December 1987; held in 2005 by Dr. Charles Whipple, 327 Sundance, Edmond, Ok. Mr. Pavy describes the circumstances under which he came to possess the clock.
[453] Sam Street's Map of Tarrant County, Texas, December 1895 (Ft. Worth: Texas Map Publishing Company, 1895). Copy at Forth Worth, Texas, Public Library.
[454] Tarrant County Deed Records, book 64:147, County Clerk's Office, Ft. Worth, Texas.
[455] From notes taken at a speech given by John Pavy at a Whipple family reunion held in June of 1976; notes held in 2005 by Dr. Charles Whipple of 327 Sundance, Edmond, Ok.

[456] William Whipple household, 1900 U.S. census, Canadian County, Oklahoma Territory, population schedule, Valley Township, page 114, dwelling 38, family 38, National Archives micropublication, T623, roll, 1335.
[457] *History of Canadian County Oklahoma* (El Reno, Ok: Canadian Co. Historical Book Association, 1991) 77. The 1908 photograph of Calumet was taken shortly before William's death.
[458] Calumet Oklahoma Chieftain newspaper, Volume 1, 7 August 1908, page 3.
[459] William T. Whipple, Last Will and Testament, filed 10 August 1908, book 9, page 73, Canadian County Court House, El Reno, L. Huskill, Clerk.
[460] Calumet Oklahoma Chieftain newspaper, Volume 12, December 4, 1919, page 5.
[461] Tarrant County Deeds Records, book 135:243. County Clerk's Office, Ft. Worth. James Bechtel household, 1900 U.S. census, Tarrant County, Texas, population schedule, Haslett Voting Precinct 33, enumeration district 116, supervisor's district 3, sheet 2, page 9B, dwelling 140, family 143, National Archives micropublication T623, roll 1671. This census lists William's 29-year-old widow, her new 21-year-old husband, and her three children, Henry, Harvey, and Edith.
[462] Tarrant County Deeds Records, book 116:61. County Clerk's Office, Ft. Worth, Texas
[463] Letter from Helen Whipple Towles, of Ft. Worth, Texas in July of 1987 to Charles Whipple; held in 2005 by Dr. Charles Whipple, 327 Sundance, Edmond, Ok.
[464] Letter from Randolph Neel, of Van Nuys, California, 9 January 1989, to Charles Whipple; held in 2005 by Dr. Charles Whipple, 327 Sundance, Edmond, Ok.
[465] Photograph sent by O.J. Whipple Junior of Houston, Texas in March 2004; held in 2005 Dr. Charles Whipple, 327 Sundance, Edmond, Ok.
[466] *Waco Herald* newspaper 20 August 1939.
[467] In the possession of Dr. Charles Whipple, 327 Sundance, Edmond, Ok. Previously published in: Charles Whipple, *Sons and Daughters of Jesse* (Oklahoma City: Southwestern Publishing Company, 1976) 46-52. Information on later generations can be found in this publication.
[468] Letter from Harry Whipple Junior of El Paso, Texas to Charles Whipple 20 September 2005; held in 2005 by Dr. Charles Whipple, 327 Sundance, Edmond, Ok.
[469] Letter from Jeanne Whipple Shaw of Houston, Texas to Charles Whipple 21 September 2005; held in 2005 by Dr. Charles Whipple, Edmond, Ok.
[470] Letter from Olive James Whipple Junior of Houston, Texas to Charles Whipple 8 December 2005; held in 2005 by Dr. Charles Whipple, Edmond, Ok.
[471] Letter from Amy Taylor Evans Fidler of Indianapolis, Indiana to Charles Whipple, 23 April 1975; held in 2005 by Dr. Charles Whipple, 327 Sundance, Edmond, Ok. Note: Amy Taylor Evans Fidler died 4 February 1977.
[472] Letter from Janice Farringer of Indianapolis, Indiana, to Charles Whipple, 19 March 2004; held in 2005 by Dr. Charles Whipple, 327 Sundance, Edmond, Ok.
[473] Letter from Mindy Tiner of Haltom City, Texas, to Charles Whipple, 27 February 2006; held in 2006 by Dr. Charles Whipple, 327 Sundance, Edmond, Ok.
[474] Letter from Martha Evans Dempsey of Austin, Texas, to Charles Whipple, 11 February 2006; held in 2006 by Dr. Charles Whipple, 327 Sundance, Edmond, Ok.
[475] Interview with Gladys (Pavy) Miller of El Reno, Oklahoma in July 1975; transcript held in 2005 by Dr. Charles Whipple 327 Sundance, Edmond, Ok. 73034.
[476] "Due to security concerns, the state of Oklahoma does not allow the general public (non relatives) to have access to birth and death records. Book and page numbers are for in-house use only." Sue Bordeaux, assistant to the Oklahoma state registrar of vital statistics, 9 September 2005. Marriage records are obtained through individual counties.

[477] Charles M. Whipple stated that his dad reluctantly talked about his life in Indiana and Texas, and that he didn't remember anything about his grandparents or aunts and uncles. The notes shared herein taken by the author over a period of several years consist of formal interviews and informal "listening in" on overheard conversations. These are contained in a diary held in 2005 by Dr. Charles Whipple, 327 Sundance, Edmond, Ok.

[478] Interview with John Whipple of Dallas, Texas in August of 1974 by Charles Whipple; notes held in 2005 by Dr. Charles Whipple, 327 Sundance, Edmond, Ok. Other quotes herein consist of diary notes over a period of several years.

[479] Charles T. Whipple, compiled military record (private, Company B, 23rd Infantry Division), compiled service records of volunteer soldiers who served from the state of Texas (Washington: National Archives) roll 94, page 304.

[480] James Donaldson household, 1900 U.S. census, McLennan County, Texas, population schedule, 4-W-DWaco, page 286, National Archives micropublication, T623, roll 1656,

[481] J.F. Lilledrith household, 1920 U.S. census, McLennan County, Texas, population schedule, 4-WD, Waco, page 66, National Archives micorpublication, T625, roll 1831. Due to poor penmanship, the spelling of the surname is uncertain.

[482] Letter from Grace Whipple of Phoenix, Arizona to Charles Whipple 19 April 1976; held in 2005 by Dr. Charles Whipple, 327 Sundance, Edmond, Ok.

[483] Photograph from Gladys Pavy Miller of El Reno, Oklahoma to Charles Whipple in November 1975; held in 2005 by Dr. Charles Whipple, 327 Sundance, Edmond, Ok. Mrs. Miller stated that the front door was so small that coffins had to be taken in and out of one of the windows.

[484] Oklahoma County Marriage Book, 11:186, county clerk's office, Oklahoma City, Oklahoma

[485] Charles Whipple household, 1920 U.S. census, Oklahoma County, Oklahoma, population schedule, Oklahoma City, page 280, dwelling 223,family 176, National Archives micropublication, T625, roll 1474. Listed in January of that year were Charles and Marcella, John 12, Catharine 9, Mildred 7, Teresa 4, and Charles ½. The census taker, or recorder, must have been confused because Charles' last name was recorded as Hooper. The 1930 census lists Charles, wife Addie, Charles, and Addie's son, Harvey. In that census, Charles was listed as a "laborer."

[486] Nalora Burns, *The Oklahoma Almanac and Industrial Record, 1908, Chronological Record of the* Year *1907.* Printed by the Oklahoma Publishing Company, 1908. The original article appeared in the *Daily Oklahoman* newspaper on 5 August 1907. "Stork pays 19th visit to Mrs. Anna Raidt of Oklahoma City."

This likely referred to the birth of Theodore who was born 5 July 1907 and died two months later. She gave birth to at least one later child. However, it is agreed by the family that this newspaper article was incorrect, and they had only 17 children. An extensive search of the 1900, 1910, and 1920 censuses was completed by Lois Koppelmann, a Raidt descendant, which also corroborates this.

[487] *Her Boy Showed Kaiser How an American Can Die*, 1918. Article from Simon Raidt Junior to Charles Whipple 21 September 2005; held in 2005 by Dr. Charles Whipple, 327 Sundance, Edmond, Ok.

[488] Letter from Simon Raidt Junior, Oklahoma City, Ok. to Charles Whipple 21 December 2005; held in 2005 by Dr. Charles Whipple, 327 Sundance, Edmond. Ok.

[489] "According to census records, he (John) immigrated in 1879 or 80. The same document shows about Franziscus/Frank that on 03 May 1890 he applied to leave Germany, so he probably emigrated at a later date. There goes another family tradition. I was told that they came together. I thought in the 1878 family portrait that Frank looked a bit young to be emigrating. One part of the document is about our Johann Raidt, his parents (Anton Raidt and Theresia Amalia Raidt), grandparents (Karl Raidt and Anna Maria Merk) and (Mathaus

Raidt and Elisabetha Bisinger), and siblings." Personal correspondence from Doris Haley, whose husband, James, is the grandson of John and Anna Raidt, 15 January 2006.
[490] Photograph from Simon Raidt Junior of Oklahoma City, Oklahoma to Charles Whipple, September 2005; held in 2005 by Dr. Charles Whipple, 327 Sundance, Edmond, Ok
[491] *History of Marion County, Missouri* (St. Louis: E. F. Perkins, 1884) 860-61.
[492] John Raidt household, 1900 U.S. census, Marion County, Missouri, population schedule South River Township, page 240, dwelling 121, family 126. This census lists Marcella as an 8 year old child, born September, 1891
[493] According to Marcella's death certificate, dated 11 February 1920, she lived at 223 East A Street, was 27 years old, and died at 12 P.M. from influenza and pneumonia, with the contributory cause of a miscarriage.
[494] Marcella Whipple, Oklahoma City, Oklahoma, Daily *Oklahoman* newspaper, 11 February 1920, page 16, column 1.
[495] Interview with John Whipple of Dallas, Texas, 16 October 1978 by Charles Whipple; notes held in 2005 by Dr. Charles Whipple, 327 Sundance, Edmond, Ok.
[496] Charles T. Whipple, Oklahoma City, Oklahoma, *Daily Oklahoman* newspaper, 3 May 1944, page 15, column 1. Theresa's married name in 1944 should have been listed as Mrs. Sam Wahrenberger.
[497] Letter from John N. Whipple, Palm Desert, California to Charles Whipple 11 August 2005; held in 2005 by Dr. Charles Whipple, 327 Sundance, Edmond, Ok.
[498] Letter from David Wegner of Guthrie, Oklahoma to Charles Whipple 28 July 2005; held in 2005 by Dr. Charles Whipple, 327 Sundance, Edmond, Ok.
[499] Letter from Lois Koppelmann of Puyallup, Washington to Charles Whipple 3 June 2005; held in 2005 by Dr. Charles Whipple, 327 Sundance, Edmond, Ok.
[500] Letter from Paul "Fritz" Wegner of Wichita, Kansas to Charles Whipple 20 August 2005; held in 2005 by Dr. Charles Whipple, 327 Sundance, Edmond, Ok.
[501] Letter from Ruth Boyer of El Reno, Okla. to Charles Whipple 16 July 2005; held in 2005 by Dr. Charles Whipple, 327 Sundance, Edmond, Ok.
[502] Letter from Mary Jane Judkins of Modesto, California to Charles Whipple 11 July 2005; held in 2005 by Dr. Charles Whipple, 327 Sundance, Edmond, Ok.
[503] Letter from John Wahrenberger of Arlington, Texas to Charles Whipple 24 September 2005; held in 2005 by Dr. Charles Whipple, 327 Sundance, Edmond, Ok.
[504] Letter from Sue Wahrenberger Lotz of Houston, Texas to Charles Whipple 18 September 2005; held by Dr. Charles Whipple, 327 Sundance, Ok.
[505] "Due to security concerns the state of Oklahoma does not allow the general public (non relatives) to have access to birth and death records. Book and page numbers are for in-house use only. " Sue Bordeaux, assistant to the Oklahoma state registrar of vital statistics, 9 September 2005. Marriage records were obtained through individual counties.
[506] Oklahoma County Marriage Book 97:511, county clerk's office, Oklahoma City, Oklahoma
[507] Charles Whipple, *Daily Oklahoman* newspaper, Oklahoma City, Oklahoma, 14 December 1979, page 46, column 9.
[508] Julia Whipple, *Daily Oklahoman* newspaper, Oklahoma City, Oklahoma, 8 June 2002, page 15-A, column 6.
[509] Letter from Bobby Whipple of Sandersville, Georgia to Charles Whipple 3 November 2005; held in 2005 by Dr. Charles Whipple, 327 Sundance, Edmond, Ok.
[510] Letter from Jimmy Whipple of Oklahoma City, Oklahoma to Charles Whipple 29 August 2005; held in 2005 by Dr. Charles Whipple, 327 Sundance, Edmond, Ok.
[511] Letter from Julia Suhre of Oklahoma City, Oklahoma to Charles Whipple 16 November 2005; held in 2005 by Dr. Charles Whipple, 327 Sundance, Edmond, Ok.

[512] Letter from Paul Whipple of Oklahoma City, Oklahoma to Charles Whipple 1 October 2005; held in 2005 by Dr. Charles Whipple, 327 Sundance, Edmond, Ok.
[513] Letter from Deborah Miller of Newalla, Oklahoma to Charles Whipple 21 September 2005; held in 2005 by Dr. Charles Whipple, 327 Sundance, Edmond, Ok.
[514] Letter from Kathy Caliman of Waynesville, Missouri to Charles Whipple 12 October 2005; held in 2005 by Dr. Charles Whipple, 327 Sundance, Edmond, Ok.
[515] Due to security concerns, the state of Oklahoma does not allow the general public (non-relatives) to have access to birth and death records. Book and page numbers are for in-house use only." Sue Bordeaux, assistant to the Oklahoma state registrar of vital statistics, 9 September 2005. Marriage records were obtained from individual counties.
[516] Oklahoma County Marriage Book 225:547, county clerk's office, Oklahoma City, Oklahoma

Index

Adams, John, (President) 79
Angell, Alice, married Eleazer Whipple, 6
Angell, Margaret, married Jonathan Whipple, 7
Baker, Dorothy, married Maurice Whipple, 107
Beckwith, Jessie, married William Whipple Jr. 125
Benton, Squire, 97-98
Benton, Susan, married Jabez Whipple, 79, 98
Bobbitt, Lelia, married Gerald Whipple, 107
Bright, Jean, married Robert Whipple, 146
Brown, P. Anna, married Jesse Whipple 63, 75, 77
Brown, Gweneth, married Charles Whipple 181, 203
Buchanan, Ginger, married John N. Whipple, 170
Cann, Mary E.,117, 128
Cathy, Ola, married John W. Whipple, 165, 170
Coffey, Teresa, married Jim M. Whipple, 194-195
Cottrell, Mary, married George Whipple, 191
Cunningham, Janet, married Christian Whipple, 213
Dempsey, Martha, 158
Dexter, Phebe, married Arnold Whipple, 64
Dexter, Stephen, 69
Doak, Elizabeth, married Alfred Whipple, 100
Donaldson, Alice, married Charles T Whipple, 164
Elliott, Clarissa, married Oscar Whipple, 100
Elstner, Louise, married Olive Whipple, 125,140
Evans, Curtis, 157
Evans, Lillian, 157
Evans, Marle, 157
Fairringer, Janice, 158
Fidler, Amy, 101, 157
Follett, Mary, married Joseph Whipple, 75
Freeman, Gertrude, married Grant Whipple, 105-106
Garcia, Marjory, married Mark Whipple, 151
Gibson, Sarah, married Abner Whipple, 79, 93
Gold, Emeline, married George Whipple, 100, 119
Grant, Ulysses (President) 67
Gray, Priscilla, married John C. Whipple, 100
Gregory, Sarah, married David Whipple, 7
Haley, Harvey, 181
Handy, Whipple, 94
Harris, Mary, married Samuel Whipple, 6, 70-71
Heard, Lula, married George Ledford, 185
Hendrix, Helen, married John Whipple, 107
Hodson, Loretta, married Walter Whipple, 101
Hopkins, Stephen (Signer), 44
Ilderton, Louise, married Olive Whipple, 140
Jenckes, Joseph, (Gov) 63
Jones, Debra, married Gary Whipple, 147
Kennedy, Juanita, married Jerry Whipple, 194-195

Kennedy, Rebecca, married Arnold Whipple, 79
Kukuk, Margaret, married Paul Whipple, 181
Larimore, Catherine, married Irvin Whipple, 100, 108-109
Ledford, George, 185
Ledford, Julia, married Charles Whipple, 181, 185
Logan, Jennie, married Edgar Whipple, 101
Lopez, Mary, married Harry Whipple, 140
Lyons, Nellie, married Rinaldo Whipple, 104-105
Macala, Leona, married Harry Whipple, 140
Mann, Joel, 93
Mann, John, 93
Mathewson, John (Col), 76
Mathewson, Patience, married Moses Whipple, 63
Mathewson, Ruth, married Benjamin Whipple, 7
McCampbell, Glenda, 158
McGee, Grace, married Harvey Whipple, 138
Meeker, Elizabeth, married Paul Whipple, 181
Miller, Bucky, 197
Miller, Jenifer, married Grant Dodson, 197
Myers, Mary, 126
Neel, Randolph, 139
O'Donnell, Barney, 126-127
Olney, Mary, married John Whipple Jr., 6
Patterson, Jane, married Levi Whipple, 100
Pavey, Charles, 133
Pavey, John, 134
Peck, Jerusha, married Benjamin Whipple, 63
Peters, Mildred, 141-142
Pettigrew, Sarah, married Mortimer Whipple, 115
Purkeypyle, Leona, married Kenneth Whipple, 107
Purvis, Mary, married Charles Whipple, 101
Raidt, John, 165
Raidt, Marcella, married William Whipple, 125, 167
Raidt, Simon Jr., 166
Rawlins, Connie, married Jimmy Whipple, 181
Reed, Alva, 160
Reed, Laura, married Ellis Hyde, 160
Rifner, Susan, married George Whipple, 79, 91
Roosevelt, F. (President) 67
Scott, Rebecca, married John Whipple Jr. 6
Screws, Mary, married Bobby Whipple, 192
Sears, Carol, 107
Seeley, Elizabeth, married Levi Whipple, 100
Smith, Alice, married Joseph Whipple, 7
Smith, Charlie, 117
Smith, Edna, married Edwin Whipple, 140
Smith, Jacob, 100
Smith, Jane, married James Whipple, 143
Sprague, Elizabeth, married William Whipple, Jr. 59, 63
Sprague, William, (Gov), 60
Stephens, Ida, married George Whipple, 91
Stoops, Henrietta, married William Whipple, 91
Story, Mark, 149
Story, Helen, 149
Stoughton, Israel, 2

Stowell, Ursula, married Vance Whipple, 147
Streeter, George, 79, 96
Streeter, P. Anna, married Jesse Whipple, 75, 79
Taylor, Amelia, married William Whipple, 128, 137
Taylor, Bryan, 159
Taylor, Countz, 159
Taylor, Curtis, 159
Taylor, Juanita, 159
Taylor, Teddy, 159
Thomas, Grace, married Floyd Whipple, 140
Thornburg, Alex 175
Tilden, Mary, 59-60
Tiner, Mindy, 159
Tower, Hanna, married David Whipple, 7
Trainer, Ester, married Cornelius Whipple, 91
Underwood, James, 100, 130
Underwood, John, 125
Wahrenberger, John, 176-177
Wahrenberger, John P. 177
Wahrenberger, Kenneth, 176
Wahrenberger, Sue, married John Lotz, 176-179
Warren, Richard, 67
Watkins, Mary, married Oscar Oscar Whipple, 100
Wegner, David, 171-172
Wegner, Lois, married Steve Koppelman, 172
Wegner, Mary, married Otis Judkins, 174
Wegner, Paul, 172
Wegner, Ruth, married Roy Starks, 173

Whipple
Abigail, married William Hopkins, 7, 21, 44-45
Abner, 79, 93
Abner, 91, 93
Alexis, 196
Alfred, 100, 109-111
Allison, 192,
Alva, 125, 140-142
Amanda, married Jason Canary, 200
Anita, married Merlin Henry, 138
Arnold, 79, 92-93, 96
Arnold, 108, 109
Arthur, 104
Benjamin, 7, 21, 43, 44
Benjamin, 63, 66
Benjamin, 113, 114
Bernice, married George Spry, 112
Bertha, 104
Betsy, married Chris Dexter, 75
Bobby, 181, 189, 192-93
Buffie, married David Doublemont, 196
Burk, 147, 148
Catherine, 170
Charles, 101, 102
Charles B., 196
Charles M. Jr. 181, 203-211
Charles M. Sr., 133, 141 163, 181-185
Charles T., 125, 163-169
Christian (Chris), 203 206, 208, 213-216
Christopher, 192
Christopher Jr. 192
Clara, married Emit Cox, 106-107
Collyn, 211, 213, 216
Cordilla, married Jerome Kittermann, 112
Cornelius, 91
Curtis, 147
Cynthia, married David Hale, 147

Daniel, 68, 75, 76
David, 7, 41, 43, 44
Deborah, married Keith Miller, 181, 197-200
Debra, married Daryl Green, 192
Doyle, 138
Edith, married Claudis Neel 138-139
Edgar, 101, 102
Edward, 92
Edwin, 140
Effie, married Edgan Schroeder, 149-150
Eleazer, 6, 21, 41, 43, 44 65, 68, 80
Eleazer, 63, 73, 75-78
Eleazer Jr., 75, 77, 78
Eliza, married Joseph Dales 100, 116-117
Ellsworth, 104, 106
Emma, married Will Reed
Ephraim, 66 126, 160
Ethel, married Arthur Yost 133,140, 142
Etta, 109, 110
Evans, Marle, 158
Evans, Paul, 158
Floyd, 140, 146
Gary, 147
Gerald, 106-107
George, 79, 82, 89-92, 95
George S., 91
George W. 100, 113-115
Grant, 105, 106
Hanna, married Chris Jenckes, 63
Harold, 164
Harry, 140-145
Harry Jr., 142,
Harry III, 142
Harvey, 138-139
Helen, married Robert Towles, 139
Henry, 138-139
Henry I., 104
Hopestill, married Nicholas Brown, 63
Ida, married Charles Crouse 91
Ira, 105-107
Irvin, 100, 108-109
Isabel, 92
Jabez, 79, 82, 86, 95-100 118-121
James,68
James, 142
James, 143
Jemima, married Benjamin Davis, 63
Jeanne, married Arthur Shaw 150-153
Jeremiah, 67, 96
Jerrie, married William Wilson 150
Jerry, 194
Jesse, 65, 69, 72-73, 75, 77 79-89
Jimmy, 190, 193-194
Jimmy M.194
Job, 56, 66, 83
John, (Capt) 1-33, 37, 38, 59 61, 66, 79, 84, 161, 193
John Jr, 6, 21, 23, 26, 37, 41 43-45
John, 91
John, (General) 66
John, 106-107
John C., 100, 111-112
John N. 170
John W., 163, 165, 167, 170 204, 214
Jonathan, 7, 44, 45
Johnson, 104-105
Joseph, 7, 23, 29, 37, 43-45
Joseph Jr., 41
Joseph, 75, 77, 78

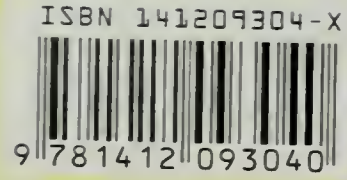
Joseph, 92
Joseph, 150, 154
Joshua, 193
Julia, married Phil Suhre, 181 190, 195-196
Juli, 192
Kathleen, married Mike Caliman, 181, 190, 200-201
Kenneth, 106-107
Kenneth, 143
Korum, 196
Larry, 143
Laurie, married Kevin Benson, 147
Levi, 100-103, 125
Lewis, 108
Loucena, married James Underwood, 100, 117-118
Louisa, 108
Louise, married Robert Seeley, 100, 116
Maribah, married Joel Mann 79, 93-94, 96
Mark, 150, 154
Mary, 87
Mary, married Epenetus Olney, 6, 21, 23, 44
Mary, married Stephen Olney, 63
Mary, married Robert Sitton 139
Mary, married Richard Sprague, 55, 59
Mary, married William Stewart, 91
Mary, married Henry Taylor 125, 131, 157
Mary Ann, 143
Mary Lou, married Orville Hawk, 14
Maurice, 106-107
May, married John Ryan, 91
Mercy, married D. Arnold, 63
Michelle, married Bill Deck 203, 211
Milby, 113, 114
Mildred, married Carl Wegner 165, 171
Milly, married Moses Handy, 79
Milo, 109-111
Mortimer, 100, 115
Moses, 63, 73
Olive, 140, 147
Olive Jr., 153-156
Oliver, 108
Ollie, married John Underwood, 125, 156
Oscar F., 92, 100, 104-108
Oscar, 112, 113
Pamela, married R. Miller, 194
Pardon, 76, 78, 79
Paul, 181, 184, 190, 196-197
Paul Jr. 196
Peter, 65
Ralph, 106-107
Rial, 101, 103, 121
Rinaldo, 104, 105
Ronny, 194
Rory, 147, 148
Roy, 164
Ruth, married Clifford Lundred, 106-107
Samuel, 6, 21, 44, 45, 70
Sarah, married Solomon Aldrich, 63
Sarah, married William Dorr, 112
Sarah, married John Smith, 6
Seth, 55, 64, 68
Silas, 108
Silence, married John Arnold, 75
Simon, 84
Skylar, 211, 213, 216
Stephen, 66, 84
Susan, married George Arnold 112

Terri, married Carl Harry 150
Theresa, married Sam Wahrenberger, 165, 175
Thomas, 68
Thomas, 147-149
Thomas Jr., 147-148
Toni, married L. Hodges, 192
Vance, 147
Walter, 101, 102
William (General) 69
William, 91
William, 112, 113
William, 170
William Jr., 55, 59, 63-73, 75
William Sr., 7, 28, 37, 43 55-59, 64, 70, 95
William T., 100, 113, 125-137
William T. Jr., 125, 138-139,
William III, 63, 69, 77, 80-82
White, Betty, married Thomas Whipple, 147
Wholf, Fay E., married Ralph Whipple, 107
Wigton, Mary, married Johnson Whipple, 104
Wigton, Minnie, married Henry Whipple, 104
Yi, Windi, married Joseph Whipple, 151

ISBN 141209304-X

BOSTON PUBLIC LIBRARY
3 9999 05039 680 1

ISBN 141209304-X



TRAFFORD
PUBLISHING